
This is a reproduction of a library book that was digitized by Google as part of an ongoing effort to preserve the information in books and make it universally accessible.

Google™ books

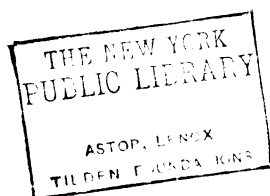
<http://books.google.com>

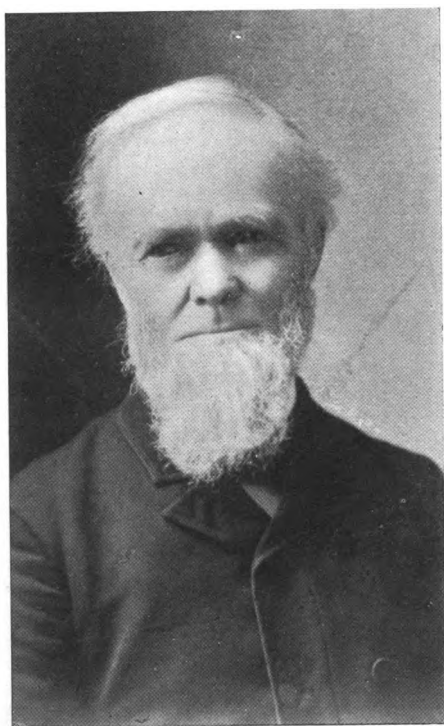


NYPL RESEARCH LIBRARIES



3 3433 08181858 9





T. H. BALL.

NORTHWESTERN INDIANA

FROM 1800 TO 1900

....OR....

A VIEW OF OUR REGION THROUGH THE
NINETEENTH CENTURY

....BY....

T. H. BALL,

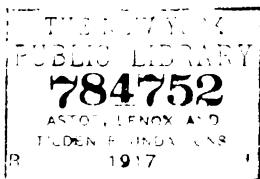
ACTIVE MEMBER OF INDIANA ACADEMY OF SCIENCE; CORRESPONDING MEMBER
OF WISCONSIN STATE HISTORICAL SOCIETY; HONORARY MEMBER OF
TRINITY HISTORICAL SOCIETY OF TEXAS; AUTHOR OF LAKE
COUNTY, 1872; LAKE OF THE RED CEDARS; POEMS
AND HYMNS; ANNIE B.; NOTES ON LUKE'S
GOSPEL; HOME OF THE
REDEEMED, ETC.



CROWN POINT, VALPARAISO, LA PORTE, KNOX, WINAMAC,
MONTICELLO, RENSSELAER, KENTLAND.

1900

Copyright, 1900,
By T. H. BALL.



"It is well for every form of organized society, from the family to the nation, to pause occasionally and devote itself to a review of the past, recalling whatever of persons and events may be worthy of recollection, and placing on permanent record so much of the gathered results as ought to be preserved."

DR. BARON STOW.

DONOHUE & HENNEBERRY,
PRINTERS AND BINDERS,
CHICAGO.

Francesville

ALEM P

Monon

Reynolds

Chalmers

R. 7

the
pa
re
res

DEDICATION.

To the memory of my FATHER and my MOTHER, who were true PIONEERS in Lake County, and from whom my earliest and best impulses in the line of literature were received; and to the memory of OTHER PIONEERS, good and true men and women, hundreds of whom made homes in this Northwestern Indiana in the early pioneer days; as a memorial of their privations, their energy, their success; this volume is affectionately dedicated.

T. H. BALL.

CONTENTS.

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Introduction.....	5	20. Villages and Towns of Porter.....	308
1. General Outlines.....	11	21. Villages, Towns and Cities of La Porte.....	330
2. The Indians.....	21	22. Early Travels.....	352
3. The Early Settlers.....	35	23. Public Schools.....	361
4. What the Early Settlers Found.....	61	24. Private and Parochial Schools.....	386
5. Pioneer Life.....	79	25. Libraries.....	392
6. County Organizations..	98	26. Our Industries.....	402
7. Our Lakes and Streams	112	27. Social Organizations..	421
8. Lake Michigan Water Shed.....	117	28. The Kankakee Region..	436
9. Townships and Statis- tics.....	121	29. Draining Marshes.....	439
10. Railroad Life.....	124	30. Animals and Plants....	448
11. Political History.....	148	31. Miscellaneous Records..	458
12. The War Record.....	164	32. Court Houses.....	476
13. Religious History.....	178	33. Archaeological Speci- mens.....	485
14. Religious History.....	201	34. Birth Places of the Pio- neers.....	491
15. Religious History.....	221	35. McCarty.....	497
16. Sunday Schools.....	234	36. Attempts to Change....	502
17. Towns and Villages of Newton and Jasper...	246	37. Altitudes.....	507
18. Towns and Villages of White, Pulaski and Starke.....	260	38. Miscellaneous Records..	510
19. Villages, Towns and Cities of Lake.....	275	39. Some Statistics.....	536
		40. Weather Record.....	541
		Conclusion.....	564

Separate maps of Lake and Jasper Counties will be readily found. The map or chart of Indiana showing date of purchases was copied by permission from an official chart issued by the State Auditor. Lake County on the larger map is not filled out because there is a separate map of that County.

INTRODUCTION.

This work will include, in the term North-Western Indiana, all the area between what is known in the United States survey as the Second Principal Meridian and the Illinois State Line, from township 26, northward to the Indiana Boundary Line. The width of this region is thus nine ranges and about one section, or fifty-five miles, and its length is nearly twelve townships, or about seventy-two miles, making an area, including a part of Lake Michigan, in even numbers, of 3,960 square miles.

In this area are seven entire counties and parts of two others, but only a very small part of Cass County, and the counties to be included in this history, as forming North-Western Indiana, are Lake, Porter, LaPorte, Starke, Pulaski, and White, and Newton and Jasper.

It will thus, at the southeast corner of the parallelogram, barely touch the Wabash River a few miles from Logansport. The Tippecanoe, the Iroquois, the Yellow, the Kankakee, and the Calumet, are its principal rivers.

In thus taking the second principal meridian as the limit eastward of North-Western Indiana there are left for North-Eastern Indiana fourteen ranges, or thirty miles more than one-half of the full width of the State.

The entire history of this region, in much detail, could not in a volume of this size be given; but in-

teresting and certainly valuable facts connected with its early settlement and growth, will here be found, some of which can be found nowhere else; and the author believes that the condensed and the detailed history and the gathered facts and incidents, as arranged in this book, will be an acceptable and a valuable addition to the accumulating store of our historic treasure, as we are in Indiana, closing up one century of progress and closing up at the same time the Nineteenth Century of the Christian Era.

In regard to the sources of information for the statements contained in this work, the author can claim, in the first place, some personal knowledge derived from his own observation, as he has had a home in this region since 1837, coming here from the State of Massachusetts in the spring of that year, when eleven years of age (old enough to observe, and, as he had then studied Latin and Greek in academies and high schools, cultivated enough to discriminate and make records); and since 1875 he has been the Historical Secretary of the Old Settlers' Association of Lake County: and, in the second place, he has availed himself of the helps furnished by different County and State publications. Especially from an Illustrated Historical Atlas of Indiana, published in 1876, by Baskin, Forster & Co., he has taken many statements of early times and of settlements in counties which his personal knowledge did not reach, statements in regard to those early years which could not now be obtained. That historical atlas is a valuable work for Indiana up to 1875.

That some corrections would need to be made, and that room would be found for desirable additions, in the historical writings of those who have gone before

him in giving county history, might naturally be expected, and from his long residence in this region, while most of those writers referred to have been non-residents and strangers, and on account of his special training and the line of work which for many years he has pursued, the author of this book believes that the readers will find here some carefully prepared and quite accurate history, and he cherishes the hope that it will become a recognized authority, in its special lines of treatment, concerning North-Western Indiana.

It is hoped that no apology is needed for inserting here the rather lengthy extracts that follow.

Well said Dr. Baron Stow, of Boston, at a large religious semicentennial in 1864, speaking of the disposition of aged persons to give reminiscences of their youth, "this tendency to retrospection and historical narration is not merely an accident of human decline; it is a beneficent arrangement of Divine Providence. In all education, experience renders an important service, and for its teaching there is no substitute. 'Thou shalt remember all the way in which the Lord thy God hath led thee.' 'One generation shall praise Thy works to another, and shall declare Thy mighty acts.' The past is thus brought forward into the present; the stream of tradition is kept running; and, while the less valuable facts may be precipitated and left by the way, the more important are borne along as materials for the continuous history of our race. * * *

The world and the church of our times do well to understand how much they are indebted to the memories of the more aged as the successive reservoirs of facts, and how much also, to what are thoughtlessly called the garrulities of age, for the communication of those

facts. If it is an ordering of Providence that every generation shall create a portion of history, it is equally intended that every generation shall convey to its successor all that is worthy of transmission. * * * The successive generations overlap one another in precisely the way to form a continuous channel for the traditionary current." ["The Missionary Jubilee." Pages 91, 92.]

THE PLAN OF THIS BOOK.

In giving a view of North-Western Indiana for one hundred years, or through the Nineteenth Century, it is not proposed to give a continuous history of this region, county by county and township by township, as it is now divided and subdivided; but, while recognizing these divisions as they now exist, it is proposed to give the history of the region as a whole, to show its early settlement, its growth, and what it now is, by treating in separate chapters, as topics or subjects of interest, the various particulars which belong to its topography, its physical features, and its general history. The reader who will look over the chapter headings as given under the word "Contents," will see what these particulars are supposed to be, and so he will know what to expect in the book itself. Especially he will find, in making up the hundred years of history, some thirty years of Indian life; twenty years of white pioneer life, ten of that being white in connection with Indian life; and then fifty years of railroad growth and the modern civilization and progress belonging to the last half of the Nineteenth Century in the United States of America. When the reader has gone over these various chapters, has considered by

itself each subject, each topic, he will see what North-Western Indiana once was, and what in seventy years of civilized life it has become.

T. H. BALL,

Crown Point, Indiana, 1900.

Note. The county histories which I have examined are these:

1. "History of La Porte County, Indiana, and its Townships, Towns, and Cities, by Jasper Packard." 1876.

This is an excellent and very reliable work.

2. History of La Porte County, C. C. Chapman & Co., Chicago, publishers. 1880.

Writers names not given.

This work has not dealt quite fairly by General Packard. From his valuable and carefully prepared history it has taken not the substance only, but the very wording, at times, sentence by sentence, with no marks of quotation, no apparent acknowledgment; yet, as a very much larger work,—it weighs four and a half pounds—it contains interesting material and is valuable for reference.

3. Counties of Porter and Lake, Indiana. 1882. F. A. Battey & Co., Publishers. Weston A. Goodspeed and Charles Blanchard, Editors.

This is also a large book, weighing four pounds and an eighth, and with some blemishes and some large faults is a valuable reference book.

4. History of Pulaski and White Counties, by the same company as the above.

5. History of Jasper, Newton then included, Benton, and Warren counties, by the same, F. A. Battey & Co., Chicago. 1883.

These four works, written by various persons, not

generally residents of the counties, are about the same in size, four pound books, and gotten up in the same style. They are all valuable, but too heavy for pleasant reading.

6. It is almost needless to mention "Lake County," 1872, by T. H. Ball, and "Lake County," 1884, from which some extracts are taken, both now out of print.

I have also looked into a Biographical History of the counties of Tippecanoe, White, Jasper, Newton, Benton, Warren, and Pulaski, by the Lewis Publishing Company, Chicago, 1899, two large volumes, costing the subscribers fifteen dollars. And I have examined with care a late History of Indiana, 1897, by W. H. Smith, in two good sized volumes. This is an interesting and a valuable work, but contains very little in regard to Northern Indiana.

T. H. B.

CHAPTER I.

GENERAL OUTLINES.

The history, proper, of this book commences with the year 1801.

It would be interesting to look back over even this small portion of our great and growing country, along the three hundred years between 1800 and the time of Christopher Columbus, and glance at the Indian occupancy of this region and at its connection with Spanish, French, and English explorers and colonists.

Its position as to railroads is peculiar now; its position as to Indian migrations, hunting expeditions and wars, and as to explorers, must have been somewhat peculiar then. North of it extended the whole length of Lake Michigan, a distance of about three hundred and forty miles; east of it were the immense forests and the mountain ranges extending to the Atlantic coast, distant about one thousand miles; west of it lay that great prairie region reaching to the river which became known as the Mississippi, distant nearly two hundred miles; and southward lay the great Wabash Valley, and then, beyond a stretch of forest, the greater Ohio Valley, and, south of that, forests and rivers, and at length that great southern slope, drained by what are now called the Black Warrior and Tombigbee, and by the Alabama which receives the waters of the Coosa and Tallapoosa, a slope which, passing the great pine belt, terminates at length at the waters of the Bay and the great Mexican Gulf. By

passing through forests and crossing rivers, Indians, explorers, and traders could pass from the shore of Lake Michigan to those Southern waters, a distance of some eight hundred miles. How many Indian parties ever made that journey before the days of Tecumseh there are no means of knowing; but probably the unwritten history of these three centuries would show some connection between our lake region and its Indians and that earlier explored region in the early Spanish and French times. That, in the latter part of the Seventeenth Century, La Salle and other French explorers passed over this lake region is quite certain. At the close of the "Old French War," 1763, the two British provinces of Illinois and West Florida met on the line of latitude 32.28; a line passing from the mouth of the Yazoo River eastward to the Chattahoochee, crossing the Alabama just below the union of the Coosa and Tallapoosa, so that in the latter part of the Eighteenth Century the claimants of the two contiguous provinces must have had some connection established between the two. But at the Indian life in these great forest regions, and the life of French and English traders and trappers as they journeyed between our Great Lake and the Southern Indians, we are not to look. Those three hundred years, from 1500 to 1800, were years of strange life in American wilds, when the red men and white men were meeting each other in commerce or in conflict, sometimes making treaties and smoking the pipe of peace.

We commence with a later date.

When the hour of midnight came, on December 31st, of the year called 1800, the Eighteenth Century was completed; and in the next moment of time, as 1801 dawned upon the world, the Nineteenth Century began.

The close of the one century of the Christian Era and the opening of the other was not a peaceful time among the European nations. Napoleon Bonaparte had been declared First Consul, December 5, 1799; on June 14, 1800, he defeated the Austrians at Marengo; and the strife was going on which led to his being proclaimed Emperor of the French, May 20, 1804. The waves of European strife crossed the Atlantic and struck upon our shores, and war with France seemed for a time inevitable.

John Adams was the American President. Washington died December 14, 1799; in 1800 the national capital was removed from Philadelphia to Washington City, and Thomas Jefferson was elected to be the next President of the United States. And on October 1, 1800, by the treaty of St. Ildefonso, Louisiana was ceded or re-ceded by Spain to the so-called French Republic, which placed that large territory including the present Louisiana, Arkansas, Missouri, Iowa, Kansas, Nebraska, the Dakotas, Montana, Indian Territory, and parts of Minnesota, Colorado, and Wyoming, in shape to be purchased by the United States April 30, 1803, "for fifteen millions of dollars."

In 1800 took place another event of interest to the dwellers in this State of Indiana, the formation, as a new political division of the young and growing Union, of Indiana Territory.

It was, as already mentioned, the closing year of the Eighteenth Century, a century which among other changes had seen at its beginning Detroit founded and Queen Anne's War begun, and, after the stormy events of the Revolution, which saw before it closed Vermont, Kentucky, and Tennessee, admitted as States into the new Union, when on May 7, of 1800, Indiana Territory was organized.

Soon after the close of the American Revolution, in July, 1787, the North-West Territory had been established. The French had then in what became in 1802, Ohio, no settlement, the first permanent European settlement in Ohio having been made at Marietta in 1788, Dayton having been settled in 1796; but in that part of the Territory which became Indiana the French had trading posts, and Vincennes had already become "a flourishing town," these trading posts dating from 1683 to 1763, while Indiana formed a part of the French domain called New France. At the Treaty of Paris, February 10, 1763, at the close of the "French and Indian War," these French posts and settlements passed into the nominal possession of the English, and when the War of the Revolution closed, they were in this wild and then largely unknown region belonging to the territory of the new United States.

In what became Indiana some early American settlements were made, but the record concerning them is, that "from 1788 to 1814 the settlements were much engaged in hostilities with the Indians."

The North-West Territory, which has been mentioned, of which Indiana Territory was a part, included the area west of Pennsylvania, north of the Ohio River, and east of the Mississippi. Some colonial claims to the possession of parts of this territory were ceded to Congress, by New York, in 1782, by Virginia, in 1784, by Massachusetts, in 1785, by Connecticut, in 1786. In 1787 an ordinance was framed for its management and government, passed September 13, which provided that land should not be taken up by white settlers until it had been purchased from Indians and offered for sale by the United States; that

no property qualification should be required for voting or holding office; that the territory, when settled sufficiently, should be divided into not less than three nor more than five States; that these should always remain a part of the United States; that their form of government should be republican; and that in none of them should slavery exist. It will be seen that the first of these was not fully observed in Northern Indiana, and, to some extent, slavery did exist in Southern Indiana till after 1840. The credit of excluding slavery is due largely to Dr. Manasseh Cutler, of Massachusetts, agent of the Ohio Company.

What our region was in 1800 when it was the home of the Indians may be quite well determined from the condition in which it was found by the first white settlers. The native red men made little changes in its natural appearance, in its animal races, in its vegetable productions. So we may safely assume that as the earliest settlers found it so it was in 1800.

As a part of what was then the great and almost unknown West, it was a rather low, in most parts level, quite well watered region, in parts well wooded, in other parts open, undulating prairie and broad, level marshes, fifty-five miles in breadth from east to west, and averaging about sixty-five miles from north to south, containing a land area of 3,575 square miles.

The northeastern part was heavily timbered, comprising some genuine "thick woods," the growth maple, beech, walnut; also ash, elm, bass-wood, and other species. Along Lake Michigan, for a few miles out, grew pine and cedar. South of this sandy belt, along the lake, and extending in a southwesterly direction into the Grand Prairie of Illinois, a stretch of fertile prairie in six divisions passed from the eastern

to the western limit. Each of these was separated by woodland or groves from the others, and three of them became, as settlers went upon them, noted for their wonderful native beauty. It is not probable that in all the prairie region east of the Mississippi River the beauty could be exceeded of what afterwards were called Rolling Prairie, Door Prairie, and Lake Prairie.

It has been said that this region was well watered. As will be seen on the map attached to this book a number of rivers crossed it, and there were as tributaries to these many small streams which the map does not show. Along the largest of these rivers, known as the Kankakee, flowing in a southwesterly direction, was a broad strip of marsh land, originally covered with water. South of this river was quite an extent of marshy land, also of broad sand ridges, two considerable water courses, the Tippecanoe and the Iroquois, and prairie and woodland between the river valleys.

The native fruits were abundant, if not of so many varieties as in some parts of the land. The principal ones were, huckleberries, cranberries, crab-apples, plums, some strawberries, wintergreen berries, sand-hill cherries, and grapes. Huckleberries and cranberries grew in great abundance. Hundreds of bushels, even thousands of bushels, of huckleberries and cranberries must have been eaten by the Indians and wild fowls or have gone to waste each year. The quantity of these two varieties of wild fruit growing on these sand ridges and marshes, is almost incredible to one unacquainted with the real facts. So late as 1896, when much of the native growth would naturally have been destroyed, there were marketed, it is said, in what is now Pulaski County, four thousand bushels

of huckleberries, two thousand in Starke County, by one shipper in a good season; and many years ago, from a single railroad station in Lake County, there were shipped a thousand bushels, picked by women and children, in one season. Cranberries grew very abundantly in many marshes when the first settlers came. Hundreds and hundreds of bushels were gathered by them and sent off in wagon loads to the nearest markets. The Indian children, it is certain, could have had no lack of wild fruit in the summer and fall, from July 1st till frost came. As late as 1837 the two varieties of wild plums, the red and the yellow, were excellent in quality—the red very abundant; and of crab-apples, although they were sour, yet large and nice, there then was no lack. There were nuts, too, in great abundance in the autumn time—hazel nuts, hickory nuts, walnuts, white and black, and beech nuts. In the northeastern part, where the hard or rock maple trees were so large and of so dense a growth, “thick woods,” the Indians in the spring time could make which they did make, maple sugar, to sweeten their crab-apples and cranberries.*

Whether as early as 1800 the honey bees had arrived to furnish the Indians with honey is not certain. They are said to go a little in advance of the white man, the heralds of his coming footsteps. Here, as early as

*Among the Indians in the northeastern part of La Porte County was a petty chief called Sagganee.

“When the Indians were removed, Sagganee went to Southern Kansas with them, but soon returned, saying that he could not live there—there was no sugar tree. He had been in the habit of making maple sugar.”

Like the whites, he had become attached to the “forest nectar.” He continued to live and died in Indiana. He would not live where there was no sugar tree.

1835 the early settlers found them in trees then well stored with honey. Solon Robinson, Crown Point's earliest settler, mentions "a dozen honey trees to be cut and taken care of" during his first winter, the winter of 1834 and 1835.

The Hornor party, camping in 1835, cut a bee tree, from the contents of which they filled a three gallon jar with strained honey, a wash tub and a wooden trough with honeycomb, and estimated all at at least five hundred pounds.

It is quite probable that, while fond of sugar, the Indians had also learned the taste of honey. Leaving fruits and sweets, which, without much labor on the part of the Indians, nature furnished in this favored region, some of the native animals may be noticed. Among those to be classed as game were black bears, probably not numerous, deer in vary large numbers, rabbits also and squirrels, the large fox, the smaller black, gray or cat, and red squirrels. For the presence of buffalo or bison on the prairies north of the Kankakee River, the evidence is very slight. One who was born at the Red Cedar Lake, in Lake County, who is a very close observer and a very accurate observer of nature, and of the traces of men and animals, accustomed to the wilds, who has trapped beaver and found traces of Indian encampments in South Alabama, encampments that had been tenantless for some seventy-five years, who shot many buffalo on the great plains of Texas in 1877 and 1878, Herbert S. Ball, has found on these Indiana prairies no traces of the existence here of buffalo. The traces which they leave he knows well. But there probably were some small, straggling herds here once. Yet, all the historic evi-

dence of such stragglers that has reached Crown Point is the statement, in some of the narratives of La Salle's expedition down the Kankakee River, that they captured a buffalo that was mired in the big marsh. Elk were evidently here, because their horns have been found in Lake County. Bones, supposed to be mammoth bones, have been found in Porter County; but of Buffalo no bone, no horn, seems to have yet been seen.

Of feathered animals, there were wild turkeys in the heavy timber, prairie chickens or pinnated grouse on the prairies by the thousands, partridges and quails in the woods, and, in a part of the summer, in numbers which it would be hard for the white boys of the present to credit, wild pigeons. To realize the immense numbers of pigeons that were here in each August month, when some of us who are now living were young hunters, one would need to see them almost darkening the sky sometimes, and hear the sweep of their wings, and see them rapidly gathering the acorns from the oak trees, and again covering large areas in the stubble of the grain fields, constantly in motion, as they picked up the scattered grains of wheat and of oats. Such sights would make the boys of this day almost go wild with delight. The American wild pigeon has gone, perhaps exterminated like the bison. They were here in the Indian times without doubt. There were also in prodigious numbers various kinds of water-fowls, wild geese, brants, swan, sand-hill cranes, ducks of many species, mud-hens, and plover.

The rivers and the lakes, of which more mention will be made, were well stocked with fish. With a few excellent varieties of these, such as pike, black bass, rock bass, and sunfish, the lakes may be said to have been

swarming, and especially one, afterwards called the "Lake of the Red Cedars." The Indians had no long drag nets with which to draw these from the water, and when the white men drew their nets through these waters the multitude of fish brought to the shore was a remarkable sight for any one to behold.

There was also for the Indians a large abundance of valuable fur-bearing animals, beaver perhaps almost extinct—the white settlers saw only their works—but otter, mink, raccoons, muskrats in prodigious numbers; and wolves, the large timber, gray wolf, the smaller prairie wolf, some wild cats, and, perhaps, occasionally a lynx. Elk were here once, as has been said, but whether as late as 1800 has not been ascertained. No attempt is here made to give the entire list of native animals, but only to name those with which the Indians, as hunters and trappers, would have the most to do.

From this outline sketch of this region, as it must have been in 1800, it is evident that it was a favorable location for uncivilized man.

We are now ready to look at the Indians themselves.

CHAPTER II.

THE INDIANS.—1800-1833.

The North American Indians, a singular and an interesting portion of mankind, whose origin on this continent is unknown, have been divided by different writers into eleven or more large families, these families being subdivided into tribes. The terms Nation and Clan are also used by writers to denote divisions among the Indians, some writers making tribe co-extensive in meaning with nation, others including in an Indian nation several tribes. Some make clan a subdivision of a tribe; others make clan more extensive than tribe. The meaning of these different terms must be learned from their use.

That in 1800 Indians alone had any proper claim to this region is evident, and they roamed over it at their own will, whether they were, as Venable calls them in 1763, Kickapoos, or, as the pioneers here found them in 1830, Pottawatomies.

In King's Handbook of the United States, it is said that La Salle, "Indiana's first European visitor," concentrated "all the Indians of the Ohio Valley around his fort on the Illinois River, for mutual defense against the terrible Iroquois, and in so doing he depopulated Indiana." That the Indians at that time left the south shores of Lake Michigan is not

certain. It is further stated in King's Handbook that "After the French founded Detroit the local tribes wandered back into Indiana and settled there."*

William Henry Smith, in his History of Indiana (1897), says that the native Indians of Indiana were driven out by the Iroquois before 1684, and that they returned from Fort St. Louis on the Illinois about 1712.

That the Pottawatomies were here in 1800 is abundantly sure, and while they or other tribes were proper owners of the region, they had learned that the French had claimed some control over them, and they had been in some contact with French civilization, and so were not the perfectly untutored Indians of the wilds. Yet was theirs largely the true Indian life. The smoke that went up into the sky from this region went from their wigwams or from fires that they had kindled; the human voices that were heard beside the rivers and the lakes or in the woodlands and on the prairies, were the voices of their women and children or of their hunters and their warriors; the pathways, the trails, the pony tracks, led to their villages or camping grounds, or dancing floors, and sometimes to their burial places; the boats paddled upon the waters were their canoes; the few places of the upturned sod were the gardens for their vegetables and the patches for their maize. They were not, to much extent, tillers of the soil, although raising some corn,

*Detroit was founded in 1701, passed to the English in 1760, fully in 1763; and came under the control of the United States in 1783.

Detroit was again in the hands of the British from August 16, 1812 till October, 1813.

T. H. B.

more than is generally supposed, and a few garden vegetables; but they were the hunters, the fishers, and the trappers, where fully indeed abounded game and fish and fur. It would not seem probable that they had any need to suffer, in summer or in winter, for want of food.

For the first third of this century and for how many "moons" or years or centuries before, who knows? these Indians, generation after generation, were the principal occupants here. Tribe may have succeeded tribe, yet Indians were they all. But these Indians, our immediate predecessors, the Pottawatomies, upon whose resources for food we have been looking, did not continue, through these three and thirty years of the century, in the peaceful pursuits of life. Let us look upon them as they too take part in some of the conflicts that were waged.

That noted Shawnee chief, Tecumseh, until his death, in October, 1813, at the battle of the Moravian towns, was very active in endeavoring to unite the Indian tribes into one great confederacy, and encouraged the hostilities which led to the battle of Tippecanoe, November 7, 1811, but whether any of our Pottawatomies took part in that engagement cannot here be stated. It is said that Saggonee, who was so much attached to maple sugar, was at Tippecanoe. But the war spirit was evidently among them. The French, who laid claim to such a large part of this once wild Western world, had given to a spot on Lake Michigan, in longitude west from Greenwich 87°37', the name in their language which became Chicago in ours; and there they had built a fort and established a trading post. The United States Government established there Fort Dearborn in 1803 or 1804 a few

soldiers forming the garrison. War was declared between the United States and Great Britain, June 18, 1812, and many of the Indian tribes were ready to aid the British. Seeing probable danger, it was arranged by some one, who certainly did not consider wisely the value of a slight barricade or stockade against Indian forces, for this Fort Dearborn garrison to pass, if possible, through the Pottawatomie tribe, across our region, and reach Fort Wayne.

They left their fortifications August 15, 1812, with some friendly Miamis, but had proceeded only a short distance from the fort when they were attacked by the Pottawatomies and nearly all killed. This action is called the Fort Dearborn massacre. What further part the Pottawatomies took in the events, the campaigns of 1813 and 1814, it is not needful here to inquire. In 1816 Fort Dearborn was re-established, troops being kept there most of the time until after January, 1837; and the Pottawatomies settled down again to their former mode of life.

The brisk fur trade, with the two trading posts of Chicago and Detroit, stimulated their trapper life, as from the days of the first French explorers they had learned that the white man sets quite a large value upon fur, and the influence of the French missionaries, some of them not only zealous, but self-denying, noble men, still remained among them. Their burials were not conducted altogether with pagan rites, they knew the symbol of the cross and they erected crosses beside some of their graves.

But while some of the French influences for good remained among them until the white settlers met them, evil influences were also among them, coming from the American traders. These men furnished

them with whisky, taught them to drink it, and nothing good could be the result. It has been found that Indians, in contact with unprincipled whites, always lose some of their native virtues. The French, far better than the English or Americans, adapted themselves to the Indian nature, had larger control over them, and seem to have tried more faithfully to do them good.

Yet in the first third of the Nineteenth Century, some Protestant American missionaries tried very faithfully to instruct, civilize, and evangelize these Pottawatomies.

In the year 1817 the Rev. Isaac McCoy, a Baptist, a native of Indiana, commenced a mission work among the Miamis and Kickapoos, but met with very little success. In 1822 he established himself at a locality on the St. Joseph River, about one hundred miles north and west from Fort Wayne, at what was called the "center of the Pottawatomie tribe," in what is now Southwestern Michigan, and named his mission station Carey, evidently in remembrance of Dr. Carey, one of the noted Baptist missionaries that went from England to India. He had as an assistant, Johnston Lykins, whom he had baptized, who was appointed as missionary September 2, 1822, and who "removed from Carey Station to the Shawanoes, July 7, 1831"* At Carey a school for the Indians was opened which in less than two years numbered about seventy pupils, and in the recorded history of this station it is stated that "the people advanced in agriculture and the mechanic arts, and a considerable number were baptized." This report further states: "The first Pottawatomie hymn was sung at Carey November 14, 1824,

*Missionary Jubilee, page 257.

by Mr. McCoy and the native assistant, Noaquette; the latter said, 'I wish we could make it a little longer.' This year there was a school of sixty Indian pupils. The Mission cultivated sixty acres of land."

"In a little work called "Anthony Rollo, the Converted Indian," is found this paragraph, the record belonging to this same year of 1824.

"In June, three lads, sons of one of the missionaries,* who had been at school in the state of Ohio, made a visit to their parents at Carey. As they passed Fort Wayne, one hundred miles from Carey, and the whole distance a wilderness without inhabitants, they met with poor, friendless Anthony. They set him on one of their horses,† they walking, and carried him to Carey, at which place they arrived on the 29th of June." This Anthony was but half Indian. His mother was a daughter of Topinchee, who had been a principal chief among the Pottawatomies, and his father was a French trader. He was a cripple in his lower limbs, walking with difficulty. At Carey he learned to read, became a diligent reader of the Scriptures, and an earnest, Protestant Christian. He died at Carey Missionary Station, March 8, 1828, twenty-two years of age. The reflection of the devoted missionaries at that time was "how few of the Pottawatomie tribe had reached the abodes of the blessed!" And they prayed, "O gracious God, permit us to hope that many others of this tribe will be allowed to unite in the everlasting song, 'Thou art worthy, for thou wast slain, and hast redeemed us to God by thy blood, out of every kindred, and tongue, and people, and nation.'"

*Rev. J. McCoy.

†The boys had only two horses.

How much either Roman Catholic or Protestant teaching did for the Indians it is difficult, it is in fact impossible, for us to know. It is not likely very much Christian principle was implanted. We all know that remarkable chapter about "charity," or "love," as the revised version reads; and we know also, both Roman Catholic and Protestant teachers alike, how needful this love is, love that worketh no ill to one's neighbor, love that is the fulfilling of the law, to fit the soul for the society of holy ones. And that the Indians who came in contact with the missionaries manifested the possession of much of this love is doubtful. And that no church rites will place this love within the soul we all have the opportunity of seeing. Yet is to be hoped that some of the Indians, learning as they did that a Saviour lived, that he died and arose from the dead, did through that knowledge and through the rich grace of God, who is no respecter of persons, reach the possession of this needful love. And all such we may confidently look for in Paradise. That from all the great divisions of the human family, from the white and black and red and yellow and brown, there will be individuals gathered to form the multitude that no man can number, no loving believer in the Christian teachings has a right to doubt.

But however much or little real or lasting good was accomplished by these well meant and zealous mission efforts, some mention of which should justly be made on these pages of our Indian history, this Carey Mission was not in existence a sufficient length of time to extend its influence over our borders, for "by a treaty provision with the United States the station was substantially relinquished in 1831."

A change for the Indians, a great change for the

forests and prairies and all the native dwellers here, was rapidly coming. White migration was pushing westward into the great forests of the old Northwest Territory. Settlements were made in the Ohio portion, and along the Ohio River, and on the Wabash, and the line of advance was now toward the south shore of Lake Michigan. Settlements had gone up from the Ohio River over a part of Illinois, and had even reached Lake Michigan, for Major Long reported at Chicago in 1827 three families living in log cabins. The Indians, peaceful as they have become, are soon to leave their choice hunting and trapping grounds, their favorite fishing spots and camping grounds and dancing floors, and worst of all the burial places of their dead, to the white man's occupancy and the white man's plowshare. Upon very little of that Indian life for the first third of this century can we now look through the eyes of those who saw and knew them; and yet that little is sufficient to enable us, with no great stretch of imagination, to see their hunting parties, and to see the hunters bringing in the deer and other game, and the squaws, or Indian women and girls, dressing and cooking the deer, the rabbits and squirrels, the ducks and geese, the grouse and partridges and quails; the wigwams with the fire in the center and the smoke passing out through the opening at the top; and the children playing round the camp. We can easily see them picking the wild fruit and also see them at their domestic employments around the wigwams.

Beside the water courses, the Calumet and the Kankakee, the Tippecanoe, and the Iroquois, and the Pinkamink, and on the banks of so many small and beautiful lakes, while the men and boys trapped or

fished, the women and children must have enjoyed the choice camping places amid the beauty of the bright autumn time; and those rich flowers of the prairie left from the golden summer, how could they fail, loving bright colors, richly to have enjoyed? In those smoky days, when the Great Prairie and the Big Marsh and hundreds of smaller ones had been burning, when the sun, so red in the morning and in the evening, and while visible, made no shadow even at midday, and the air was still; and then in the evening when the full and red hunter's moon shone upon them, how they must have dreamed of the beautiful hunting grounds of which their pagan ancestors had told them and taught them to look for in the great future. Perhaps to them, amid those beauties of the world around them, some ideas of the power and the glory of the Great Spirit came. Perhaps some blind prayers went up from their darkened minds to his throne above. Perhaps some longings for a higher life came at times upon them. A little good, and yet it seems to have been a very little good, have white men done to the Indian race. They were here, those copper-colored, uneducated, native children of America, but a few years ago, where are now our towns and villages, our farms and orchards, our churches and schools, our domestic animals and our homes. Some of their stone axes, their arrow and spear heads, and many of their bones, are left in our soil; their dust is here to be mingled with our dust; but they have passed forever away. They wrote no history, they published no songs, they erected no monuments; even the earth-works are, probably, not their work; and after they had passed into the distant West, this fair, long stretch of land was almost as though they had never

been. There were no bridges, no mills, no fences, no buildings, and not much mark of human occupancy.

Something more of these Indians and of their peculiar life we may see when we come to the mixed life of the pioneer and Indian from 1830 to 1840, when incidents may be found sufficient to make a long chapter.

At present let us look at two of their noted chieftains.

SHAUBENEE. CHEE-CHEE-BING-WAY.

The following particulars in regard to this noted Indian chieftain are taken from a Chicago publication of 1889. He was what is called a "good Indian." His name is said to mean "built like a bear." He is said to have been "nearly a perfect specimen of physical development." He was born in 1775, in Canada, a grandnephew of Pontiac, and was a contemporary of the celebrated Indians, "Tecumseh, Black Hawk, Red Jacket, and Keokuk." Born an Ottawa he was brought in 1800, by a hunting party, to the Pottawatomie country and married a daughter of their principal chief whose village was where is now Chicago in Illinois. When forty years of age he was the war chief of the two tribes, the Ottawas and Pottawatomes. He joined Tecumseh in getting up his confederation, and was next to him in command at the battle of the Thames, and when Tecumseh fell on that battlefield Shaubenee ordered a retreat. That was his first and last battle against the whites.

For his refusal longer to contend against the whites he was deposed as war chief, but continued to be the principal peace chief. For some twenty years he was "the practical head of the Ottawas, Pottawatomes, and

Chippewas." When the Indians ceded their Illinois lands to the United States they reserved 1,280 acres near Paw Paw Grove in Illinois, for Shaubensee, but of this rapacious whites "by force and fraud deprived him."

At length, in 1859, some generous white people bought twenty acres of land and built for him a house in Grundy County, Illinois, on the south bank of the Illinois River, where he died July 17, 1859, being 84 years of age, "and was buried with imposing ceremonies in the cemetery at Morris." While not residing in Indiana yet as connected with our Pottawatomies Shaubensee is surely entitled to a place in our Indian records.

Next to this noted Indian chief may be named a man of mixed blood—Indian, French, and English—whose English name was Alexander Robinson and his Indian name Chee-Chee-Bing-Way, translated Blinking Eyes, who died at his home on the Des Plaines River near Chicago about 1872 (supposed to be 104 years of age), for he is claimed to have been a head chief among the Pottawatomies. No battle deeds of his have been found on record to be recounted here, but as early as 1809 he is found engaged in taking corn around the south shore of Lake Michigan, having become connected with the founder of Bailly Town in the fur trade and then being in the service or employ of John Jacob Astor. This corn was raised by the Pottawatomies and was taken to Chicago for sale and export "in bark woven sacks on the backs of ponies." So that we may call this Indian chief the first known buyer and exporter of corn at what is now that great mart of trade—Chicago. In August, 1812, it is said, he was on his way in a

canoe, again to buy up corn in Chicago, or at Fort Dearborn, when some friendly Miamis hailed him from the shore, and warned him not to go to Chicago, as "it would storm tomorrow." He left his canoe, therefore, at the mouth of the Big Calumet (which is in Lake County), and had no part in the "August Massacre." He lived the next winter in Indian style as a hunter on the Calumet. In 1829 he took a wife from the Calumet who was three-fourths Indian blood. His headquarters were at Chicago and his journeys outward for the purpose of buying fur extended as far southward as the Wabash River.

It is claimed that he, as a Pottawatomie chief, evidently a trader rather than a warrior, called together an Indian council at Chicago in the time of the Black Hawk War (1832), and it is said that when, in 1836, the great body of this tribe met for the last time in Chicago, received their presents, and started for the then wild West, this trader chief went with them. But like Shaubensee, who also went out to see his people settled in their new home, he soon returned and passed his last years on the Des Plaines River.

Mr. J. Hurlburt, a well-known citizen of Porter, and afterwards of Lake County, stated several years ago, that he was in Chicago at the time of that gathering of the "red children" in 1836, and that as many as ten thousand were supposed to have been then assembled there, and that it was understood that five thousand were Pottawatomies.

JOHN B. CHAUDONIA.

The name of another active and influential man may properly be placed on this record.

General Lewis Cass says: "Chaudonia was a half-

breed Pottawatomie. His uncle, Topenebee, was the chief of the tribe, and was an old man of great influence." Like Anthony Rollo he was the son of a French man and an Indian woman, but unlike him there seems no evidence that he received in any true sense the religion of the whites among whom for some years he lived. General Cass further says of him: "He served many years under my orders both in peace and war, and in trying circumstances rendered great services to the United States. Some of the events of his life were almost romantic, and at all times he was firm and faithful."

General Cass says further: "From the commencement of our difficulties with Great Britain, Chaudonia espoused our cause, notwithstanding the exertions of the British agents to seduce him to their interests."

"He was present at the massacre of the garrison of Chicago, where I have always understood he saved the life of Captain Heald, the commanding officer, and the lives of others also." After mentioning his influence as exerted in inducing the chief, Topenebee, his mother's brother, and other Pottawatomie chiefs, to attend the council of Greenville in 1834 held by General Harrison and himself, General Cass adds: "From Greenville he accompanied me to Detroit, * * * and rendered me the most essential service."

In 1832 Chaudonia was living for a time in La Porte County, on a piece of land, section 28, township —, range —, "allotted to him by the treaty with the Pottawatomie Indians, held on the Tippecanoe River, October 26, 1832."

He afterward became a resident near South Bend and there died in 1837. Congress granted in 1847 a

section of land to his widow and children "in consideration of the services rendered" by him to the United States. His name among the Indians, says Charles M. Heaton, was Shaderny, which seems to have been sometimes written Shadney. Two of his grandsons were faithful soldiers on the side of the Union in our great Civil War.

One of them was severely wounded. So there was shed in that fierce conflict, not only the blood of Americans and of many European nationalities, but also Pottawatomie blood from the State of Indiana.

It is not a part of the design of this historic sketch to give the present condition of the Pottawatomies in their Western homes, but this record may well be made: that their late head chief, Shoughnessee, died at his home in Jackson County, Kansas, of quick consumption, April 7, 1900, and was buried with full Indian rites in his own door-yard. He was considered, as a leader, quite conservative. His successor is called a more progressive man.

It is on record somewhere that an old Indian once said, "Give me back my forests and my bow, and my children shall no more die of a cough."

CHAPTER III.

EARLY SETTLERS—1830-1840.

According to a report concerning the Public Domain of Indiana and its Survey, made in 1892 by J. C. Henderson, then Auditor of State, it appears that the eastern portion of a strip of land, ten miles in breadth, from north to south, across Indiana, was purchased from the Pottawatomies at Chicago, at a treaty made there August 29, 1821; and that the western portion of the strip, the southern boundary line of which just touched Lake Michigan in what is now Lake County, was purchased when a treaty was made October 16, 1826, at Mississinewa. The line marking the south boundary of this purchase is known in some early descriptions of land as the "ten mile line." The north boundary line of Indiana is exactly ten miles north of an east and west line that barely cuts the most southern limit of Lake Michigan.

It is a question with some what is the real north boundary of Lake and Porter counties. The State boundary is the following, according to the Constitution, Article XIV., Section 1. "On the east by the meridian line which forms the western boundary of the State of Ohio; on the south by the Ohio River, from the mouth of the Great Miami River to the mouth of the Wabash River; on the west, by a line drawn along the middle of the Wabash River, from its mouth to a point where a due north line, drawn from the town of Vin-

cennes would last touch the northwestern shore of said Wabash River, and thence by a due north line, until the same shall intersect an east and west line drawn through a point ten miles north of the southern extreme of Lake Michigan; on the north, by said east and west line until the same shall intersect the first-mentioned meridian line which forms the western boundary of the State of Ohio."

Another treaty was made with the Indians October 27, 1832, on the Tippecanoe River, made between Jonathan Jennings, J. W. Davis, and Marks Crume, Commissioners for the United States, "and the Chiefs and Warriors of the Pottawatomies on the part of said Pottawatomies," in accordance with which treaty the United States bought all the remaining land of these Indians in Indiana, also lands in Michigan Territory and in Illinois. This treaty was signed by the United States Commissioners and by fifty-one Indians. To each Indian name on the treaty there is attached the expression "his mark," for these children of the forests and the prairies, chiefs, warriors, head men of their tribe, were as ignorant of writing as were once the noblemen of England in those old days when the phrase originated, "benefit of clergy." By the terms of this treaty the Indians were to receive, as soon as possible after the treaty was signed, \$32,000 in merchandise of some kind, \$15,000 a year for twelve years, and some other amounts. The Commissioners say that at the request of the Indians, after the treaty was signed, \$2,700 was applied to purchase horses for them, which the Commissioners say were immediately purchased and delivered. What price was paid for horses at that time does not appear in the record, but perhaps this sum was sufficient to buy a horse, at least

a pony, for every man that signed the treaty. There then remained, due to the Indians, \$29,300, the Commissioners say, to be paid in merchandise, but how that was expended they do not mention. This treaty having been sanctioned by the Senate was confirmed by President Jackson, January 21, 1833.*

According to the usage of our Government the Indian title to this region was now extinguished, the second third of the century was soon to begin, and the land was ready for the coming of the pioneer settlers.

The American Fur Company, John Jacob Astor, President, kept an open communication between Detroit and Chicago. Steadily westward and also northward, the pioneers were pushing along their advanced guards, some settlers as early as 1821 having reached the locality where is now Indianapolis. The Wabash Valley was settled. Fruit trees were planted. Peaches and then apples soon grew in that rich valley; and then into North-Western Indiana the pioneers came.

In 1800 there were found to be in Indiana Territory, as its white population, 5,640, or (American Cyclopaedia) 4,651, or (Colton) 4,875; about five thousand. In 1810 there were 24,520. In 1820, 147,178. In 1830, 341,582. But of this number in 1830, 3,562 were free blacks. Into the West as well as into the South the blacks have gone along with the early white settlers. (Some one once observed that the first white man who settled at Chicago was a negro.) In 1820 only fifty-one Indiana counties had been organized, and Wabash County had an area then of 8,000 square miles with 147 inhabitants. Delaware County had an area

*A copy of this treaty, with the signatures, as sent out by General Jackson, I had the opportunity of examining in the office of Hon. T. J. Wood, of Crown Point. T. H. B.

of 5,400 square miles. Darby's Universal Gazetteer of 1826, from which these areas are taken, says: "In a review, however, of the settled parts of Indiana, the counties of Wabash and Delaware with the adjacent Indian country ought to be excluded," the entire area of the three divisions being 20,022 square miles. "The actually inhabited section of Indiana," the Gazetteer says, "will be restricted to 13,972, say 14,000 square miles." This was in 1826. Of what was then called the "Indian country," area 6,622 square miles, more than one-half was in Northern Indiana.

The first white settlers, who came to bring civilization and Christianity, commerce and manufactures, art, science, and literature, into this corner of the State, began to come in 1830 and 1831, a very few as early as 1829, before the land, to any extent, was purchased from the Indians; and for some ten years, until the last land north of the Kankakee was put upon the market, in 1839, pioneer settlers continuing to come in, the proper Indian period and the period of white occupancy were blended together. It is evident that until 1833, except on the ten mile purchase, the first white settlers were intruders upon Indian hunting grounds and gardens and cornfields; and for some years after 1833 the Pottawatomies still lingered among their long-cherished and delightful camping places. They were in no haste to leave; and although the large body of them, perhaps five thousand, left the State in 1836, some hundreds still remained among us, many even until 1840. We have therefore a period of ten years, from 1830 to 1840, of Indian and white life mingled. While in those years, among the pioneer families there were some privations, some hardships, yet those ten years of frontier life were years of a

rich, delightful experience, enjoyed very fully by a few hundred families where savage life was ending and civilizations beginning, and which by those thus enjoying cannot be forgotten. In this age of steam and electricity in which we live such a frontier life cannot be again.

It may be well to look over the records and see who were some of the first settlers, the true pioneers of North-Western Indiana. To give all their names, were it possible, would be decidedly impracticable, for on the Claim Register of Lake County, including the western part of Porter County, are nearly five hundred signatures. It is evident, therefore, that between 1829 and 1839 many hundreds of families came into the three counties lying north of the Kankakee; and many certainly, in those years, settled in Pulaski and White and Jasper. Of the comparatively few names that will here be given probably some are not correctly written.

There has been found as the name of the first settler in what became White County, coming in the spring of 1829, Jacob Thompson, who died near Reynolds in 1875; and, as the second settler, Benjamin Reynolds is named, who came from Ohio; and then George A. Spencer, also in 1829. The next pioneers, perhaps not in that year, were Jerry Bisher, Robert Rothrock, George R. Bartley, Peter Price; and then many others from Ohio, Pennsylvania, and from Kentucky; also some Norwegians, among them Peter B. Smith and H. E. Hiorth, who settled and named the village called Norway on the Tippecanoe River.

In what became Pulaski County there were very few, if any, whites till 1830, and most of the families now there came in after 1850.

For that County the following names of early citizens have been recorded: "James Justice, Eli and Peter Demoss, and Thomas McMany, in the northeast; T. J. Galbrith, Henry White, Robert Scott, Moses L. Washburn, and William Fisher in the south; John Rees, Michael Stump, Silas Phillips, Lewis McCoy, A. E. Moore, and John M. Cowan, in the western part; and John Davenport, Andrew Keys, John Peirson, George P. Perry, H. W. Hornbeck, Tilman Hackett, and Benjamin Ballinger, in the more central sections."*

The settlers of Pulaski came from Ohio, from older counties in Indiana, some from the South, some from Pennsylvania, a few from New England and New York, some from Great Britain, and, as later settlers, many Germans.

In regard to settling the prairie the same practice prevailed here as in Lake County, that "as a general thing," some exceptions may have been, "the homesteads were located in or near the timbered lands, the large prairies being left unsettled until a considerable advance had been made in the way of improvements."

The first settlers in the central parts of what became Jasper County are said to have been George Culp and Thomas Randle from Virginia. They came and examined some localities in 1834. The United States survey had just been made and a surveyor directed them to the "Forks" of the Iroquois. It is stated that they found no settlement west of the present Pulaski County line, but that traveling on the "Allen Trail" they came to William Donahoe's, who had just settled near the present Francesville.

*Historical Atlas of Indiana.

They went on to the rapids of the Iroquois and to the mouth of the Pinkamink. They seem to have been pleased with the locality, for in May, 1835, they settled at what became known as "the Forks." In the summer of 1836 there followed them as pioneer men with their families John G. Parkison and Henry Barkley, also with them came the widow of Simon Kenton, a noted Kentucky pioneer. Her daughter, then John G. Parkison's wife, was said to have been the first white child born at the present city of Cincinnati. This may, it may not be true. Mrs. Kenton died in Jasper County about 1848. Her age is not recorded.

Other families followed these: "Reeds, Prices, Casads, Burgets, Guthridges, Reeves, and Shannahans"* Soon another settlement was made on the Iroquois and a third where is now Rensselaer.

Those making this third settlement were John Nowels, with a young son, David, and a young daughter, and a son-in-law, Joseph D. Yeoman and family. They came with an ox team, as did many other families, arriving in the fall of 1836, according to the statements in the "Historical Atlas." A date two years earlier will be found in the history of the town of Rensselaer. William Mallatt soon became a neighbor to Joseph D. Yeoman, but on his claim was afterward laid an "Indian float."

One of his daughters, Margaret Mallatt, is called the first white child born in Jasper County, and Mary Mallatt is said to have been the first young bride.

The names of other pioneers in this county will be found in other connections.

In that part of Jasper, which in 1860 became New-

*Historical Atlas of Indiana.

ton County, hunters and trappers for some time were roaming among the Indians. At length a few "squatters" came, and then some permanent settlers. The first names found are Josiah Dunn and John Elliott as settlers in 1832. About the same time settlements were made by James W. Lacy, W. Spitler, Zacharias Spitler, James Cuppy, Jacob Prout, John Mayers, Bruce Dunn, and Matthias Redding. About 1837 came Jacob, Samuel, and Frederick Kenyon, Charles Anderson, Amos Clark, and, in 1838, James Murphy.

Still later settlers were James Elijah, John Darret, David Kustler, Daniel Deardorf, Benjamin Roodnick, and Silas Johnson. Says the Historical Atlas: "These settlers found innumerable deer and turkeys in the woods and prairies, and wild bees were so plentiful that an abundant supply of honey was at the command of any one who cared to exert himself a little to procure it."

Settlements were made on the north, on the east, and on the south of what, in 1850, became Starke County, earlier than in that rather small area of wet land, some sand ridges, and of, what was called some years ago, "comparative inaccessibility."

Edward Smith, from England, is called the first settler in what is now Oregon Township in 1835. John Lindley was the first settler in North Bend Township, and others, called early settlers were John Tibbits, Nathan Koontz, and Samuel Koontz. Starke County was not organized until 1850, so but little of its history belongs to the pioneer or early settler times.

In the other three counties, La Porte, Porter, and Lake, many more names have been found.

The first family credited as settling in La Porte County bore the name of Benedict. Mrs. Miriam

Benedict, widow of Stephen S. Benedict, with six sons and one daughter, and Henly Clyburn, husband of the daughter, on March 15, 1829, made a settlement not far northwest from the present town of Westville. July 16, 1829, was born in this pioneer home among the Indians Elizabeth Miriam Clyburn, the first white child born in what became La Porte County.

In April of this same year, near this locality, a few miles south of the Ten Mile Purchase, settled Samuel Johnson, William Eahart, and Jacob Inglewright; also Charles and James Whittaker, and W. H. Shirley. About seven miles distant from the Benedict and Clyburn locality, in the same year, settled Adam Keith and family and Louis Shirley with his mother; and here, in October, 1829, was born the first white boy in La Porte County, according to the traditions, Keith Shirley.

Settlers in 1830—	John S. Garrouette.
Richard Harris.	Andrew Shaw.
Philip Fail.	John Sissany.
Aaron Stanton.	William Garrison.
Benajah Stanton.	William Adams.
William Clark.	Joseph Osborne.
Andrew Smith.	Daniel Jessup.
John Wills and sons.	Nathan Haines.
Charles Wills.	Richard Harris.
Daniel Wills.	George Thomas.
John E. Wills.	William Stule.

October 30th of this year was born Benajah S. Fail, son of Philip Fail, called by some the first white boy born in La Porte County.

Settlers in 1831—

Rolling Prairie settlement commenced May 25th by David Stoner, Arthur Irving, Jesse West, E. Pro-

volt, and — Willets. Other families came later in the year, among them the Harvey, Salisbury, and Whitehead families, also those of Daniel Murray, James Hiley, Jacob Miller, John Garrett, Emery Brown, C. W. Brown, James Drummond, Benjamin De Witt, Dr. B. C. Bowell, J. Austin, Ludlow Bell, and Myron Ives.* This soon became a noted settlement.

Other settlers in different neighborhoods: James Highley, James Webster, Judah Learning, Abram Cormack, Daniel Griffin; Horace Markham, Lane Markham, on Mill Creek; Thomas Stillwell, giving name to Stillwell Prairie; Alden Tucker; Charles W. Cathcart, giving name to a beautiful grove; also the Ball, Blake, Landon, Wheeler, Bond, Fravel, Staneon, and Garwood families, and Joseph Pagin and Wilson Malone. Most of these earliest families as was natural, made their settlements on that strip of land, ten miles in width, which had already been purchased from the Indians, although some settled south of that line on unpurchased Indian lands.

Settlers of 1832—

Isham Campbell.	Elijah Brown.
Andrew Richardson.	A. M. Jessup.
Edmund Richardson.	Silas Hale.
John Dunn.	Oliver Closson.
Josiah Bryant.	John Brown.
Jeremiah Sherwood.	Charles Vail.
Jonathan Sherwood.	W. A. Place.
George Campbell.	A. Blackburn.
John Broadhead.	Bird McLane.
Peter White.	John McLane.

*For these names and many others I am indebted to the "History of La Porte County." T. H. B.

S. Aldrich.	Erastus Quivey.
Charles Ives.	Joseph Wheaton.
John Hazleton.	

Settlers of 1833—

John Talbott.	John Beaty.
Brainard Goff.	N. Stul.
S. James.	W. Niles.
G. W. Barnes.	John Osborn.
Shubel Smith.	L. Maulsby.
W. Goit.	L. Reynolds.
R. Miller.	T. Robinson.
H. Cathcart.	R. Prother.
Elmore Pattee.	R. Williams.
Joseph Orr.	Peter Burch.
Jacob R. Hall.	W. Burch.
F. Reynolds.	Ira Burch.
Joseph Starrett.	W. O'Hara.
Jesse Willett.	M. O'Hara.
Jesse West.	Samuel O'Hara.
Nimrod West.	Edward O'Hara.
J. Gallion.	J. Perkins.
J. Clark.	Isaac Johnson.
John Wilson.	W. Lavin.
Asa Owen.	S. Lavin.
A. Harvey.	John Winchell.
B. Butterworth.	John Vail.
H. Griffith.	Henry Vail.
J. Griffith.	J. Travis.
G. Rose.	Curtis Travis.
John Luther.	

Other names of early settlers in La Porte County will be found among the records of their Old Settlers' Association.

Something singular is connected with the name

Lykins. After detailing the supposed facts of the first settlement of Hudson Township, and naming as the first or one of the first settlers, Joseph W. Lykins, a Welshman, "connected with the Carey Mission," who settled there in 1829, General Packard mentions as one of the settlers in Wills Township in 1830 Joseph Lykins, and at length says: "During this year (1834) Joseph Lykins put up the first frame house that was erected in Wills." That this man was a Welshman he does not say.

If all the statements are correct there must have been near the northeast corner of La Porte County three men by the name of Lykins—Johnston Lykins, born in Ohio; Joseph W. Lykins, from Wales, and Joseph Lykins, presumably an American.

The statements in regard to the first rest on documentary evidence in missionary publications that cannot be questioned. The statements in regard to Joseph and Joseph W. rest upon the memories of the early settlers from whom General Packard obtained information.

It is not probable any one is living now who knows anything of that frame house built in 1834.

In what became Porter County, with the exception of the French trader, Joseph Bailly, who will be elsewhere mentioned, who, in the employ of John Jacob Astor, is said to have made a home on the Calumet River with his Indian wife in 1822, settlements seem not to have commenced until the stage line from Detroit to Fort Dearborn or Chicago was opened in 1833. In that year three brothers—Virginians, Jesse, William, and Isaac Morgan—made settlements and gave name to one of the small, rich prairies of the county. In April of the same year

came from Ohio Henry S. Adams with his mother, his wife, and three daughters; and in June George Cline, Adam S. Campbell from New York, and Reason Bell from Ohio. Also Jacob Fleming, Ruel Starr, and Seth Hull.

The following are found as the names of early settlers in the northwestern part of the county. Some of these names may be found repeated in the following lists:

For the year 1834, Jacob Wolf and three sons—John, Jacob E., and Josephus; Barrett Door; Reuben Hurlburt and sons—William, Henry, Jacob, David, and Griffith; R. and W. Parrott; and, a year or so later, S. P. Robbins, B. and Allen Jones, and the following whose given names have not been found: Blake, Peak, Sumner, Ritter, Harrison, Curtis, Smith, Arnold, McCool, and T. J. Field. The names Twenty-Mile Prairie and Twenty-Mile Grove, were given to the localities in that part of the county. Not that the prairie or the strip of woodland, in which grove for a time black squirrels abounded, extended for twenty miles, but they were twenty miles distant from somewhere. In that locality these family names remained for many years and some still remain.

The following lists of names are arranged according to the years of settlement, but perfect accuracy cannot be claimed for them all, as the authorities were evidently not perfectly accurate. But care has been taken in making corrections and perfecting as nearly as was practicable the entire list.

Settlers in 1834—

Thomas A. E. Campbell.	Levi Jones.
Benjamin McCarty.	Selah Wallace.
Theodore Jones.	C. A. Ballard.

William Thomas.	Joseph Bartholomew.
John Hageman.	William Frame.
William Coleman.	Benjamin Spencer.
Pressley Warwick.	Miller Parker.
John Bartholomew.	J. Sherwood.
Stephen Bartholomew.	Jacob Shultz.
J. P. Ballard.	John Shultz.
A. K. Paine.	Owen Crumpacker.
Jesse Johnston.	W. Downing.
Thomas Gossett.	Jerry Todhunter.
William Gossett.	John J. Foster.
Theophilus Crumpacker.	— Abbott.
Jerry Bartholomew.	— McCoy.
Jacob Beck.	

In this year was born January 11th the first white child in the county, Reason Bell, and the second on February 11th, Hannah Morgan.

Settlers in 1835—

Putnam Robbins.	— Baum.
David Hughart.	George Z. Salyer.
E. P. Cole.	David Oaks.
Hazard Sheffield.	Alanson Finney.
Allen B. James.	Henry Stoner.
G. W. Patton.	Abraham Stoner.
— Baum.	

Jesse Johnson, the first in	Boone Township.
N. S. Fairchild.	Thomas Clark.
Archie De Munn.	Peter Ritter.
Charles Allen.	W. Calhoun.
Josiah Allen.	John Jones.
Lewis Cooner.	David Bryant.
Thomas Adams.	

Settlers in 1836—

Simeon Bryant.	Thomas Dinwiddie.
----------------	-------------------

Orris Jewett.	Thomas Johnson.
Solomon Dilley.	William Johnson.
James Dilley.	Jesse Johnson.
Absalom Morris.	Jennings Johnson.
Isaac Cornell.	Joseph Laird.
John Moore.	George Eisley.
William Bissell.	John Prim.
John W. Dinwiddie.	Frederick Wineinger.
A. D. McCord.	Hugh Dinwiddie.

Settlers from 1836 to 1838—

John Oliver.	James Dye.
Barkley Oliver.	Dr. Griffin.
Daniel Kisler.	John Dillingham.
T. C. Sweeney.	Abram Snodgrass.
David Dinwiddie.	Asa Zone.
Amos Andrews.	Ira Biggs.
T. W. Palmer.	F. Wolf.
James Hildreth.	John White.
Casper Brooks.	John Safford.
— Smith.	S. Olinger.

Early settlers, date not found—

Samuel Van Dalsen.	John Berry.
Abraham Van Dalsen.	Elisha Adkins.
Lyman Adkins.	Enoch Billings.
R. Blachley.	Eli Cain.
Charles De Wolf.	John E. Harris.
Morris Wisham.	Ezra Wilcox.
T. Wilkins.	Eason Wilcox.
W. Billings.	H. Blanchard.

There died in Hebron, March 5, 1900, an aged woman, 88 years of age, known as Grandma Folsom, whose husband, a pensioner of the War of 1812, died some years ago. The year of their settlement is not

known, but she was called about the last of the early settlers in a neighborhood east of Hebron called Yankee Town.

The names of early settlers of Lake County are taken from the history of that County by T. H. Ball, known as "Lake County, 1872," to distinguish it from "Lake County, 1884."

According to the records of Solon Robinson there was a settler by the name of Ross in the summer of 1834, on section 6, township 35, range 7, and in 1884 James Hill, of Creston, a man of sterling weight of character, stated at the semi-centennial celebration of Lake County, that in February of 1834 he was looking over what became Lake County, and here saw William Ross, whom he had known in Decatur County, Indiana, as a settler here then with his family. So that there is placed here as the name of the first farmer settler of Lake County, not counting those two or three stage-tavern keepers on the beach of Lake Michigan, and as the date of settlement, 1833, William Ross.

For the summer of 1834 there are the names of "William Crooks and Samuel Miller in company, Timber and Mill Seat." Also in the same summer, a man by the name of Winchell commenced a mill near the mouth of Turkey Creek, which he did not complete. William B. Crooks, mentioned above, was from Montgomery County, was located on the same section with William Ross, and became one of the first associate judges in Lake County, elected in 1837. The Claim Register is now the authority.

Settlers in 1834—

In October—Thomas Childers.

In November—Solon Robinson, Lumm A. Fowler and Robert Wilkinson, on Deep River.

In December—Jesse Pierce and David Pierce, on Deep River and Turkey Creek, says the Claim Register.

Settlers in 1835—

January—Lyman Wells and John Driscoll.

February—J. W. Holton, W. A. W. Holton, William Clark and family, from Jennings County.

March—Richard Fancher and Robert Wilkinson, the latter on West Creek from Attica "Spring," Elias Bryant, E. W. Bryant, Nancy Agnew, widow, and J. Wiggins.

May—Elias Myrick, William Myrick, Thomas Reid, S. P. Stringham, Vermillion, Ills., and Aaron Cox.

June—Peter Stainbrook.

November—David Hornor, Thomas Hornor, Jacob L. Brown, Thomas Wiles, Jesse Bond, and Milo Robinson.

December—John Wood, Henry Wells, William S. Thornburg, R. Dunham, R. Hamilton, and John G. Forbes.

Settlers in 1836—

William A. Purdy, New York.

Elisha Chapman, Michigan City.

S. Havilance, Canada.

William N. Sykes.

David Campbell.

W. Williams, La Porte.

Benjamin Joslen.

John Ball.

Richard Church, Michigan.

Darling Church, Michigan.

Leonard Cutler, Michigan.

Charles Cutler, Michigan.
B. Rhodes, La Porte.
J. Rhodes, La Porte.
Jacob Van Valkenburg, New York.
James S. Castle, Michigan City.
Hiram Nordyke, sen., Tippecanoe.
Charles H. Paine, Ohio.
Hiram Nordyke, Jr., Tippecanoe County.
Joseph C. Batton, Boone County.
James Knickerbocker, New York.
John T. Knickerbocker.
G. C. Woodbridge.
H. Bones.
John J. Van Valkenburg.
Horace Taylor.
S. D. Bryant.
Daniel E. Bryant.
Peter Barnard.
Jonathan Brown.
E. J. Robinson.
David Fowler.
Cyrus Danforth.
M. Pierce, State of New York.
Sprague Lee, Pennsylvania.
John A. Bothwell, Vermont.
Peleg S. Mason.
Adonijah Taylor, "Timber and Outlet."
The last according to Claim Register, "May 15th."
John Cole, New York.
F. A. Halbrook, New York.
Stephen Mix, New York.
Silas Clough, New York.
Rufus Norton, Canada.
Elijah Morton, Vermont.

Francis Barney.

Hiram Holmes.

Samuel Halsted, "Timber and Millseat."

"Nov. 29th transferred to James M. Whitney and Mark Burroughs for \$212."

Calvin Lilley, South Bend.

Samuel Hutchins, La Porte.

Jacob Nordyke, Tippecanoe.

Hiram S. Pelton, New York.

Ithamar Cobb.

J. P. Smith, New York,—settled July 5th.

Twelve—Dressler.

G. Zuver, Bartholomew County.

H. McGee.

Henry Farmer, Bartholomew County.

William S. Hunt, "blacksmith," Wayne County.

George Parkinson.

C. L. Greenman.

S. Wilson.

Charles Marvin.

James Farwell.

Mercy Perry, widow.

Abel Farwell.

Peter Selpry.

Carlos Farwell.

Jacob Mendenhall.

M. C. Farwell.

H. M. Beedle.

Henry Hornor.

B. Rich.

Ruth Barney, widow.

D. Y. Bond.

J. V. Johns.

S. L. Hodgman.

James Anderson.

John Kitchel.

E. W. Centre.

Henry A. Palmer.

Simeon Beedle.

Paul Palmer.

Isaac M. Beedle.

H. Edgarton.

William Wells.

D. Barney.

S. D. Wells.

William Hodson.

W. W. Centre.

George Earle.

T. M. Dustin.

Jackson Cady.

E. Dustin, Jr.

A. Hitchcock.

E. H. Hitchcock.
O. Hitchcock.
Russell Eddy.
C. Carpenter.
William Brown.
R. S. Witherel.
Charles Walton.
William Farmer.
Jonathan Gray.
Nathan D. Hall.

Settlers in 1837—

James Westbrook.
Samuel Sigler.
John Bothwell.
John Brown.
Henry Torrey.
S. Hodgman.
Joseph Batton.
John Kitchel.
N. Hayden.
H. R. Nichols.
N. Cochrane.
A. Baldwin.
Lewis Warriner.
Josiah Chase.
E. T. Fish.
Charles R. Ball.
John Fish.
Hervey Ball.
George Flint.
Lewis Manning.
Benjamin Farley.
Ephraim Cleveland.
D. R. Stewart.

Edward Greene.
S. T. Greene.
Elisha Greene.
W. Page.
R. Wilder.
John McLean.
Solomon Russell.
Daniel May.
A. Albee.

William Sherman.
H. Galespie.
J. H. Martin.
John Hack.
T. Sprague.
G. L. Zabriska.
J. Hutchinson.
John Hutchinson.
E. L. Palmer.
Lewis Swaney.
N. Reynolds.
Francis Swaney.
B. Demon.
O. V. Servis.
Joel Benton.
Thomas O'Brien.
John L. Ennis.
Orrin Smith.
Dennis Donovan.
D. B. Collings.
Patrick Donovan.
Z. Collings.
Thomas Donovan.

Timothy Rockwell.	Dudley Merrill.
Daniel Donovan.	William Vangorder.
Jesse Cross.	J. F. Follett.
Oliver Fuller.	G. W. Hammond.
E. Cross.	A. D. Foster.
Thomas Tindal.	J. Rhodes.
R. Cross.	Adam Sanford.
Orrin Dorwin.	Joseph Jackson.
A. L. Ball.	Charles Mathews.
H. Severns.	O. Higbee.
Daniel Bryant.	James Carpenter.
Hiram Barnes.	Z. Woodford.
Wid. Elizabeth Owens.	Jacob Ross.
Bartlett Woods.	William Hobson.
E. D. Owens.	Patrick Doyle.
Charles Woods.	P. Anson.
N. Pierce.	W. J. Richards.

In addition to the above from the Claim Register may be added, for December 10, 1836, the name of Benjamin D. Glazier, who then settled at Merrillville, or Wiggins' Point, where some of the family still reside. Also for 1837, the name of John Hack, the first German settler, who, with his large family, settled in the spring near the present town of St. John. Many of his descendants now reside in or near Crown Point. And the names of Peter Orte, Michael Adler, and M. Reder, German settlers, with their families in 1838; who commenced that large Catholic settlement in what is now St. John's Township; and also in 1838, H. Sasse, Senior, H. Von Hollen, and Lewis Herlitz, the first Lutheran Germans, who were followed by many others in what is now Hanover Township.

These German immigrants that in those early years came into the different localities of our eight counties from their fatherland, while they could scarcely then have heard of Mrs. Hemans of England, yet soon learned the meaning of what she wrote in her beautiful "Song of Emigration":

"We will rear new homes, under trees that glow
As if gems were the fruitage of every bough;
O'er our white walls we will train the vine,
And sit in its shadow at day's decline;
And watch our herds as they range at will
Through the green savannahs, all bright and still.

All, all our own shall the forests be,
As to the bound of the roe-buck free!
None shall say, 'Hither, no further pass!'
We will track each step through the wavy grass;
We will chase the elk in his speed and might,
And bring proud spoils to the hearth at night."

Perhaps their women may at first have felt, what
Mrs. Heman's puts for them into her song,

"But oh! the gray church tower,
And the sound of the Sabbath-bell,
And the sheltered garden-bower,
We have bid them all farewell!"

Whatever some of them may have felt they soon
here made new homes, apparently, with no regrets.
The women and girls soon had their beautiful flower
grounds, and all, Catholic and Lutheran alike, had
their chapels and churches and bells.

Instead of chasing the elk the boys found plenty
of deer and wolves to chase, and some of them made
good hunters in our woods.*

Many pioneer families came into Lake County in
the years of 1838 and 1839, but their names were not
found on the Claim Register as its entries did not ex-
tend over these years, and it would be quite imprac-
ticable to collect many of these names now.

In placing these few hundred names upon this
record as pioneers in North-Western Indiana the
names of men who came, for the most part, with their
women and children, into this then wild region, it is
recognized that there were also many others whose
names, by some means, have not reached these pages,
who were also true and worthy pioneers, doing well
their part in laying here the foundations for the pros-

*It was my lot to spend one night in August, 1838, at
the home of the large Hack family on "Prairie West," and
after "the shades of night" had fallen the family assembled
in their door-yard, around a cheerful blaze, and sang the
songs of their old homes. They were from one of those
Rhine provinces that passed from France to Germany, then
Prussia, and those old songs were new and strange to my
young ears.

T. H. B.

perity which we now enjoy; and their descendants who may not find their names on these few pages, will surely see the impossibility of any one's now securing every name of the settlers between 1830 and 1840, and also they may be sure that to the whole body of our pioneers, the known and the unknown, every rightminded person must feel that, as this century closes, we owe a large debt of grateful remembrance.

Many of the "squatter" families, indeed very many, passed in a few years to the regions further west (these were of a restless class, people who loved frontier life), and there as here helped to prepare the way for the railroad life, the modern life, of this our day. They followed the Indians and the deer toward the setting sun, they tried the large western prairies, and the mountain region, and at last the Pacific slope, but the railroads followed them along, and they rest now where the steam whistles blow but do not disturb their slumbers.

Note.—From evidence of different varieties it is concluded that fully one-half of the early settlers passed out of Lake County between 1840 and 1850.

TREATIES AND SURVEYS.

In 1818 a treaty with the Indians was made at St. Mary's in accordance with which a large tract of land in central Indiana was purchased and this included at its northern limit what became White County and a part of Jasper. By the terms of another treaty made in 1826 quite a portion of what became Pulaski County was purchased. Some surveys were made in these purchases in 1821 and 1828, but as early as 1821 only a small part of the southeast corner of Pulaski

was surveyed. As elsewhere stated the eastern part of the ten-mile strip was purchased in 1821 and the western part in 1826. This narrow strip was surveyed, the larger part in 1829, and the extreme eastern portion in 1830. The purchase made in 1832, at Tippecanoe, was surveyed in 1834. Men employed in this survey were, Burnside, Sibley, Clark, Smith, Biggs, Van Ness, Hanna, Goodnow, Morris, Kent.

LAND SALES.

Land sales were held at Crawfordsville for White County in 1829, 1830, and in October, 1832. The Ten-Mile purchase was also offered for sale in 1832. For Pulaski County, land sales were held at Winamac in September, 1838, in March, 1839, and in March, 1841. Indian Creek Township was one of the earliest settled parts of that county. It contained some twenty families in 1840.

The lands of Lake County came into market in 1839. The land office was at La Porte. It was afterwards removed to Winamac, where Lake County settlers at length went to enter land, finding a place to cross the Kankakee, passing through a wet region, and going by the White-post. It was considered a trying horseback trip.

There were land sales also at Logansport in October, 1831, according to General Packard's history, when the "Michigan Road Lands," on which the city of La Porte now stands, were sold and bought.

In 1832 there were land sales at La Fayette. Land in La Porte County was bought this year, and there being then no pre-emption law, speculators, those ruthless men, overbid the settlers. Says General

Packard: "This occurred in many instances where the settlers had expended all their means in making improvements. Much of the land thus situated and located in New Durham, went as high as five and six dollars per acre." The settlers were not prepared to pay but one dollar and a quarter per acre. Before the land sales of 1839 the citizens of Lake County had organized a Squatters' Union in which they bound themselves to stand by each other in purchasing their land at the government price. The second article of their constitution said, "That if Congress should neglect or refuse to pass a law, before the land on which we live is offered for sale, which shall secure to us our rights, we will hereafter adopt such measures as may be necessary effectually to secure each other in our just claims." And they did this. Speculators did not bid against five hundred united, determined, and probably armed men.

In Porter County lands came into market in 1835.

CHAPTER IV. 1830 to 1840.

What These Early Settlers Found—Pre-Historic and Historic Man.

By prehistoric in this chapter is not meant, before human history on the earth commenced; that early Asiatic, African, and European written history, so many thousand pages of which yet remain; but only before the real American written history finds its sure beginning, dating no further back than to the discovery of America by Christopher Columbus. Prehistoric in this chapter, will denote not only any traces of man up to 1492, but even up to the time of the first recorded explorations of French and English in this region. So that, to reach our prehistoric period, we will not need to go far back in time.

The early settlers first found the Indians, called sometimes aborigines, in actual possession here, with whom, for some ten years, more or less, they were brought in contact; but they soon found, as they came out from the "thick woods," as they looked over the rich and beautiful prairies, and then over the lowlands and marshes, and viewed the rivers,—here and there not to be mistaken, they found those singular traces of an unknown people, called sometimes the Moundbuilders. In various places they found these mounds, evidently formed at some time by human hands, one of these, ten feet in height and some forty feet in diameter, being on the Iroquois River, four

miles from the present town of Rensselaar, from which have been taken shells, bones, and ashes. Other mounds were found some three miles north of the present town of Morocco, in Newton County, from which have been taken human bones and stone implements; another in what became Washington Township, in the same county; and yet another on the south bank of the Iroquois near the State line. Other mounds were found north of the Kankakee River, from some of which human skeletons have been taken, over some of which the plowshare has passed year after year, still bringing to the surface human remains; and some are even yet undisturbed. Large trees were found growing on some of the mounds when the pioneers first saw them. They were in shape circular and smooth, and regularly formed, although the wolves had in some of them made their dens.*

The following is taken from Lake County, 1884, page 474: "On the farm now owned by J. P. Spalding, near the northwest corner of section 33, town-

*The writer of this remembers well his first visit to one of these mounds with his father and mother, each on horseback; that father a graduate of Middlebury College, Vermont, that mother educated in the best schools of Hartford, Connecticut, and then 34 years of age; and what an interest they both took in that work of prehistoric man, as they rode up the sloping sides and looked at its smooth, level top, and looked around the landscape from that elevation, himself admiring it with the eyes of a boy twelve years of age. That mother had seen many beautiful and grand New England and Southern and ocean sights, nature she dearly loved, but on such a mound she had never looked before. I am quite sure no spade or plow has yet touched that mound.

T. H. B.

ship 33, range 8 west, are the remains of two mounds. They have been plowed over for more than forty years, [written in 1884] but human skeletons, arrow heads and pottery are still unearthened, as the plow-share goes deeper year by year. The pottery found is of two varieties." These ancient mounds were perhaps used in later times for Indian burial places.

General Packard mentions two mounds near the early village of New Durham, in La Porte County, which were six feet in height.

Hubert S. Skinner, in the history of Porter County says that, "numerous earth mounds are found" there, and that "In the mounds have been found human bones, arrow heads, and fragments of pottery."

Says Mr. William Niles, of La Porte, in his historical sketch of the La Porte Natural History Association: "At one time Dr. Higday got up an excursion to the Indian mounds near the Kankakee River, and secured for the association a large number of flint and copper implements and pottery, and skulls and other bones. He read a paper before the Chicago Historical Society describing this excursion and its results. Some of the specimens were left with the Chicago society." The others, it seems to be implied, are still in La Porte. Very little copper as yet has been found in our excavations.

Returning now south of the Kankakee, in White County, there were found several mounds on what was named Little Mound Creek; these were only from three to five feet high, but at another location there were some about ten feet in height. Fifteen have been counted in White. A full account of the many mounds of this region does not enter into the plan of

this work; but elsewhere will be found yet more particulars in regard to human remains, or prehistoric man.

That the pioneers found not a few Indians here has been already stated, and they found that these true native Americans had villages, camping places, dancing floors and burial grounds, and gardens and corn fields. South of the Kankakee River, in what became known as Beaver Woods, and along the Iroquois and Tippecanoe rivers, they had many favorite resorts, and a large Indian village was found and a favorite dancing floor or ground a few miles north of where the whites started their village called Morocco. Corn fields were found in various places near that same locality.

In White County an Indian village was found half a mile north of the present Monticello, and another five miles up the river, where large corn fields were cultivated. For some reason these Indian fields seem to have been much larger on the south than on the north side of the Kankakee. For one thing, the soil was quite different. A noted Indian trail passed along the bank of the Tippecanoe, crossing it where is now Monticello, and leading from the Wabash River up to Lake Michigan.

In what is now Jasper County many corn fields were found, generally small patches of land, but sometimes in a single field would be an area of ten or fifteen acres. One large field was four miles and another seven miles west of the present county seat of Jasper County. There were groves of sugar maple trees along the Iroquois River, and the first settlers found the Indians along that river knowing how to make maple sugar.

North of the Kankakee, at what took the name of Wiggin's Point, now Merrillville, in Lake County, was found, in 1834, quite an Indian village. It was called McGwinn's Village. There was a large dancing floor or ground, and there were trails, which were well-trodden foot-paths, sixteen in number, leading from it in every direction. The dancing ground, called a floor, but not a floor of wood, is said to have been very smooth and well worn. A few rods distant was the village burial ground, the situation, where the prairie joined the woodland, well chosen. A few black-walnut trees were found growing there, of which very few are native in Lake County, as also there were two or three near an Indian burial place found on the northeastern shore of the Red Cedar Lake.

At this Wiggin's Point burial place the pioneers found in the center of the ground a pole some twenty feet in height on which was a white flag. This was the best known Indian cemetery in Lake County. As many as one hundred graves were there. Some desecrating hands, said to have been those of a physician from Michigan City, took out from the earth here an Indian form about which were a blanket, a deer skin, and a belt of wampum; and with the body were found a rifle and a kettle full of hickory nuts. The pioneers found that some of these Indians had not only the idea of a future life, but that they had received from their white teachers some idea of the resurrection of the body. Some of them preferred not to be placed in the earth, as they were to live again; and some of these early settlers found suspended in a tree, in a basket, with bells attached, the dead body of an Indian child. The writer of this obtained his best knowledge of an Indian cemetery and of Indians lamenting

their dead, from a sand mound in Porter County, near the shore of Lake Michigan, which will be mentioned in the account of City West.

Besides the Indians themselves, (and some of them were in contact with the settlers for ten full years) and their gardens, where the Indians cultivated some choice grapes as well as vegetables, and their trails, and camping grounds and dancing grounds, these pioneers found, and the later inhabitants have been finding through all these seventy years, flint and stone instruments of various kinds, evidently the work of human hands. A very little copper, not in its native bed or form, they also found. One of the large collections of arrow heads, spear heads, and various small instruments, whose manufacture is attributed to our Indians, is in possession of the present genial and intelligent trustee of St. John's Township, H. L. Keilman, all, some two hundred in number, having been found on the Keilman farm near Dyer, on section eighteen, township thirty-five, range nine west of the second principal meridian.

It seems desirable that some impression should be upon these pages of the real life of the Indians, as near as it can be obtained from such contact as they had with the whites, thus showing what the pioneers found Pottawatomie customs and ways to be. As, besides other camps and gardens, so-called, in the winter of 1835 and 1836 about six hundred had an encampment in the West Creek woodlands, where deer were abundant, and an encampment was there again the next winter; and on Red Oak Island, where they had a garden, about two hundred camped in the winter of 1837 and 1838, and about a hundred and fifty on Big White Oak Island, south of Orchard

Grove, and quite an encampment the same winter south of the present Lovell, and a camp of thirty Indian lodges the same or the preceding winter north of the Red Cedar Lake, and many wigwams along the Calumet, and a large Indian village at Indian Town, it is evident that the pioneers had some opportunities to learn something of their dispositions and ways.

The following is from "Lake County, 1872."

"On Red Oak Island they had two stores, kept by French traders, who had Indian wives. The names of these traders were Bertrand and Lavoire. At Big White Oak was one store, kept by Laslie, who was also French, with an Indian wife. Here a beautiful incident occurred on new year's morning, 1839. Charles Kenney and son had been in the marsh looking up some horses. They staid all night, December 31st, with Laslie. His Indian wife, neat and thoughtful, like any true woman, gave them clean blankets out of the store, treated them well, and would receive no pay. The morning dawned. The children of the encampment gathered, some thirty in number, and the oldest Indian, an aged, venerable man, gave to each of the children a silver half-dollar as a new year's present. As the children received the shining silver each one returned to the old Indian a kiss. It was their common custom, on such mornings, for the oldest Indian present to bestow upon the children the gifts.

A beautiful picture, surely, could be made by a painter of this island scene; the marsh lying round, the line of timber skirting the unseen river, the encampment, the two white strangers, the joyous children, and the venerable Pottawatomie who, long years before, had been active in the chase and resolute as a

warrior in his tribe, bestowing the half-dollars and bending gracefully down to receive the gentle kisses of the children. Such a picture on canvas, by an artist, would be of great value among our historic scenes."

The following incidents, from different sources, are all well attested:

Into what became Newton County in the time of the Black Hawk War, about five hundred Kickapoos came from Illinois and staid for some little time, but gave no trouble to the few whites then there unless whiskey was furnished them.

In the spring of 1837, a party of Indians came to the location of David Yeoman, on the Iroquois, to catch fish. These they took not by means of spears or hooks, but by throwing them out of the water with their paddles. They were economical. They would exchange the bass with the whites for bread and would themselves eat the dog-fish.

North of the Kankakee, near Indian Town, an enterprising settler proposed to plow some ground for planting. To this the head Indian objected, saying that the land was his, and the squaws wanted it to cultivate. This pioneer knew quite well that the squaws would not cultivate very much land, so he said to the Indian man, "I will plow up some land and the squaws may mark off all they want." As he could turn the ground over much faster than could the Indian women, this was quite satisfactory. They marked off the little patches which they wanted, and left a good field for the white man. This incident certainly shows a good side of the Indian character.

As mentioned elsewhere, an early school of La Porte County, the first in New Durham Township, was taught by Miss Rachel B. Carter, the school open-

ing January 1, 1833. As illustrating the taciturn disposition of the Indians, General Packard gives this incident: "When Miss Carter was teaching this school, Indians of various ages would come to the cabin, wrapped in their blankets, and stand for hours without uttering a word or making a motion, while they gazed curiously at the proceedings. Then they would glide away as noiselessly as they came." Other characteristics are illustrated by the following: "Upon one occasion an Indian woman, called Twin Squaw, informed Rachel that the Indians intended to kill all the whites, as soon as the corn was knee high. Rachel replied that the white people were well aware of the intention of the Indians, and taking up a handful of sand, said that soldiers were coming from the East as numerous as its grains, to destroy the Indians before the corn was ankle high. The next morning there were no Indians to be found in the vicinity, and it was several months before they returned.

"An Indian told Rachel, at one time, that they liked a few whites with them to trade with, to act as interpreters, and that they learned many useful things of them: but when they commenced coming they came like the pigeons."

A pioneer could appreciate that comparison, but "like the pigeons" is not expressive to those of this generation, to those who never saw a wild pigeon.

Although for a time, on account of Miss Carter's reply to Twin Squaw, the Indians disappeared, in 1836 "some five hundred of them camped in and about Westville."

The desecration of an Indian grave at the Wiggins' Point has been mentioned. "It is said that one day, after the robbing of the grave, two Indians armed

with rifles came into the field where Wiggins was at work alone. They went to the grave, and sat down their rifles, and talked. Wiggins was alarmed. He conjectured that avengers were near, and he was in their power. The Indians were evidently much displeased, but finally withdrew without offering any violence. Wiggins, who had claimed this part of the Indian village, allowed his breaking-plow to pass over the burial ground.

"This desecration did not pass unnoticed by the Red men. When, in 1840, General Brady, with eleven hundred Indians from Michigan, five hundred in one division and six hundred in the other, passed through this county, some of both divisions visited these graves, and some of the squaws groaned, it is said, and even wept, as they saw the fate of their ancient cemetery. Thoroughly have the American Indians learned the power and the progress of the Anglo-Saxon civilization, but not much have they experienced of its justice towards them and theirs."

Some other incidents of the life at Indian Town are instructive, taken, as was the last, from Lake County, 1872:

"Simeon Bryant selected that section for a farm, and leaving Pleasant Grove, built his cabin near the village. The Indians at first were not well pleased with the idea of a white neighbor; but the resolute squatter treated them kindly, would gather up land tortoisés and take to their wigwams, for which, when he threw them on the ground, the women and children would eagerly scramble; and after he had fenced around some of their cornfields he still allowed them to cultivate the land. This kindness and consideration secured their regard. A father and son from La

Porte County were stopping with this Bryant family while improving their claims, and the daughter and sister, a girl of eighteen or twenty, came out to assist in the housekeeping. She was necessarily brought in contact with the villagers. Among these were two young Indians about her own age, sons of a head man, who were quite inclined to annoy the white girl and play pranks. They would lurk around and watch her motions, and sometimes when she would enter the little outdoor meat-house, would fasten her in. One day, when she was coming out with a pail of buttermilk, one of these young Pottawatomies stood in the doorway, with his arms stretched across, and refused to allow her to pass out. Reasoning and entreaty were unavailing, and as a last resort she took up her pail and, to the great surprise of the impolite young savage, dashed the buttermilk all over him. He then beat a retreat, and left her mistress of the field, with only the loss of one bucket of milk. Some time afterward an errand took her among the wigwams, and at a time, it appeared, when the occupants had obtained some "fire-water." *Raising the curtain of their doorway, according to custom, to make an inquiry, the young savages sprang up and threatened her with their tomahawks. She stood and laughed at them, and at length, ashamed perhaps to injure the bold, defenceless girl, they let her pass on and accomplish her errand. This she succeeded in doing, and then returned in safety to the Bryant cabin, glad to have escaped the peril through which she had passed. The heroine of these

*The French traders, it is said, did not sell whisky to the Indians, but other traders and some few settlers did sell to them.

incidents soon afterward married, and became an inhabitant of Lake, having now several grown up daughters, and being the head of one of our well known and highly respected families.

"A still greater peril was experienced by Mrs. Saxton, who became a resident on the Wiggins place. Her husband was away, and she was at home with small children. The evening was cold and stormy, and, as it advanced, an Indian called at the door requesting shelter. At first his request was refused, but one of the children pleaded for him; the storm was pelting without, and he was admitted. He was a young man, and unfortunately had with him a bottle of whiskey. He wanted some corn bread. It was made, but did not suit him. He drank whiskey and was cross. An intoxicated man, whether white or red, is an unpleasant guest. A second trial in the bread line was made, using only meal, and salt, and water, which succeeded better. The Indian talked some, sat by the fire, drank. He went to the door and looked out. Something to this effect he muttered, "Pottawatomie lived all round here; white man drove them away. Ugh!" Then he went back to the fire. A little child was lying in the cradle, and he threatened its life. The alarmed mother and children could offer little effectual resistance. But the Indian delayed to strike the fatal blow. At length he slept. Then the startled mother poured out what was left in the bottle, and waited for the morning. The savage and drunken guest awoke, examined his bottle, and finding it empty, said, "Bad Shemokiman woman! Drink up all Indian's whiskey." He then went off to Miller's Mill, replenished his bottle and returned. Sometime in the day Dr. Palmer came along and succeeded in re-

lieving this family of their troublesome guest. The next night this Indian's father came; apologized as best he could; said that was bad Indian and should trouble them no more.

"One pleasant Red Cedar Lake incident may be here recorded. A party of nine, eight men and one squaw, called one morning at the residence of H. Ball, and desired breakfast. It was soon prepared for them, and all took places at the table and ate heartily. At first only the men took seats for eating, but their entertainer insisted that the squaw also should sit down with them. This caused among the Indians no little merriment. They had brought with them considerable many packages of fur, and as they passed out each one took two muskrat skins and laid them down as the pay for his breakfast. They then went into a little store on the place and traded out quite a quantity of fur. After some hours of trading they quietly departed.

"And still further illustrative of the mode of living and customs of these French-taught Pottawatomies, let us look again upon the village and white family at Indian Town.

"A head man resides there called a chief. J. W. Dinwiddie, his father, and sister, are staying with the Bryant family until their own claim is ready for occupancy. The chief keeps a cow, and so do the whites. The chief's wife would bring up their cow, and also would drive along sometimes the other cow, saying as she passed the settler's cabin, "Here, John, I have brought up Margaret's cow. This squaw had quite a fair complexion, was between thirty and forty years of age, in appearance; could talk some English, and was very kind to the whites. The chief's name was

called Shaw-no-quak. Here was also a dancing floor. The Indians would form in a line for a dance according to age, the oldest always first, the little children last. They danced in lines back and forth. The old chief, a young chief, and an old Indian sat together and furnished the music. This was made by skaking corn in a gourd. The song repeated over and over the name of their chief. After the dance they feasted on venison soup, with green corn, made in iron kettles served in wooden trenches with wooden ladles. The white neighbors present at one of these entertainments were invited to partake. This the women declined doing, which the chief did not like. And thus he expressed his displeasure: "No good Shemokiman! no good! no eat! no good Shemokiman woman!" Then he would pat S. Bryant and say, "Good Shemokiman! Good Shemokiman! Eat with Indian!"

The Indians here, on the gardens, and elsewhere, lived in lodges or wigwams. These were made of poles driven into the ground, the tops converging, and around the circle formed by the poles was wound a species of matting made of flags or rushes. This woven flag resembled a variety of green window shades seen in some of our stores and houses. The Indian men wore a calico shirt, leggins, moccasins, and a blanket. The squaws wore a broadcloth skirt and blanket. They "toted" or "packed" burdens. The Indians along the marsh kept a good many ponies. These they loaded heavily with furs and tent-matting when migrating. They also used canoes for migrating up and down the Kankakee. The village Indians lost some eighty ponies one winter for want of sufficient food. Those at Orchard Grove wintered

very well. During the winter the men were busy trapping. Three Indians caught, in one season, thirteen hundred raccoons. They sold the skins for one dollar and a quarter each, thus making on raccoon fur alone \$1,625. Other fur was very abundant and brought a high price in market. They trapped economically until they were about to leave forever the hunting-grounds of their forefathers. They then seemed to care little for the fur interests of those who had purchased their lands, and were destroying as well as trapping, when some of the settlers interfered.

One of these was H. Sanger. He, in company with some others, went on to the marsh to stay the destruction it was said was there going on. He went in advance of the others after reaching the trapping ground, and told the Indians they must cease to destroy the homes of the fur-bearers. He was himself a tall, and was then an athletic man, and said he, "Look yonder. Don't you see my men?"

They did see men coming, and were alarmed, and mentioned to others the threatening aspect of the "tall Shemokiman."

One Indian burial-place has been mentioned, the one at the McGwinn village. This contained about one hundred graves. Another has also been referred to at the head of Cedar Lake. This one has not been specially disturbed. At Big White Oak Island was a third. Here were a good many graves; and among them six or seven with crosses. There were probably others over which the plowshare has passed and no memorial of them remains. At Crown Point was a small garden, and on the height Indians seem to have camped, but no burial-place is known to have been found here. A few tomahawks have been found near the present town."

Few of the Indians remained after 1840, except around Winamac, where they lingered till 1844.

To us the Pottawatomies have left their known and unknown burial places, the names of some of the rivers, "and their own perishing memorials and remembrances as treasured up by those with whom they had intercourse." And few of those who saw them at their encampments, on their hardy ponies, in and around their wigwams, and received some of them into their houses, are living now.

It is only justice that the citizens of Northern Indiana, as was written in 1872, should treasure up and transmit to posterity, among their own records, some memories and incidents of the once powerful Pottawatomies.

Although coming in contact more or less with the Indians for ten years, the settlers here were fortunate, so far as any record has been found, in this respect, that no Indian life was taken by a white man. No murder of an Indian by a settler seems to have been committed, although a settler while hunting came near to taking life unintentionally. What kind of justice would have been administered here in case of the murder of an Indian is uncertain.

INDIAN TRAILS.

The early settlers found here some well marked or well trodden pathways, trodden apparently by human feet and pony feet, but not by buffalo feet, to which the name was given of "trails."

This word as often used by hunters and frontier men denotes the slight trace that is left where a wild animal or a man has passed but once, and to follow

such a trail is not an easy matter ; but it is also used to denote a narrow pathway that may have been trodden a hundred or a thousand times.

One well defined trail, called the Sac Trail, as made or as supposed to have been made by the Sacs in journeying from their eastern to their western limit, passed across La Porte, Porter, and Lake counties, and as the ground was well chosen it became the line, occasionally straightened in the years of advancing settlement, for the main eastern and western thoroughfare from Michigan to Joliet. To see in one continuous line, living and moving westward now, the Indians that during their occupancy had passed along it, and then, after them, the white covered wagons with ox teams and horse teams that from 1836 till even now have passed along that roadway, would be a sight, a procession, worth going many miles to see.

Southwest a short distance, that is, a few miles from Kouts, two trails coming together, crossed the Kankakee River, at a good river and marsh fording place. Traces of some kind of earthworks, covering four or five acres, were found there in 1836, to which the early settlers gave the name of fort, conjecturing that it was once a French fort, when Tassinong first was named. A well-marked trail came up from the Wabash River called the great "Allen trail," passing near the present town of Francesville, and crossing the Kankakee, probably, at this fording place where the trails just mentioned divided.

These seem to have been the larger trails. From the Sac trail one led off, passing near the Lake of the Red Cedars and across what was named Lake Prairie, to the Rapids of the Kankakee, where is now Mo-

mence. And passing by the old Baillytown one seems to have passed near or along Lake Michigan to Fort Dearborn, now Chicago. Traders, travellers, scouting parties, and frontier-men, passed along these trails before the wagons of the pioneers widened them out with their wheel tracks.

CHAPTER V.

PIONEER LIFE—1830 to 1850.

From the year 1830, or rather as early as 1829, when the first families of early settlers came in among Indian residents and Indian owners of the prairies and woodlands, down to the year 1840, when but few of the children of the wilds remained, the white families that here made homes were true pioneers. They led the true American pioneer life; but different in one respect from the pioneers of the Atlantic sea coast colonies, and of the South, and of some in the farther West in later times, inasmuch as the Indians, among whom for a time they were, remained on friendly terms, and there were no massacres of families no wakeful nights when on the still air came the Indian warwhoop, no need for building barricades or resorting to forts or stockades for the preservation of life. A few, it is true, there were, in the neighborhood that became Door Village, who had settled as early as 1832, who thought it needful to build a stockade fort when the Black Hawk War in Illinois broke out; but they soon found that there was no need. The days of peril from Indians east of the Mississippi, and of perilous excitements had passed, before much settlement was made in North-Western Indiana. Some settlement had been made in White County, and some alarmed families left their homes when the rumors

reached them in regard to Black Hawk. More settlement had been made in La Porte County before the Black Hawk War of 1832, and the opening events of that war did cause some alarm and some preparations for defense. In May, 1832, information was sent to Arba Heald, near Door Village, from whom in 1831 Sac Indians had stolen some horses, that hostilities had commenced at Hickory Creek, in Illinois, and immediately the inhabitants of that settlement, forty-two men among them, erected earthworks, dug a ditch, and planted palisades around an enclosure one hundred and twenty-five feet square, located half a mile east of Door Village. About three miles further east a block house was built. General Joseph Orr, a noted La Porte pioneer, who had received a commission as Brigadier General, from Governor Ray in 1827, reported the building of this fort to the Governor of Indiana and was by him appointed to raise a company of mounted rangers for service, if needed. This company he raised, reporting to the commandant at Fort Dearborn and also to General Winfield Scott. Mrs. Arba Heald refused to repair to the stockade, but obtaining two rifles, two axes, and two pitchforks, determined to barricade and defend her own home.

For the rangers, although they did some marching or scouting, there proved to be no need. The chief, Black Hawk, was soon captured and the alarm in La Porte County was over.

The alarm could not extend over those then unpurchased and unsurveyed lands where there were no white families, and in La Porte and White counties it caused but a little break in the quiet of pioneer life.

Although the pioner period has, to quite an extent, been placed between 1830 and 1840, during

which time some of the Indians remained and some settlers were still "squatters," yet the real pioneer life in its general aspects continued, and will thus in this chapter be viewed, until the first half of this Nineteenth Century was closing; and as the second half of the century opened, the era of railroads in Northern Indiana commenced, when modes of life rapidly changed. This gives us pioneer or frontier life till 1850, or for a period of twenty years.

What was this life? In all our land, from the Atlantic to the Pacific, there is not much to be found that is like it now. It is difficult to picture it vividly before the minds of the young people of the present.

Hon. Bartlett Woods, of Crown Point, in an article on "The Pioneer Settlers, Their Homes and Habits, Their Descendants and Influence," prepared for the Lake County Semi-Centennial of 1884, gave some fine pen-pictures of this variety of life.

In a history of Indiana forty pages of a large volume are devoted to a description of it. A more brief view will be given here.

There were then, it should be recalled to mind, no railroads leading out from the Eastern cities, from Boston, New York, and Philadelphia, across all the great Valley of the Mississippi. The mountain ranges and the dense forests were great barriers then between New England and New York and the new Indiana and Michigan Territory. Until 1837 Michigan was not a state. There was in that year a canal from Troy to Buffalo. Some steamboats were running on Lake Erie. There was a short horse-car railroad extending out from Toledo. Some vessels passed around, it was said "through the great lakes," and took freight to the young Chicago. Some

schooners sailed on Lake Michigan. Here, in this northwest corner of Indiana, there were in 1830 no roads, except Indian trails, no bridges, no mills, no stores, except, perhaps, some Indian trading posts, no workshops of any kind. All the necessities and conveniences of our modern civilization were then to be made. The families came in strong covered wagons drawn sometimes by horses, but often by oxen. The men brought a few tools, especially axes and iron wedges, hammers, saws, augurs, gimblets, frows, and some planes. The women brought their needles, scissors, thimbles, pins, thread, yarn, spinning wheels, and some looms. Especially the men and boys brought their guns and bullet-molds, for on the grand Indian hunting grounds they were entering, and that game, which had been so abundant for the Indians, was as free and as abundant now for them. Game laws then were not.

A few cooking utensils these pioneers brought with them, tea-kettles, bake-kettles, skillets, frying-pans; also a few plates, cups and saucers, knives, forks, and spoons. Their household furniture, tables, chairs, bedding, were very simple outfits for house-keeping in the wilderness.

After a location was chosen, and that must be near water, the erection of a log cabin was the first work, and then a little clearing was made, for these first settlers staid by the trees. They built few cabins in the open prairie. In the heavy timber of our eastern border and in the groves or woodlands skirting the prairies, along the Tippecanoe and Iroquois, and near to Lake Michigan, and on the borders of the little lakes, here and there cabins were erected, and what was called "squatter life" commenced. It was a wild,

a free, in some respects a rich, a delightful life. The land like the game was free to all. Each one could go when he wished, locate wherever he chose, take whatever he could find on the prairie or in the woods, provided he interfered with no Indian and with no other settler's rights. He could cut down trees, pasture his few cattle, cut grass for his winter's hay, plow and plant the soil anywhere, careful only not to infringe on any other who was a squatter like himself. Largely was each man a law unto himself. It was a large freedom. And well was it that these squatters brought with them the power of self-restraint acquired in their eastern homes. Well was it that they kept in practice where scarcely any law but that of God was over them, their moral and religious principles, and so formed virtuous and religious communities.

From at first a dozen and then a score of pioneer families, there gathered in several hundred families scattered over this region before 1840 came, and for ten years there were some Indians left among them.

But now we may, to some extent, look at their modes of life and see them in their homes, in their schools, at their social and religious gatherings, and at their work.

After the cabin was erected, the main tool used in its construction having been "the woodman's axe," the few articles of furniture from the wagons were placed within upon the "puncheon" floor, and the rude bedstead was constructed by boring, if one was fortunate enough to have that very needful frontier tool, an augur, a hole in one of the logs, about six feet from one corner, the proper height from the floor for a bedstead, and then another four or five feet from the corner, in a corresponding log that formed a right

angle with the other ; then cutting two saplings and making from them the one sideboard and the foot-board for the bedstead frame, and cutting a good solid post for the upright and boring two holes in that, and inserting in these the prepared ends of the two pieces of saplings, the other ends also prepared being placed in the holes in the walls, and see ! the frame of the bedstead was all up. It had one post. The head board was the log wall, one side was the log wall, one side and the foot-board were held up by the sapling post, and only a little more ingenuity was then needful to enable one to stretch a bed cord for the support of the hay-filled tick or mattress. But if the family had not been so thoughtful as to bring bed cords, which were in such general use in those days, then poles were cut and fastened to the side sapling and to the opposite log. This might require additional use of the augur, a tool next to the axe and saw in its usefulness. But the luxury of one of these primitive bedsteads, on one of which the writer of this slept on his first visit to Lake County, was not always enjoyed. What the pioneers called the "soft" or smooth side, the hewed side, of a puncheon answered quite well in those days for resting weary limbs.

The ample fire-place, the chimney made of clay and sticks, the sticks split out with that other needful frontier instrument, a frow, and laid up as children make cob-houses, the clay between the layers and on the inside spread over thick and well to keep the wood from taking fire,—this fire-place furnished a place for cooking, and the blazing logs with hickory bark furnished some light at night. But more light was often needed. The most primitive method of obtaining this was, to take an iron tablespoon, fill the bowl nearly

full with some of the fat from the fried meat, insert the handle of the spoon between the logs among "the chinks" of the wall, lay a piece of cotton cloth in the fat, and light the end, and thus light was obtained by means of which, when visitors were present, some families took supper. But others used candles, having brought the molds with them, by means of which with candle wicking they made first-class tallow candles. But a more rapid way of making candles, and affording a pretty sight in a winter evening, was the quite common way of dipping. Small wooden rods were easily made, and on these the wicks were placed cut the right length for a candle, having about six on each rod. The tallow, melted and quite hot, was in a large, deep vessel, and into this the women and girls dipped the wicks that were on the rods. At each dip the wick took on a coating of tallow and time was allowed for it to cool between the dips. When the melted tallow became too shallow to cover all the wick hot water was poured in to fill up the vessel, the melted tallow rising to the surface. Thus the process was continued till the full sized candle was formed. In this way, before the oil wells were dug or kerosene known our pioneer women made candles. And a good many dozen could thus be made in one evening. An American home needs fire by day and light at night, and with these were the pioneer homes provided. There was much sewing and knitting to be done in the long winter evenings. No machines to work with then. There were books to be read, and sometimes papers, for many of these families were far from being ignorant; and it seems remarkable now, looking back from our bright kerosene and electric lights, into those homes of sixty-five and sixty years

ago, how much was accomplished by what would now be called the dim light of those "tallow-dips." The writer of this, a pioneer child once, remembers well when giving in his youth, to a small but cultivated audience, one of his earliest public addresses, and being then closely confined to his manuscript, how on one side of him stood "Deacon Luce" and on the other "Deacon Cushing," each holding in his hand a candlestick with a tallow candle to shed light upon the written page. (It was a different kind of light that went forth that night from that written page.) A picture of that room, the young reader, the audience, and the candle bearers, would be amusing now. There was no humor about the reality then. Those two noble, Christian men have gone, and the pioneer days have gone; but to a few gray-haired men and women now, Ossian's words may be true, that the memory of days that have passed is like the music of Caryl, pleasant but mournful to the soul.

Home life is an important part of true life, and so we have looked into those early homes to see that warmth and light and industry and thrift were there. The light of love was surely there. The cards and spinning wheels and the scissors and needles in expert hands, are doing their proper work, and the boys have bullets to mold and whip lashes to braid and axe handles to make. There is employment for all.

It is now 1837; and wild as is all this region still, there are families scattered over it who are to build up civilized institutions and civil and religious life. The smoke that now goes up into the sky, curling above the tree tops on a clear, frosty morning, is no longer from Indian wigwams and hunting parties

alone, but from the cabins of white men, mainly, who with their women and children have come "to possess the land." Social life has commenced. With social life, the families becoming acquainted and neighborhoods forming, school life also begins. Some of the earliest schools were held in the homes; but log school houses were soon erected, having the stick and clay chimneys, large fire-places, and windows without glass. The public school system of Indiana was quite in its infancy then, but persons were appointed by the State to examine teachers. These examinations were private or might be so. There was no law to the contrary. One could be examined alone whenever or wherever he could find the examiner. Each examiner asked his own questions and these were not generally many or difficult. The examinations were short. One half hour was time enough. The public money paid to the teachers was correspondingly small in amount. Sometimes one dollar, sometimes two for each week, the teachers boarding in the different families free from expense. This feature of the teacher's life had its advantages and pleasures, and also its inconveniences. It insured an acquaintanceship between the teacher and the parents of the pupils, and was probably some help in the matter of school government. The inconveniences need not be named.*

*One young teacher had an experience of more than inconvenience. Perhaps it was her first school. The time came to board a few days with a certain family. She went home with the children to the house. The dog was cross, but the children kept him off. When bed-time came the woman of the house, a widow, the mother of the children, showed the teacher to a little room well enough furnished

There were in these earliest schools some well educated and accomplished teachers. There are no more thoroughly educated teachers now than were some of them. Yet many of them, probably, had not received much special training. Those thoroughly educated did not teach long. They were required in other lines of activity.

Connected with the early schools was a part of the social life of those pioneer years. The young people felt the need of society of some kind, and those of some intellectual and literary aspirations sought this in the spelling schools held evenings at their school houses, other exercises besides spelling being introduced. And then literary societies were formed, the exercises helping to educate the ambitious; the going to and from these gatherings, sometimes on horseback, sometimes in sleighs, giving to all the influences of social intercourse, leading to the forming of acquaintances and of friendships, some of them proving to be life-long.

In these early days there were two varieties of people among the comparatively few inhabitants, as

and not specially lacking in neatness; but before leaving she very unwisely said to the teacher that no one had slept in that room since her husband died there with the small-pox. It did not matter, so far as the imagination of that young girl was concerned, that months had passed since then, or that the room, which was somewhat probable, had been fumigated, washed, cleansed. She begged to be allowed to stay somewhere else, to lodge with the children, anywhere other than there. But no. There she must lodge. The door was closed upon her. That teacher said she prayed all night. Prayer kept reason on its throne. But it was a night of terror. She did not return to that house again. She has daughters now teachers in our schools. They have no such experiences.

nearly always in every community there will be, those of strong, abiding religious principles, and those caring more for pleasure and for the enjoyments of the present. Of this latter some, from the very first, so soon as social life may be said to have commenced, sought their social enjoyments in little dancing parties, whenever there were homes in which they could meet. For literary exercises and intellectual enjoyments they had not much relish.

The families of the other variety of settlers, who came from eastern homes of culture and of church life, whose children did not attend these little dancing parties, commenced religious meetings, organized Sunday schools, and gave opportunities to all for attending to the higher and grander interests of humanity. Thus among the earliest of the pioneers the foundations were laid for the schools, the literary life, the intelligence, and the church life of the present.

Those early religious gatherings were quite different from most of the staid church life of the present. An appointment was made for preaching at some dwelling house or school house, and at the time appointed a true pioneer community gathered. Some came on foot, some on horseback, some with ox teams, their styles of dress various, and if in the summer time not only the children but some of the men barefooted, their dogs coming with them, yet, all, the dogs excepted, giving an earnest attention to the services. There was no organ and no choir, but some one would lead in the singing, and, as books of the same kind were scarce, the hymns were often "lined," and a variety of voices would join in the singing. If there was not so much harmony or melody in the singing then as now, there was probably quite as

much real devotion. There were, too, among these pioneers some accomplished singers, and when a few of these met, as occasionally they did, there was rich music, harmony, melody, devotion.

The pioneer preachers, as a rule, were well instructed men, men who were not brought up in the "back-woods." And they were devoted to their duties and to the interests of the people. The names of some of them will be found in other chapters.

The singing schools were another interesting and characteristic feature of those early days. As social gatherings they were very enjoyable, and some of the teachers of vocal music in Porter and Lake counties, as Mr. Beach, of Beebe's Grove, and W. H. McNutt, of Yellow Head, and Professor Tyson, of Boston, were accomplished masters of their art.

Among the social gatherings were conspicuous also the Fourth of July celebrations, quite different from the observances of these days.

Let us look now, for a few moments, more minutely at the everyday life of these settlers. After erecting their cabins the first great work was, to make rails. They needed to become rail-splitters so as to build fences. It took no little work and hard work to open up a farm, even on the prairies, much more in the woodlands and in the heavy timber. It required more than ten thousand rails to put a good fence around a quarter of a section of land, one hundred and sixty acres. All the early fences were what is called the Virginia or worm fence, two lengths for each rod. The cost of splitting rails in 1840 was fifty cents for a hundred.

The first plowing, called "breaking," which was turning over the prairie sod, required a large plow

and a heavy team. Six or even eight yoke of oxen were used, and such a team was called in the language of the pioneers, a breaking team, and the large plow with its wooden mold-board and sharp coulter was a breaking plow, used only for "breaking up" prairie. The furrows were wide—eighteen or twenty inches—and the green sward of the prairie turned over smoothly and beautifully. When the time came for the second and third plowings of this fertile land, it was found that the soil would stick to the mold-boards of all their plows, which rendered the next turning over of the furrow difficult. The earth was crowded out from its place the width of the plow, but was not fairly turned over. The farmers longed for a plow that, in their language, would "scour."

The following reminiscence was given by a writer in a secular paper soon after the death of David Bradley, founder of the great agricultural manufacturing company located somewhat recently near Kankakee, Illinois. The writer says: "While visiting Jack Spitler's famous farm in Newton County, Indiana, he witnessed the trial of a Bradley plow. It was represented that the new fangled implement would scour, and the trial drew a crowd from miles around. Much to the delight of the farmers present the plow did the work as represented, and they imagined that the zenith of agricultural implement invention had been reached. "Up to this time," the writer adds, "no manufacturer had succeeded in making a plow that would scour in heavy black or clay soil." The year of this trial is not given, but it was not far, probably, from 1848. The farmers then had no idea of the improvements that would be made in agricultural implements in the coming fifty years. In those early

days, before 1850, the plowmen largely were obliged to stop every little while and clean off the earth sticking on the mold-board, either with the heel or, better, with a little paddle which they carried along with them. And when they began to hold plows that would throw all the black soil off and remain bright and clean it is no wonder they were delighted.

While this home work of fence building and breaking was going on, some of the men were busy building dams, and erecting saw mills and then grist mills. They imitated the already extinct beaver in making dams, but from them they had not learned skill, for many times these man-made dams would give way. But the mills were very useful, very needful. Each man took his grain to the mill, waiting sometimes many hours for his turn to come, and receiving at length, if he took wheat, flour and shorts and bran. Every farmer could then eat bread from grain of his own raising.

After provision was thus made for the first physical wants, carding mills also having been erected, blacksmith shops built and furnished with tools and iron, shoemakers and a few tailors commencing their work, stores having been opened for both dry goods and groceries, in a few years, for all this pioneer work took time, attention began to be given to the erection of frame houses, the burning of brick, and then the erection of church buildings. In Lake County brick kilns date from 1840, six years after the first few families built their stick chimneys.

The first church building in La Porte County commenced about 1836; in Porter about 1842; and in Lake in 1843.

A few words ought to be given to the earliest shel-

ters for domestic animals erected by the pioneers. The axe was the great tool before the saw mill could be built, and for the first stables posts were cut, set upright in the ground, poles were laid upon these, posts with natural crotches having been selected, and then cross poles or rails laid over all, and these were covered with green grass or hay. Grass was one thing which the pioneers had in abundance. For the sides, slanting poles or rails were set up and covered with hay. These stables were sufficiently warm, but they were dark, and so not good for the horses' eyes when the sun shone on the snow without. Before grain was raised to furnish straw the hogs provided their own beds by gathering leaves in their mouths and placing these in some sheltered nook.

From 1830 to 1835, except in La Porte County and to some extent in White County, not many families settled in among the Indians. But from 1835 to 1840 settlements, here and there, were made over all the region north of the Kankakee River, hundreds of families coming in and taking up claims before the land sale of 1839. Yet the population was not large when the census of 1840 was taken.

Steadily along, yet not rapidly, improvements took place from 1840 to 1845, many German families coming in and some of other nationalities, seeking homes on new, unbroken land, or buying the improvements of the true frontier families who were ready to penetrate into the wilds of the more distant West. Along in these years some private schools were commenced and several churches were built and frame houses were erected with brick chimneys. And then the closing portion of pioneer life, from 1845 to 1850 rapidly passed. The railroads were coming; and from frontier to railroad life the change was very great.

On the whole, notwithstanding some privations, this early life was pleasant. Such freedom from conventionalities, such hospitality, such equality, such freedom from the tyranny of fashion, from corruption in civil government, from millionaire influence, such an aspect everywhere of true American citizenship, such an abundance of wild game and of wild fruits free for all, although there was even then some wrong-doing, it is no wonder that some look almost regretfully back to those good old days.

Pleasant and some thrilling recollections of the wild animals of the early years belong to those who were pioneer children then. It took these wild animals, especially the quails and grouse and wolves and deer, so abundant in those days, some little time to learn that some new occupants were taking possession of their haunts, and when the wolves would come suddenly, in the day time, into a field of corn, and the deer would come suddenly upon a settler's cabin, while the children were delighted, these animals were certainly surprised.

It was for the children a thrilling experience of this rich life, when in the evening, returning home from some spelling school or literary society, they heard the sudden, quick, sharp barking of the wolves. While the pioneer children were not generally timid, two or three wolves could do enough howling to quicken the flow of their blood and hasten their foot-steps. Yet it was a sound which some of the New England born children loved well to hear.

The pioneers sometimes had large "drive" hunts. A good example of these was one in White County in 1840, in Big Creek Township. The boundaries of the hunting ground were, on the north, Monon Creek;

on the east, the Tippecanoe River; on the south, the Wabash; on the west, the county line. At eight o'clock in the morning the men and boys started along the outskirts of this large area, with no guns in their hands, as they were only to scare up the game and send the deer and the wolves, from grove and prairie, inward to the center. They were to meet at two o'clock at Reynold's Grove. There scaffolds had been erected, and on those were the sharp shooters with rifles and ammunition. As that afternoon hour approached, from each direction the startled deer and frightened wolves began to appear, and soon the sharp reports of the rifles reached the ears of the distant boys and men. On every side of those elevated stands the deer fell, and when the riders and footmen reached this central place they collected fifty deer as the result of that day's chase, and found many dead wolves stretched upon the ground. How many broke the ranks and escaped no one could accurately tell.

In some of these hunts, when not carefully conducted, most of the enclosed game would escape.*

The common mode of hunting deer was not what is called driving, but what hunters called "still hunting" or sometimes called "stalking." No noise was made, no dogs were used to track them up. But some-

*Deer will rush quickly by the excited hunter. I came near being run over, in my youth, by a large drove of startled deer, as I chanced to be, one day, in their run-way in the West Creek woods. There was no time to count their number, but had they been crowded together like buffalo they would have trampled the young hunter under their feet. It was a beautiful and a thrilling sight, as, one after another, they bounded by, almost within reach of one's very hands.

T. H. B.

times a man would mount a horse from the back of which he could shoot, and having on the neck of the horse a bell, would start up a herd of deer and follow them up with his horse and bell as best he could. The theory was, and a fact it proved to be, that the deer would in a few hours become so accustomed to the sound of the bell and the sight of the horse that the hunter could approach near enough to make a sure shot. Then he could strap the deer on his horse behind him and return to his home.

The time may come, in another generation or two, when no eye-witnesses are living, that the large numbers of deer which traditions will say were often seen together, will be counted only as hunter's tales, and not entitled to belief; but that those beautiful creatures that added so much life to the woodlands and the prairies were here in large numbers, is now beyond any question. There are some living who have seen them.

It is a well attested fact that when men were putting on the roof of what for many years was known as the "Rockwell House," in Crown Point, they saw coming out from Brown's Point, two miles northward, and passing across the open prairie to School Grove, one mile southeastward, a herd of deer, numbering, as well as they could count them, one hundred and eleven.

In 1843 and in 1844 as many as seventy deer, it is claimed, could be seen at one time on the prairies in Newton and Jasper counties; and Mr. David Nowels, one of the substantial citizens of Rensselaer, says that he has seen as many as seventy-five at one time. While not a noted hunter, as his father was, he has

killed as many as five deer in one day. He is authority also for the statement that, in those earlier years of pioneer life, good raccoon skins, black, would bring from two to three dollars each, and a good, large mink skin would sell for seven dollars, and a large otter skin would sometimes bring ten dollars. Muskrat skins were not in so great demand.*

The facts are well attested that others have seen, some of whom are yet living, from twenty to forty and fifty deer in a single herd or drove, either quietly feeding, or in that beautiful and rapid motion which has given to us the comparison, one "runs like a deer."

Some few noted hunters were among the pioneers, equal, probably, in their success, to Ossian's "hunters of the deer." One of these was V. Morgan, of Pulaski County, Jefferson Township. The number of deer that he killed is not exactly known, but it was estimated at four hundred. The last deer killed in that township, according to the traditions, were shot in the winter of 1880 and 1881. Of these there were only three or four.

There can be no exaggeration in asserting that some sixty and seventy years ago there were deer here not only by the hundreds but by the thousands; as there were the prairie chickens or pinnated grouse here thousands upon thousands, and wild ducks and wild geese and wild pigeons, surely by the millions.

*Conversation in a visit October 16, 1899.

CHAPTER VI.

COUNTY ORGANIZATIONS.

1. By an act of the Indiana Legislature, approved January 9, 1832, a certain area was to be from and after April 1, 1832, known as La Porte County. This area, according to the copy of the act examined, was thus described: "Beginning at the State line which divides the State of Indiana and Michigan Territory, and at the northwest corner of township number thirty-eight north, range number four west of the [second] principal meridian, thence running east with said State line to the center of range number one west of said meridian; thence south twenty-two miles; thence west, parallel with said State line, twenty-one miles; thence north to the place of beginning." The northwest corner of La Porte County, it thus appears, like that of the State, is in Lake Michigan, and it also appears that the Legislature formed into a county some land, a strip twelve miles in width which had not then been purchased from the Indians. Since that time an addition has been made to the southern part of the county and a small area has been added on the east, so that now the Kankakee River forms most of the southern and a part of the eastern boundary.

Commissioners of the new county were soon elected, Chapel W. Brown, Jesse Morgan, and Elijah H. Brown; also George Thomas was elected clerk, and Benjamin McCarty, sheriff. The commissioners

met May 28, 1832. They divided the county into three townships, and made of each a commissioner's district.

A Circuit Court, probably in 1832, commenced its jurisdiction and its sessions. The judges until 1851, when the new Constitution was adopted, were: Gustavus A. Evarts, Samuel C. Sample, John B. Niles, Ebenezer M. Chamberlain, and Robert Lowry.

In 1833 Benjamin McCarty was probate judge.

No record of the proceedings of the first court have been found for this work, but for some sixty-eight years civil and criminal cases have been disposed of, year by year, for the most part, it is to be hoped, not only according to law but equity.

The judges of the La Porte Circuit, after 1851 to 1880, were: Judges Stanfield, Dewitt, Osborn, Stanfield, and Noyes.

2. Next, as to its organization, in the order of time, was White County, organized by act of the Legislature July 19, 1834. On that day county commissioners already appointed met at the house of George A. Spencer, and formed four townships and three commissioners' districts. These townships were called Prairie, Big Creek, Jackson, and Union. Elections for justices of the peace, those necessary officers in civil government, were ordered to be held at the houses of William Woods, George A. Spencer, Daniel Dale, and M. Gray, in August, 1834.

On September 5, 1834, the county seat was located by three commissioners, and, evidently remembering Thomas Jefferson as the early American "sage," the place was named Monticello. The first term of the White County Circuit Court was held in October, 1834, at the house of George A. Spencer.

784752

Only the associate judges were "on the bench." The sheriff was Aaron Hicks; clerk, William Sill. No cases were tried. Business postponed till the April term in 1835. John R. Porter was then present as presiding judge. Seven indictments were returned. One was for retailing intoxicating drink to Indians; one for illegally marking hogs; and one for setting fire to a prairie.

In these years were three judges, two called associate or side judges, and these, having little to do, were not required to be lawyers or to have much knowledge of law. Their opinions as to justice and right were of value.

The county thus commencing its civil life was named after Colonel Isaac White, an Illinois soldier, who was killed in the noted battle of Tippecanoe. Its area is five hundred and four square miles. There were, at its first settlement, oak openings; some timber land; and, in the southwestern part, prairie. It contained some limestone rock, and some shale of what the geologists call the Devonian age, and "underlying lime rock of the upper Silurian." The fall of the Tippecanoe River is said to be about four feet to a mile, and the river furnishes much water power, as well as containing many fish.

3. The third of these counties to have a civil organization was Porter, over the area of which as well as of that which became Lake County, the county commissioners of La Porte County seem to have exercised some jurisdiction, having in March, 1835, divided it into three townships, Waverly and Morgan extending to the center of range six, and Ross including all that lay west of the line running through the center of range six. These commissioners also or-

dered an election at that same time to be held in these townships. In the returns of this election, for Ross Township, one Lake County name is found, William B. Crooks, receiving twenty-eight votes for justice of the peace. George Cline in Morgan Township for the same office received twenty-six votes, and in Waverly, Elijah Casteel, eleven. So that, in some sort, civil government commenced in 1835 in what became Porter and also Lake County. (In 1837 William B. Crooks was elected an associate judge for Lake County,)

By an act of the State Legislature it was enacted, that after February 1, 1836, a certain "tract of country" should "constitute the county of Porter," thus defined: "Commencing at the northwest corner of La Porte County, thence running south to the Kankakee River, thence west with the bed of said river to the center of range 7, thence north to the State line, thence east to the place of beginning." It is not said, north to Lake Michigan, but to the "State line."

At the same session it was enacted, in the same act, that "all that part of the country that lies north of the Kankakee River and west of the county of Porter within the State of Indiana, shall form and constitute a new county" to be called Lake.

As sheriff for Porter County Benjamin Saylor was appointed, and an election for county officers was held February 23, 1836, twenty-six votes were that day cast at the house of William Gossett, fifty-five at the house of Isaac Morgan, twenty-four at the house of Morris Wilson, thirty-five at the house of John Spurlock, and forty at the house of J. G. Jackson.

Elected as county commissioners were: John Safford, Benjamin N. Spencer, and Noah Fouts;

county clerk, George W. Turner; recorder, Cyrus Spurlock; associate judges, L. G. Jackson and James Blair.

The commissioners met April 12, 1836, and divided the county into ten townships. At that term they also ordered elections in each township for justices, and appointed three assessors, one John Adams, was for the attached territory, Ross Township or Lake County.

In June, 1836, the county seat of Porter County was located by three commissioners appointed by the State Legislature. They selected a place called Portersville at that time, where town lots had been laid off, but where no house had then been built. This paper town was on the "southwest quarter of section 24, township 35 north, range 6 west," owned by Benjamin McCarty. This proposed town was represented at that time by the Portersville Land Company, of which Benjamin McCarty, Enoch [S.] McCarty, John Walker, William Walker, James Laughlin, John Saylor, Abram A. Hall, and J. F. D. Lanier were members.

"How the land company had its origin is now a matter of conjecture." "Whether the other members of the company bought their shares from Benjamin McCarty, or whether they were a gift to them in order to secure their influence, is not known."* Benjamin McCarty, who had been probate judge in La Porte County, who was afterwards prominent in Lake County, was fortunate in securing land in the center of the county.

*Rev. Robert Beer in "Porter and Lake," 1882.

In October, 1836, was held the first Porter County court, presiding judge, Samuel C. Sample.* This court was held in the house of John Saylor, in the new county seat, where before the year, 1836, closed, there were, it is said, eight houses, some made of logs and some small frame buildings.

4. Next in the order of organization was the County of Lake, already named by the Legislature, and declared by an act of Legislature January 18, 1837, to be an independent county after February 15, 1837.

Lake County, therefore, commenced its independent, organic existence February 16, 1837. March 8, Henry Wells was commissioned as sheriff, and an election for county officers was held March 28. As illustrating the mail facilities of those days it is on record that "a special messenger, John Russell, was sent to Indianapolis to obtain the appointment of a sheriff and authority to hold an election. He made the trip on foot and outstripped the mail.*

Officers elected March 28, 1837:—

William Clark and William B. Crooks, associate judges; Amsi L. Ball, Stephen P. Stringham, Thomas Wiles, commissioners; W. A. W. Holton, recorder; Solon Robinson, clerk; John Russell, assessor.

The county had been divided into three townships, North, Center, and South, before its organization; justices of the peace were elected for each township; "In North Township, Peyton Russell; in Center, Horace Taylor, at Cedar Lake, Milo Robinson; and in the South, F. W. Bryant. At the August election,

*Solon Robinson was a juror.

*Lake County, 1872.

Luman A. Fowler was chosen for sheriff and Robert Wilkinson for probate judge.*

In October of this year the first county circuit court was held by Judge Sample and Associate Judge Clark. A log building, designed for a court house, and long afterward used for that and other purposes, was built in the summer of 1837 by Solon Robinson and his brother, Milo Robinson. In 1839 commissioners appointed, as was customary, by the Legislature, located the county seat at Liverpool, on Deep River, in the northwestern part of the county, on section 24, township 36, range 8, about three miles from the county line and four from Lake Michigan. Dr. Calvin Lilley, on the northeast bank of the Red Cedar Lake, and Solon Robinson, at his village, named at first Lake Court House, had both been applicants, along with George Earle, of Liverpool, for the location. There was so much dissatisfaction among the settlers at the idea of having their county seat in a corner of the county, that a new location was ordered.

In the meantime Dr. Lilley died, and his place came into the hands of Judge Benjamin McCarty, who had been successful in giving a county seat location to Porter County, and was now, with his large family, a resident in Lake. He laid off town lots, called his home town West Point, and was against Solon Robinson a competitor for the new location. But he was not now in the center of the new county, Solon Robinson was; and the commissioners, Jesse Tomlinson and Edward Moore, of Marion County, Henry Barclay, of Pulaski, Joshua Lindsey, of White, and Daniel Doale, of Carroll County, determined

*There were two pioneers named Robert Wilkinson.
T. H. B.

that this time the location should be in the center of the county. They therefore located the county seat at Lake Court House, which soon after took the name of Crown Point. This was in June, 1840. Solon Robinson and Judge William Clark were the proprietors of the new town, which was on section 8, township 34, range 8, as near as could well be to the "geographical center of the county." Area of Lake County, according to Solon Robinson, "five hundred and eight sections of land, about four hundred of which are dry tillable ground."*

5. Jasper. This county, but then including the present Newton and Benton counties, was organized in 1838. It contained then an area of thirteen hundred square miles, and the southern part, which in 1840 became Benton County, was said to include some of the best land in Indiana. Then the large sweep of the Grand Prairie came in at Parrish Grove, and in 1848 this was from "Sugar" to that grove almost a perfect wild of very fertile, unbroken prairie.*

In 1838, the Indians roamed over it "almost undisturbed in all directions," dotted only here and there, was this broad area, "by a solitary cabin."

In January, 1838, the county commissioners, appointed, met at Robert Alexander's in Parrish Grove. They ordered that the courts should afterwards be held at George W. Spitler's, if the voters consented, and for some time at Spitler's home the courts were

*Lake County Claim Register.

*I crossed this prairie region, staid over night in this grove in the fall of 1848, on the way from the Red Cedar Lake to Crawfordsville, and it was a memorable journey.

T. H. B.

held, till of Jasper County proper, Rensselaer became the county seat.

In March, 1839, two townships were marked out by the commissioners, one called Newton, the other Pinkamink, and an election for May 1, was ordered, to be held at the house of Joseph D. Yeoman, in Newton, and at the house of William Donahoe, in Pinkamink.

The first session of the Jasper circuit court was held at Spitler's, now in Newton County, Judge Isaac Naylor presiding; Joseph A. Wright, afterward Governor of Indiana, prosecuting attorney; George W. Spitler, clerk; associate judges, James T. Timmons and Matthew Terwilliger. Present as an attorney at this first term of court was Rufus A. Lockwood, afterward a noted lawyer who established the claim of John C. Fremont to his Mariposa estate receiving for his fee one hundred thousand dollars.

The first county commissioners were, Joseph Smith, Amos White, and Frederick Renoyer. This first court room in George W. Spitler's house is said to have been sixteen feet square, with the ordinary puncheon floor, on which at night the judges, lawyers, and jury all lodged. In February, 1839, was held the first session of the Jasper Probate Court. Record: "Adjourned—there being no business before the court." In April, 1840, a place at first called Newton, afterwards, Rensselaer, became the county seat.

The first marriage was in the Renoyer Settlement, the ceremony being performed by Squire Jones, of Mud Creek, whose home was thirty miles distant, and the license having been obtained at Williamsport, in Warren County, south of what became Benton County, fifty miles from the house of the Renoyers.

The first grist mill was erected in 1840, by James C. Van Rensselaer, which was considered, at that time, the best mill northwest of Logansport. Dr. John Clark is named as the first physician.

Jasper County, in 1840, comprising then the present counties of Newton, Benton, and Jasper, returned 138 polls, assessed at \$20,347. As late as 1850 the State Gazetteer said: "Jasper is the largest county in the State and contains about 975 square miles; but Beaver Lake, the Kankakee Marshes, and the Grand Prairie, occupy so large a portion of it that its settlement and improvement have hitherto proceeded slowly." In 1840 the population was 1,267; in 1850 about 3,000."

The principal early settlements were five: the settlement at the Rapids of the Iroquois; the Forks Settlement, at the union of the Iroquois and Pinkamink; the Blue Grass Settlement; the Carpenter Settlement, which became afterward, Remington; and the Saltillo and Davidsonville Settlement. The State road from Williamsport to Winamac went through Saltillo. This settlement was made about 1836. John Gillam and Joseph McJimsey early settlers.

The area of Jasper after Newton was set off was reduced to five hundred and fifty square miles. It was named after Sergeant Jasper, of Marion's Band in the time of the Revolution. What are called by some of the scientific students, ancient river beds, lie between the Kankakee and the Iroquois valleys. These are from three hundred to twelve hundred feet wide, with low ridges of white and yellow sand on each side. Burr oak, white oak, hickory, and other trees are a native growth. White Sulphur springs are near Rensselaer and there is also an artesian well of

sulphureted water. The land lies over a bed of limestone of what the geologists call the Upper Silurian age. From the surface outcrop lime is burned, and lower down good sand rock for building is obtained. Groves of sugar maple where the Indians made sugar were along the Iroquois River.

6. Pulaski. This county was organized by act of the Legislature, February 18, 1839. Governor Wallace appointed George P. Terry for sheriff. At the May election Peter Demoss, John A. Davis, and Jesse Coppick were chosen for commissioners, John Pearson for clerk, and John A. Davis for recorder.

This county was named in honor of Count Pulaski, one of the noble Polanders who aided the Americans in the War of the Revolution, who fell at the assault upon Savannah in 1779. Many are familiar with Longfellow's poem "Pulaski's Banner." Names in our land often come into singular companionship. The place selected for the county seat of Pulaski bears the name Winamac, the name of a Pottawatomie Indian chief, whose place of residence on the Tippecanoe River had been selected for a town by a company of men of whom the following names have been found: John Pearson, Wm. Polk, J. Jackson, John Brown and John B. Niles. Their offer the commissioners accepted and there located the county seat, May 6, 1839. It is said that the wife of chief Winamac was a white woman who had been made a captive in her girlhood.

The bones of Winamac, it is further said, now repose beneath the Methodist meeting house in the town which perpetuates his name.

The surface of this county is mainly quite level. Into the southwestern extends an arm of the Grand Prairie.

In the eastern part was originally timber, walnut ash, oak, and other valuable timber growth. Then, going westward, came oak openings. The prairie region, with many "fly meadows," was next. The small prairies were called, Dry, Northwestern, Fox Grape, Pearsons, and Olivers. Deer, other game and fur bearing animals were abundant. Markets were distant. Eastward was the Wabash & Erie Canal, after that was opened up for business and trade, which was the nearest grain and other produce market. The next was Michigan City or Chicago, ninety-two miles distant and rivers and marshes and sand and mud between, and not one "gravel road." Cattle raising, almost of necessity, became the great occupation. They could transport themselves to market. There was a mill in Carroll County and one at Logansport, in Cass County, to which the early settlers had access.

A record of the first court has not been found.

7. Starke County has an area of three hundred and six square miles. It was named after a general of the Revolution. It was organized by act of the Legislature taking it out from Marshall County. In April, 1850, county commissioners were elected. John W. P. Hopkins, George Esty, William Parker. They met at the house of Mrs. Rachel A. Tillman, on the south bank of Yellow River. Her house was used for county purposes for some years. The next county officers elected were: Sheriff, Jacob I. Wampler; Auditor, J. G. Black; Clerk, Stephen Jackson, Senior; Recorder, Jacob Bozarth; Treasurer, Jacob Tillman; County Agent, C. S. Tibbits.

May 19, 1851, was held the first term of the Starke Circuit Court. Held at Mrs. Tillman's. Judge E. M. Chamberlain; associates, Samuel Burk and George

Milroy. One indictment was found. That was for hog stealing and the defendant was acquitted. Hog stealing in those days was very different from horse stealing.

April 1, 1850, the county seat was located. There was then no town where the place was selected, but town lots were laid out in June and the place was called Knox.

Some of the first things in Starke County, according to the records found, were the following:

The first boy born, Tipton Lindsay, 1836. The first burial in the county was of Thomas Robb, who was frozen to death while out hunting and was buried in a canoe. The first church building was erected by the United Brethren in 1853; the second was built by the Methodists in Knox in 1856. The first ministers in the county were, "Elder Munson," Methodist; "Elder Ross, United Brethren; and Rev. James Peele, "Christian." The first physicians, 1851, Dr. Solomon Ward, Dr. Baldwin, Dr. Charles Humphreys. First lawyers, 1852, Judge Willoughby, M. McCormick.

The first paper, the Starke County Press, published May, 1861, Joseph A. Berry, editor. Democratic; succeeding editors, James H. Adair, Napoleon Rogers, William Burns, Boyles & Good, and Oliver Musselman. The name Press was changed to Ledger.

8. The last of our eight divisions to become an independent county was Newton. Area about four hundred and twenty-five square miles.

In December, 1857, a petition was presented to the Jasper County Board of Commissioners that the area in ranges 8, 9, and 10, from township 26, to the Kankakee River, might become a new county. The petition was granted, and Thomas R. Barker was ap-

pointed by the Jasper board as a sheriff, empowered to administer the oath of office to the new county officers April 21, 1860. In December, 1859, a place called Kent had been selected for the new county seat, a place afterward called Kentland, and at this time containing only two buildings. Here the elected officers met to take the oath of office. They were: William Russell, Michael Coffelt, Thomas R. Barker, commissioners; Zachariah Spitler, clerk; Alexander Sharp, auditor; Samuel McCullough, treasurer; Elijah J. Shriver, sheriff; A. W. Shideler, surveyor. In 1860 a court house was built costing eighteen hundred dollars. The first term of court was held August 27, 1860. Charles H. Test, judge; John L. Miller, prosecuting attorney.

It thus appears that not until 1860 were all the eight counties of North-Western Indiana independent and separate as counties, each with its own civil jurisdiction.

The years of organization and commencement of courts, lawyers, judges, juries, and civil cases, were: 1832, 1834, 1836, 1837, 1838, 1839, 1850, and 1860.

The years of settlement commenced: La Porte, 1829; White, 1829; Pulaski, 1830; Newton, 1832; Porter, 1833; Lake, 1834; Jasper, 1834; Starke, 1835.

CHAPTER VII.

OUR LAKES AND STREAMS.

The counties of Lake and Porter, if extending northward to the boundary line of Indiana, have in their limits a good many square miles of the area of Lake Michigan. And when the pioneers came that water was very clear and pure. No sewers from cities, no streams of filth, no decaying garbage, had gone into its waters. But besides quite a share in that great lake, there were in 1830 many small, beautiful lakes, with clear, pure water, the homes in summer, or in the spring and autumn time, of wild fowl, and a continuous home for muskrats, for mink, and some of them for otter. In La Porte County the number of small lakes has been given from fifty up to one hundred, but many of these, probably, were properly marshes with some open, or clear water in the center.

In a marsh proper, a prairie marsh, grass grows, sometimes rushes, sometimes even pond lilies; but the larger marshes in early times usually had in the center open water where there was no grass, and in this open water one pair or more of wild ducks might generally be found in the springtime.

The more noted and the larger lakes of La Porte County are: Hudson, Pine, Clear, Stone, Fish, and Mud lakes. Fish Lake, in Lincoln Township, has three divisions, Upper Mud, Upper Fish, and Lower Mud. Mud Lake proper is an expansion of the Kan-

kakee River, as also is English Lake, which is between La Porte and Starke counties.

The streams of La Porte are mostly small, the Little Kankakee, Mill Creek, these entering the Kankakee; Trail Creek, Spring Creek, and many small ones in Cool Spring, Springfield, and Galena townships, flowing northward to Lake Michigan.

In describing Lincoln Township General Packard says: "Fish Lake, near the center of Lincoln, is of very peculiar shape. It is divided into four parts connected by narrow passages or straits, each of which have received distinctive names. The extreme upper part is called Upper Mud Lake, and is nearly circular in form with the outlet towards the northwest into Upper Fish Lake. This part is much larger, and curves so as almost to double back upon itself and has its outlet towards the southwest into Fish Lake which is almost one mile in length, and is connected by a narrow passage with Lower Mud Lake. The outlet of the entire body is into the Little Kankakee. Upper Mud Lake is on the south side of section sixteen; Upper Fish Lake is in sections sixteen and seventeen; Fish Lake is mostly in section twenty; Lower Mud Lake is in section twenty and twenty-nine. There are several other smaller lakes in Lincoln, isolated and having no outlet."

In Porter County are some sixteen small lakes, the more noted ones being Flint Lake, Clear Lake, Mud Lake, Lake Eliza, Long Lake, Quinn Lake, Bull's Eye Lake, and Sager's Lake. The streams are: The Calumet coming from La Porte County and flowing across into Lake, Fort Creek, Fish Creek, Coffee Creek, and Salt Creek, flowing northward; Wolf

Creek, Sandy Hook Creek, and Crooked Creek, flowing into the Kankakee.

In Lake County are not many lakes. Berry Lake, Lake George, and part of Wolf Lake, are in the northwest; part of Long Lake is in the northeast; the Red Cedar Lake, the most noted one and the most beautiful one, six miles southwest from Crown Point; Fancher Lake, Lake Seven, and Lemon Lake, are the other lakes of this county. "Cedar Lake" is the name commonly given to the lake named above, called in this work Red Cedar Lake, to distinguish it from a lake in Starke County called Cedar Lake. But to avoid the confusion of similar names the Starke County lake has of late been called Bass Lake. Both these lakes are pleasure resorts. On the Lake County Cedar Lake, also called "The Lake of the Red Cedars," is Monon Park, which may need some further mention. The streams of Lake County are: The noted Calumet, Deep River, Turkey Creek, and Deer Creek, whose waters reach Lake Michigan; and Eagle Creek, Cedar Creek, and West Creek, Stoney Creek, Spring Run, and Willow Brook, also a little stream fed by springs, Plum Brook, the waters of which reach the Kankakee River, and so pass on to the Mississippi.

Passing across the Kankakee the principal lakes of Newton County are or were: Beaver Lake, Little Lake, and Mud Lake.

Beaver Lake covered nearly one township, numbered 30 in range 9. It was found to be shallow and was drained several years ago by a deep ditch some six miles in length taking the water into the Kankakee River. Twelve feet was, in places, the depth of the lake. The boys and men obtained quantities of

fish when it was drained. The great ditches on each side of the Kankakee River have changed very much the natural water beds and courses.

One of the streams is Beaver Creek. Not far away is the belt of woodland known as Beaver Woods. These names indicate the existence here once of beaver, and here was quite a favorite Indian resort. Jasper County has few if any real lakes. It has one considerable stream called Carpenter's Creek, also Curtis Creek. The Iroquois, with its tributary, the Pinkamink, is its river, and this flows across Newton County into Illinois. It now runs into the Kankakee; but according to the earlier geographies the Kankakee discharged its waters into the Iroquois.

Pulaski County seems not to be a region of lakes, but it has for its large streams the beautiful Tippecanoe River and the large Monon Creek.

White County also has few or no proper lakes, but its streams are many. Besides the Tippecanoe, there are the Big Monon, the Little Monon, Moot's Creek, Pike Creek, Honey Creek, Big Creek, and Little Mound Creek.

Starke County has one quite noted lake formerly called Cedar Lake; for the last few years it is called Bass Lake. It is in length, lying nearly northeast and southwest, about two and a half miles and about one mile and a half across its southwestern expanse. Its shape is quite different from the Red Cedar Lake of Lake County, although like that lake it has abounded in fish and is something of a pleasure resort.

The other lakes of Starke County are: Koontz Lake, in the northeast, about three-quarters of a mile in length, Lake Rothermel and Hartz Lake in the southwest corner of the county, one on section 35,

one on 36, and Round Lake three miles northwest of Bass or Cedar Lake.

The streams of Starke are now for the most part turned into ditches. Their beauty of course is spoiled.

So far as beauty is concerned, these large and small ditches which have cut up the entire Indiana part of the Kankakee Valley region, have spoiled what was once, in its natural water ways, attractive and picturesque. Although not like mountain streams and rivulets, the water in our streams was usually clear, their natural courses were winding, giving the curved lines of beauty, and the green herbage that fringed them was abundant. Now, nearly all is changed by the spade and the dredging machine of man's invention. The water in springtime runs off in straight lines, man's object being to get it from the land into the river and ocean as quickly as possible. He wants the use of all the land surface. And so thousands and thousands of acres where once the wild fowls had their resorts and where muskrats and mink and otter had their homes, are now pasture land and oat fields, and corn fields, and the ditches mar the landscape's beauty.

CHAPTER VIII.

THE LAKE MICHIGAN WATERSHED LINE.

As we leave the lakes and streams, the natural and artificial water courses, it may be a matter of interest to some, in another generation, to have the dividing line between Lake Michigan waters and Mississippi River waters traced with some degree of definiteness, for the drying up of water courses and the draining by means of ditches have already almost consigned to oblivion the names and the winding beds of some of the small streams that were well known to the Illinois and Indiana pioneers. This line will not be given as though taken from a surveyor's field notes, yet it will be sufficiently accurate for the purpose for which it is here inserted.

The substance of it may be found in a published volume of the papers read before the Indiana Academy of Science, but this is not taken from that volume.

This line, commencing at the head waters of the Des Plaines River in Wisconsin, a few miles from the shore of Lake Michigan, passes southward, winding slightly, passing within eight miles of Lake Michigan, and then, just west of Chicago, passes by the south arm of the peculiar Chicago River, and going still southward passes west of Blue Island eight miles west of the Indiana State line. It then passes southwest around the head waters of Rock Creek, and

then southeastward around Thorn Creek, which is its most southern point in Illinois and is near Eagle Lake, two miles west of the Indiana line and directly west of the Lake County village of Brunswick and twenty-three miles south of the State line monument on the shore of Lake Michigan. The line now passes northward and enters Lake County in section 36, township 35, range 10, near the head waters of West Creek. It then bears southeastward to a high ridge one-fourth of a mile north of Red Cedar Lake, and passes along a low, curving ridge, on which was once a wagon road, and which is the most beautiful and well defined portion of the line in Lake County. It passes now three miles over timber table-land, winding slightly, three miles eastward and nearly two miles south of the center of Crown Point, it passes across section 17, then 16, township 34, range 8, and then south on the east side of the old Stoney Creek. It then passes east across sections 35 and 36 and into section 31, where is now LeRoy. It here turns northward, having reached its extreme southern limit in Indiana, now not quite eighteen miles from Lake Michigan. Winding here around the head of the south branch of Deep River, passing between that and Eagle Creek, bearing eastward, south of Deer Creek, and northward, it leaves Lake County almost due east of the center of Crown Point, distant seven and a half miles and nearly a mile and a half south of its point of entrance into the county. It soon passes north of a little lake from which flows Eagle Creek. It now passes eastward and then a little south, winding around Salt Creek, three miles and a half south of Valparaiso between ranges 5 and 6, having crossed

section 12 in range 5. It passes, now, about due north just east of Valparaiso to Flint Lake, three miles north of the center of that city and the source of its water supply, and winding around the north of Flint Lake it passes on in a northwest direction to Westville, and then passing northeastward to a ridge two miles north of La Porte and eleven miles from Lake Michigan, which ridge is said to be, according to some barometer, two hundred and seventy feet above Lake Michigan. Passing north of the lakes around the city of La Porte, and north of the head waters of the Little Kankakee, and near the line of the railroad track, near by the village of Rolling Prairie, passing eastward but a few miles from the north boundary of Indiana, it comes into Portage Township, St. Joseph County, where on the portage between the Kankakee and St. Joseph rivers this notice of it will end.

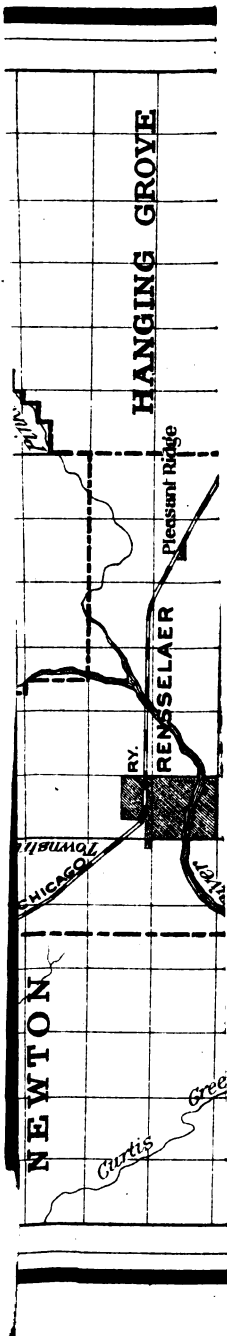
Here seems to be a suitable place to notice those "lake ridges" which cross La Porte, Porter, and Lake counties, "which are nearly parallel to the present lake shore." According to Professor Cox they mark the ancient shore lines from which, time after time, the lake has receded. Five of these continuous sand ridges Professor Cox has counted. The last one inward is that ridge along which now runs the watershed line, the highest ridge of land in La Porte County. The theory of formation of these ridges is this: That the sand which the dashing lake waves cast upon the beach, sparkling in their apparent playfulness sometimes as they dance along, and then breaking in their fury far up on the beach when the fierce north wind sends them rolling in, in their flight, this sand soon becomes dry. "Then the wind takes it and drives it like drifting snow to the first

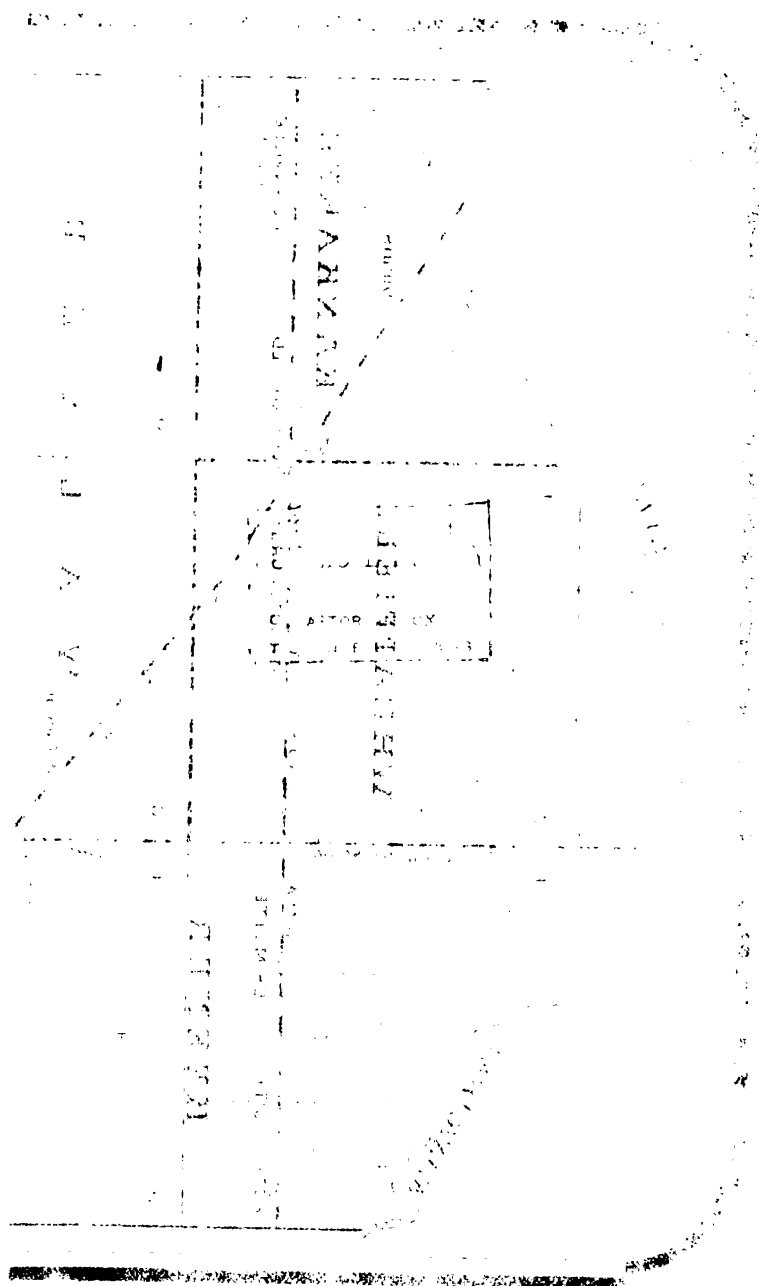
barrier of trees and bushes, when it is checked, and begins to accumulate, forming a ridge. The vegetation, well rooted, reproduces itself, growing to the top as the sand rises, and finally a range of hills is the result of the combined action of wave and wind on the moving particles of sand."

In this way, most probably, was that quite large ridge of sand formed at the northeast of the Red Cedar Lake in Lake County, by the influence of the strong southwest winds that so often prevail, and not, as some have imagined, by the melting there of some great iceberg.

All the sand ridges in Lake County seem to be due to the action of water, or of wind and water combined. Most of them lie north, but some are south of the watershed.

Professor Cox found no evidences that the lakes around La Porte were ever a part of our Lake Michigan; but that its southern limit there was the high ridge distant now eleven miles.





CHAPTER IX.

TOWNSHIPS AND STATISTICS.

The maps in this book will give the names and show the locations of the townships in some of the counties; but they may fittingly all be named here.

Of La Porte County they are: Commencing at the northeast, Hudson, Galena, Springfield, Michigan, Cool Spring, Center, Kankakee, Wills, Lincoln, Pleasant, Scipio, New Durham, Clinton, Noble, Union, Johnson, Hanna, Cass, and Dewey—19.

Of Porter County: Pine, Westchester, Portage, Liberty, and Jackson; Washington, Center, and Union; Porter and Morgan; Pleasant and Boone—12.

Of Lake they are: Hobart, Calumet, North; St. Johns, Ross; Winfield, Center, Hanover; West Creek, Cedar Creek, and Eagle Creek—11.

Of Newton: Lincoln, Lake, McClellan, Colfax; Jackson, Beaver; Washington, Iroquois; Grant and Jefferson—10.

Of Jasper: Kankakee, Wheatfield, Keener, Union, Walker, Gillam; Barkley, Newton, Marion, Hanging Grove; Milroy, Jordan, Carpenter—13.

Of White: Cass, Liberty, Monon; Princeton, Honey Creek; Union, Jackson; West Point, Big Creek, Prairie, and Round Grove—11.

Of Pulaski: Tippecanoe, Franklin, Rich Grove, Cass; White Post, Jefferson, Monroe, Harrison; Van Buren, Indian Creek, Beaver, and Salem—12.

Of Starke the townships are: Oregon, Davis; Jackson, Center, Washington; North Bend, California; Wayne and Rail Road—9. In all 97 townships.

Having looked at some of the physical features of this region, having looked over the names of some of the early settlers, having reviewed some characteristics of pioneer life, and having seen the beginnings of organic civil life, before entering upon the records and changes in the last half of this century, the following table, which will show the growth of twenty years of pioneer life on the north side and south side of the Kankakee River, is worthy of attention.

Population, Farms, and Families in 1850—

Counties.	Pop.	Farms.	Families.
Lake	3,991	423	715
Porter	5,234	467	885
La Porte	12,145	1,116	2,150
Starke	557	53	101
Pulaski	2,595	286	454
White	4,761	458	825
Jasper (then including New- ton)	3,540	343	592
Total	32,823	3,146	5,722

At this time there were in these counties, included in the population as given above, of free blacks, in Lake 1, in Porter 5, in La Porte 78, in Starke 0, in Pulaski 0, in White 9, in Jasper, including Newton 1.

It seems families were larger then than now, there being between five and six members in each family. We now average about four in a family.

Our towns at this date were all small. In 1850, the largest one, Michigan City, had a population of 999, ranking next in the State to Columbus, which

then had as its population 1,008. At that time New Albany, the largest city in the State, had of inhabitants 8,181, and Indianapolis, ranking second, 8,091. There were then in Indiana twenty-three other towns, counting Columbus, with a population above one thousand, but only nine others having over two thousand. The railroads had not cut up North-Western Indiana when the census of 1850 was taken. Indiana then had ninety-one counties.

CHAPTER X.

MODERN OR RAILROAD LIFE—1850 to 1900.

With the opening of the last half of the Nineteenth Century there came from the eastward railroad builders, pushing their roads onward to the young city of Chicago; and before these roads could reach that city they must cross the counties of La Porte, Porter, and Lake. When the children and the deer and the water fowls heard the whistle of the engines that drew the freight trains, pioneer life came to an end.

A short review of that variety of life has, in a former chapter, been given; and in this, by means of contrast and of historic records, an attempt will be made to give some true impression of the railroad life or modern life of the last fifty years.

So soon as these earliest roads, the Michigan Central and Michigan Southern, passed through, Michigan City and Chicago, where the schooners could take away grain, were no longer the only markets, for La Porte, and Old Porter or Chesterton, and Lake Station, and Dyer, were railroad stations where goods could be landed and from which grain could be shipped.

Miss Florence Pratt, in a paper on the Presbyterian history, in "Lake County 1884," assigning a reason why the church building, commenced in 1845, was not completed till 1847, says: "But money was very scarce, the country wild with very few roads

or horses. Lumber was hard to get, and must be brought on ox-carts from Chicago or Porter County." And so for twelve years the people of Crown Point held their religious meetings in their homes and in their log court house; yet, before they heard the first railroad whistle, they did "arise and build" two frame meeting houses. But now, when the railroad stations became shipping points, lumber was brought in and the true era of frame buildings, for dwellings and for churches, commenced. The log cabins, comfortable as they had been made, became out-houses, stables and cribs and granaries, and the family homes were clean, new, sightly, frame dwellings with ceiled or plastered walls, with good brick chimneys an outside that could be painted and inside walls that were not daubed with clay. Carpets soon were on some of the floors, large mirrors leaned out from the white walls, furniture such as the log cabins had not sufficient room to contain now graced the more spacious apartments, instruments of music began to be seen and heard in many a home, and comforts and even luxuries found their way wherever the freight cars could unload goods and take on grain and hay, and cattle and sheep and hogs, and butter and eggs and poultry. Soon there was much to be sent off, and much, for all the farming community, was brought back in return. Changes in modes of living, in dress, in furniture, and then in farming implements, were not, of course, instantaneous, but they came very rapidly along. Instead of beating out the wheat and oats with flails, or treading it out on smooth ground floors with oxen or horses according to the old Oriental method, as was needful to be done at first, threshing machines came to the farms, even before the

railroads were built. And then, instead of cleaning out the chaff by means of the wind, fanning mills came into use, and one was needed on every farm; and next the separator machine came, and so one improvement followed another as the harvest times came round. For a few years in each July many would go from distant neighborhoods to the large grain fields on Door Prairie, a good cradler receiving sometimes two dollars for a day's work, and one who could rake and bind and keep up with the cradler receiving the same. From three to four acres a day was a good day's work. But the mowers came, the reapers came, unloaded from the cars they were taken out to the farms, and men no longer swung the cradles hour after hour and day after day. And, at length, the last triumph of human skill in this line seemed to be reached when the great harvesting machines came, the self-binders, cutting the grain, raking it into bundles, binding those bundles, all done by a machine drawn by horses, driven by one man.

In the earliest years of settlement, and through all the pioneer period, oxen were quite generally used as draft animals. They were on almost every farm; they drew the plows, the wagons, the harrows, the sleds. They were on the roads drawing the heavy loads to the market towns. They were strong, patient, hardy, quite safe, not taking fright and running away, could live on rough food with not much shelter; but generally they were slow. A few could walk, and draw a plow, along with ordinary horses, but only a few. On the road an ox team did well to make three miles an hour. A more true average would probably be two and a half miles per hour. It took but a few moments to yoke them. The yoke was put on the neck of

the ox on the right, called the "off ox," first, the bow put in its place and keyed; then the other end of the yoke was held up, and it was instructive to see how the other ox, when well trained, would walk up and put his neck under the yoke, in the proper place for the bow to come up under his throat to the yoke, and there to be fastened with a wooden, possibly with an iron, key. When well treated, they were gentle, patient, faithful animals, as for many generations, along a line of thousands of years, their predecessors had given their strength and endurance, in many lands, to the service of man.

But now, as here the modern railroad era opened, and changes in modes of agriculture and living took place, horses for farm work and road work began largely to take the place of oxen. Mowers and then reapers came to the farms as early as 1855 and then onward, and for these and all the modern improvements that followed horses were found to be more serviceable. So in some neighborhoods in Lake County, the yoke was removed from the necks of the oxen as early as 1855; in other neighborhoods not until 1862 and 1863, when large quantities of beef began to be wanted in the country; and when the year 1870 was reached oxen as working animals had almost disappeared north of the Kankakee River. One farmer sold his last yoke for \$150. In Jasper and Newton and Starke, as newer counties and not feeling so soon the influence of the railroads, the use of oxen continued into later years.

There are many children and young people now who never saw a yoke of oxen; many young farmers who would not know how to yoke them, to unyoke them, or to drive them; to whom the ox-chains, and

the tongue bolts, and the ox-whips for directing the movements of three or four yoke of oxen in one team, would be quite strange farm furniture. To them, many allusions to oxen in sacred and classic story have little significance and beauty. Muzzling the mouth of the ox that treadeth out the corn, they do not understand; of how much land a yoke of oxen would plow in a day, they have not much idea. Some things we have lost, while many things we have gained. Well and faithfully through all the pioneer time, these truly noble domestic animals served well in their day. Each one, as a rule, had a name, and old is the teaching, the ox knoweth his owner, but horses and steam and electricity have quite fully taken the place now of these once trusty servants of man. Their necks are free from the yoke and their shoulders from the bow. An ox-yoke is itself a curiosity now.

Our yokes were generally shorter, heavier, with more work put upon them, and not so straight as those used in the Pine Belt of the South, where oxen still do much heavy work.

Returning once more to the pioneer period, people travelled then on horseback, or in ox-wagons, and in large, two horse wagons which were used for any farm purposes. Buggies and carriages had not, to much extent, been brought in. But soon, when the railroad period opened, the young men purchased buggies and trained their horses for the harness instead of the saddle, and soon the farmers had buggies, and in these later years, good covered carriages, so that even the stylish carriage and fine horses of Joseph Leiter, then the millionaire, the brother of "the first lady of India," who in the summer of 1897 was accustomed to drive every week from Crown Point to the

Red Cedar Lake, were but little in advance of the carriages and horses of our own citizens who count no higher up than into the ten thousands.

And where once, not so long ago, at our public gatherings were the ox teams and heavy farm wagons, now, when the hundreds and the thousands gather, covered buggies and close carriages are the general rule. As La Porte County is the oldest, the most populous, the wealthiest of these counties, there, as might be expected, costly carriages made their appearance first.

It was quite a struggle for a few years for the farmers to make headway and secure the conveniences which the railroads supplied, for many were in debt for their land, and prices for farm products were rather low, and money not very abundant, until the changes came from 1860 and onward, as the nation was entering into the scenes of the great conflict. Those who are only about forty-five years of age cannot realize how financial matters were managed before any "greenbacks" were issued. But since that change took place in the currency of the nation, changes in prices being connected with it, great improvements have taken place in the homes of the farmers. Little remains now on the farms of the earlier farming implements. The entire mode of planting and sowing, of cultivating crops and of gathering, has changed. It is singular how so many once familiar objects have disappeared.

In the more costly and elegant mansions now, beautiful and costly and massive, like those in the large cities of the land, may be seen elegant furniture, costly engravings and beautiful pictures upon the walls, on the center tables, papers of various kinds,

choice magazines, the best published in the world, and near at hand, accessible readily to the family, and to visitors, the standard dictionaries and encyclopedias and large libraries of the noted and standard English and American books. There is as yet no private dwelling that has cost half a million, but there are, even in this corner of Indiana, some few who may be called millionaires, although as yet no city is here having of inhabitants twenty thousand. About fifteen thousand is now the limit.

In the counties south of the Kankakee River, railroad life commenced in 1860, and not fully until 1865, when the road now called the Pan Handle passed through Monticello and North Judson direct to Chicago; and but a small part of Newton County felt the direct influence of the age of steam until the Chicago & Eastern Illinois road passed through Morocco in 1889. Lake Village is yet, as the capital of Florida used to be called, "inland."

Along these years, from 1850 to 1900, when one railroad after another was built across our borders, and stations were established nearer to the homes of many of the farmers, and villages and towns were growing, changes and quite rapid improvements were constantly going on among all the farming communities. Not only were new farming implements introduced, not only were much more showy and commodious dwelling houses and barns and granaries constructed, not only were stylish vehicles often seen in the carriage houses of the farmers, but the social life, the school life, the church life, all were materially changed, and the farmers were, many of them, accumulating much property. The domestic animals were largely on the increase, except in the exclusively

grain producing neighborhoods, and such large additions had been made to the fixed capital and also to the circulating or loose capital in all this region of Indiana, that a stranger, a visitor, might well say, this is a largely prosperous, a contented and happy community.

Yet it may after all be questioned whether real happiness or satisfaction, as connected with the activities of life, is any greater now, than in the early pioneer days. The men and the women and the very children were founders and builders then, looking eagerly often, surely hopefully forward, to the times of greater abundance and enlarged comforts, which they felt sure would come; but the very activity and effort were large elements in the enjoyments of that life. When one has reached the position of assured competence possessed by one of the grand pioneer men, a member of one of our old settler associations, who expressed himself in this figurative language, that he had come to the condition in which he did not care "whether school kept or not," it soon becomes evident that after all he is not perfectly contented. Well said that learned and wise philosopher, Sir William Hamilton, "It is ever the contest that pleases us and not the victory." And he quotes the "great Pascal" as saying: "In life we always believe that we are seeking repose, while in reality, all that we ever seek is agitation." And he quotes Jean Paul Richter as saying: "It is not the goal, but the course, which makes us happy." And he quotes, in the same line of sentiment, Malebranche, one of "the profoundest thinkers of modern times," as saying: "If I held truth captive in my hand, I should open my hand and let it fly, in

order that I might again pursue and capture it." And on this same principle, the enjoyment to be found in well directed human activity, if a young man in this, our modern railroad life, could choose for himself an inherited abundance or a reasonably sure inherited or acquired ability to gain for himself that abundance, he would do well to let the inherited abundance go. Like the philosopher, let truth fly in order to have the opportunity to pursue and capture. So here it may be repeated, it is quite questionable whether, with all the present abundance, the comforts, the luxuries of the present, there has come any greater happiness than was enjoyed in the old pioneer days. The fact, however, is, the prosperous farmers as well as the business men in towns and cities are not "sleeping in their carriages," to quote a figure from the once noted Chesterfield, but are eager and active to still gain more and more. The pioneer activity was a very healthful activity. Perhaps there is a little fever-heat connected with the rush of railroad life now.

To one interested in studying human nature and in observing the workings of character, the effects of the change of surroundings which the railroad era brought were sometimes surprising and sometimes amusing. Those who in their log buildings had been hospitable and courteous, refined and polished in manners, continued the same kindly attentions to the needs or wishes of others. But some who in their log cabins had been hospitable, although unrefined, when occupying their well built mansions with plastered walls and painted surfaces and gilded furniture, seemed to forget that ever they were inside of logs and mud, and were warmed by the fire connected with stick chimneys. But good, common sense character-

ized the majority of those who had known pioneer life, and only some of their young people could be charged with "putting on airs."

Bringing comforts, conveniences, luxuries, railroads also brought some undesirable new features into both country and town life. They tended to increase the number of saloons, to enlarge the bounds of Sabbath desecration, to encourage the escape of criminals; and they opened the way for "tramps," a class of men unknown in the early days; and connected with them, if not of them, came "strikes." Some actual history of the years 1893 and 1894 will show their great convenience in facilitating transportation, in aiding travel; and also show them in connection with the conduct of a great strike.

In the year 1893, while the Columbian Exposition was open, the citizens of Lake, Porter and La Porte counties, enjoyed great facilities for attending that remarkable World's Fair, at Jackson Park, and witnessing the wealth of beauty and magnificence that could be seen that summer in the White City. It was estimated that fully two thousand school children of Lake County spent some little time in that great exposition. A part only of the public schools reported an attendance of nine hundred and seventy-three. Probably never again will so many people pass over Lake County in one month on the railroad lines which enter Chicago, as passed in September of 1893. The opportunities of that year, the enjoyment of the rich life of that summer, can never by thousands in northwestern Indiana be forgotten, as for six months, so near to their own borders, the great interest was concentrated of the civilized world.

The year of 1894 was vastly different. The fol-

lowing quoted paragraph is from the Historical Secretary's report at the Old Settlers' Association of Lake County, read in August, 1894:

This year has been no ordinary year although vastly unlike the last. Over all our land it has been a year of uncertainty, of unrest, of some conflict; and, to some extent, in all these we of Lake County have shared. There have been the remarkable inactivity of the American Congress, the great stagnation in mining and manufactures, the Pullman boycott, the Debs' strikes, the miners' strikes, the assassination of the French president, and a war commenced between the two great powers of Eastern Asia, China and Japan. In our narrow limits we have felt but little change from these events which have made this year memorable; but in the north part of the county for a time the civil officers were unable to maintain law and order, and United States troops and some eight hundred state militia upheld the law and secured railroad transportation and the passage of the mails in the city of Hammond, quelling disturbances also in East Chicago and Whiting. For a time in Crown Point, on both roads, no trains could go through to Chicago, and passenger trains lay by here for many hours, reminding us of the scenes during our great snow blockade. The tents of the soldiers, the soldiers themselves on guard duty, the presence of the soldiers with their arms in various places, the guard around the Erie station, the gatling gun on the platform, caused Hammond to appear for a number of days as a city under martial law. It was in our county a new experience to have almost a regiment of soldiers under arms to preserve order, and to be able to reach the Erie station passenger room only as one passed the sentry and the corporal of the guard. We may well hope that such times will not often come. No mail, no travel, no daily papers, no intercourse with Chicago. Some of the Crown Point grocerymen had supplies brought out from Chicago by teams as was customary before railroads were built. Happily this

condition of things did not last long. The President of the United States exercised his authority, the governors of Indiana and Illinois asserted theirs, troops poured into Chicago, and the gathering of mobs, the lawlessness, the destruction of property, the impossibility of moving trains in or out of the city ceased.

Historical truth and justice to a part of the citizens of Hammond seem to require some further record here. In one of the city papers, the heading of the article, "To maintain Law," a notice appeared of a meeting of citizens of Hammond, in the hall of the Sons of Veterans, from which notice some extracts and statements are taken. "The first speaker was ex-Secretary of State, Charles F. Griffin, who, in a speech that was full of patriotism and loyalty, paid a graceful compliment to President Cleveland and Governor Matthews."

He spoke for half an hour, and said, when closing:

"The law-abiding citizens of this city have been outraged and their rights trampled upon. The fair name of Hammond and Lake County has been blackened by the work of rioters." "The methods employed by the mob that had possession of Hammond last week forcibly remind one of the days of bushwhacking. It is high time the citizens take action."

He then read some resolutions, which after discussion were adopted, which strongly condemned the action of the rioters, their upholders, and of some local officials, and which approved heartily the action of the President and of the Governor "in furnishing military protection to life and property."

The names of others given as taking an active part in this meeting of citizens who pledged themselves to the enforcement of law, are the following: Professor W. C. Belman, Rev. F. W. Herzberger, G. P.

C. Newman, J. B. Woods, Rev. August Peter, Colonel Le Grand T. Meyer, one of the Governor's staff, W. G. Friendly, and E. E. Beck, who was chairman of the meeting.

It was a time of no little excitement; the results in Chicago were then uncertain; Hammond was the same as a part of Chicago in its locality; and some who were called Hammond citizens had held a meeting not long before, heartily endorsing "the conduct" of the officials whose action the citizens at this meeting condemned, and denouncing the sending of troops by the President to quell the disturbances. One of the resolutions, therefore, as read by Hon. C. F. Griffin, contained this strong language: "Resolved, That the business men and law abiding citizens of Hammond repudiate with disgust and alarm the disloyal sentiments expressed by the resolutions of the so-called citizens meeting of last Tuesday, and assert that they are not indorsed by the masses of Hammond citizens."

Quiet was at length restored, the soldiers were removed from Hammond, and trains could pass and re-pass without molestation.

In this record of an experience as a part of modern railroad life, that life which in its different aspects and different stages it is the design of this chapter to depict, it is not strange that in Hammond at this time there should have been two very different positions taken; for, unlike Michigan City and La Porte, which were early settled localities, unlike Winamac, Rennselaer, Monticello, and Valparaiso, early settled localities all, Hammond, a city so recently having become populous, separated from a part of Chicago and so from Illinois only by an air line, partakes very little in the characteristics of Lake County and of Indiana.

Geographically in Lake County and in Indiana, few of its thousands of inhabitants have a share in the traditions and associations, as they had no share in the trials and privations and successes, of the earlier inhabitants of Northern Indiana, and so, in what is called the nature of things, they cannot be expected to be identified, to much extent, with the interests of Lake County. They form a community of their own, and must be expected to have the characteristics of the manufacturing portions of Chicago, a part of which, locally, Hammond is. But a few descendants of quite early settlers, as Charles F. Griffin, A. Murray Turner, and others from Crown Point and from old settled parts of the county, have homes now in that rapidly growing and enterprising city, while the thousands are, for Lake County and for Indiana, "new comers." And this same fact has its bearings in making not only Hammond, but East Chicago and Whiting with their gathered thousands, quite different from the other towns in North-Western Indiana. It should receive due consideration from those living in those three contiguous cities as well as from those outside, especially as more than one half of the population of Lake County, as claimed, will no doubt this year be found inside of those three corporations and all living within about three miles of the city limits of Chicago.

It is sufficiently easy to see how natural it was, at the time of the great Chicago strike, that two very different positions should be taken in Hammond.

Leaving that not pleasant picture of the railroad troubles of 1894, other features of this modern life claim attention, especially first, the change in social life manifested in our various organizations, of which mention will be made in another chapter.

Year by year we have been adding to our organizations until the contrast has become very great between what some would call the delightful pioneer times and this advanced, progressive present. To take as an illustration the medium sized town of Crown Point. In the earlier days, when it was the only town in Lake County, there was at first a resident Baptist minister, and then, as he soon left, a resident Methodist and Presbyterian minister. And the Methodist and Presbyterian preachers and Sunday schools seemed quite sufficient for the needs of the people. The same congregation for a time listened to the different ministers, for their services were not held at the same hour. There was one temperance organization the meetings of which all attended. To a great extent all attended the same social gatherings. The people were not divided into classes then as they are now. There were some dances which all did not attend, but there was a freedom of intercourse among all the families and the young people then, which would seem strange to the exclusive sets of this modern period. And the same free mingling of families and of young people extended over the entire region of all these counties.

Now, besides nine religious gatherings in Crown Point at the same hour, and eight Sunday schools, and two Protestant missionary societies and two or three Roman Catholic church societies, and a Christian Endeavor Society and an Epworth League Chapter, and a fire company, there are some twenty other social or secret orders and clubs and societies; some for men alone, some only for women, some for young people, some exclusively for girls of one set, some for girls of another set, some for boys or children; and

so into about forty-five different groups or clusters, the children, the young people, the middle-aged men and women of the two thousand or more in Crown Point are divided up. And many of these meet every week. Calls, fashionable, afternoon calls are made, but for the style of family visiting once known in the village life there can be no time. The social life of the present, where the clubs and societies demand so much time, where some have wealth and leisure, and others poverty and toil, where into many circles some can never enter, must be a life for the whole community of some dissatisfaction and unrest. But this is modern life; for some almost ceaseless toil, for others select parties and club meetings and attention to dress and manners and the requirements of what is called "society." Some are, and many are not, "society people."

To produce in the large cities millionaires is one of the attendants if not a direct result of railroad life, and in connection with millionaires select society, inclusive and exclusive; and the same "society" classification goes into the smaller railroad cities and towns where wealth is accumulating and organizations for pleasure abound. On a smaller scale than New York they also have their "400." Perhaps some should not be blamed for thinking "the pioneer life was better than this!"

Leaving social life in the form of society so-called, it will be pleasant to look now upon the modern assemblies called the institutes, as they enter into the social life of these later years in a form quite different from the clubs and orders and circles.

I. Teachers' Institutes.

The first Teachers' Institute, as connected with the

public schools in Lake County, was held in 1866 by School Examiner W. W. Cheshire. But fourteen years before that time, in November, 1852, the real first teachers' institute in Lake County was held by Rev. W. Townley, and Superintendent Jewel, and Mr. Hawkins, of La Porte, assisted by Dr. Boynton, who gave lectures illustrated by a manikin. This institute was in connection with a private school under the management of Rev. W. Townley, was held for a week in the Presbyterian church building, and the subject of Normal schools as they then existed in the East was presented; and besides the other branches of study to which attention was given, instruction was imparted in vocal music and how to teach it in schools. Of course the morning exercises were opened by prayer.

In other counties, indeed in all the counties now, as one of the requirements of the Indiana school laws, during one week of each year, these institutes are held.

2. Farmers' Institutes.

About 1890, probably in 1889, the first farmers' institute was held in Indiana. They have been commenced in county after county until now they have spread over the State.

In North-Western Indiana the first was held about 1894, and February "15, 16, and 17." 1900, was held at Valparaiso what was called on the programme "the closing Farmers' Institute of the State of Indiana for the Season of 1899-1900." On the programme for the morning of each day is given the name of some minister of the town for an "Invocation." Each day is thus opened with prayer. It seems to be quite a prevailing custom for farmers' institutes and for

teachers' institutes, as for old settlers' associations, and for many other organizations, to recognize in their public exercises the Creator and Preserver of all, whom we call God. Sometimes an assembly, without designing to be atheistic, forgets this quite well-established custom.

In regard to the large good accomplished by this institute work for the farming communities those who have attended these schools of instruction, much of that instruction conveyed in the details of personal experience, could readily testify. The growing interest manifested in these gatherings, and the class of men attending as lecturers, such as Professor Latta, of Purdue, Mr. Billingsley, of Indianapolis, in the tile department, and Mr. C. Husselman, general lecturer, show that applications of science to dairying, agriculture, and stock raising, are becoming well appreciated.

3. Sunday-School Institutes.

A Sunday-school convention is quite different from a Sunday-school institute, although some Sunday-school workers do not seem to recognize the difference. The institutes proper, like those for teachers and for farmers, are gatherings designed especially for imparting and receiving instruction, instruction, of course, in regard to Sunday-school work. Between the years 1865 and 1890 institutes were held in many parts of Lake County, besides the annual and sometimes quarterly conventions. These institutes were conducted to a large extent by the county Sunday-school secretary who was aided by teachers and others in the county; but a few were denominational and were conducted by some workers from other counties. In Porter and La Porte counties, the Sunday-

school centers being mainly Valparaiso and Hebron, and Michigan City and La Porte, institutes and also conventions have been held; but not so frequently and regularly as in Lake County. In Starke County much good Sunday-school work has been thus done, the popular and efficient public school superintendent for several years, W. B. Sinclair, being also an active Sunday-school worker. And in the counties of Pulaski and White, of Newton and Jasper, a good amount of Sunday-school work, and surely of good, has been accomplished. Sunday-schools were commenced in pioneer times, but these conventions and institutes belong to our modern life.

4. Temperance Institutes.

Of the four classes of institutes held in our counties, this one may well be called moral, the object of these institutes being to promote the cause of temperance and the cause of purity. They help to encourage the great need of watchfulness in providing for the young a pure literature and pure displays in art. It is recognized that impurity and intemperance go together. As a good authority has said, "As a common curse they are one and inseparable." So while the Sunday-school institutes are held in the cause of religion, the teachers, in the cause of education, and the farmers, for the material good and prosperity of the country on the welfare of which cities and towns depend, the temperance institutes and conventions are held in the interests of private and public virtue. In every clime the motto of the Woman's Christian Temperance Union is, for God and Home and Native Land. These unions are not so numerous as might be desirable, but each one is a power for

good. They are now, in Lake County, at Crown Point, Hammond, Hobart, and Lowell; in Porter, at Valparaiso, Hebron, perhaps Chesterton; in La Porte County, at La Porte, Michigan City, Westville; in Starke, not any; in Pulaski, at Star City; in White, at Monon, Chalmers, probably Reynolds; in Jasper, not any; in Newton, at Kentland, Morocco, Goodland.

The members of these unions, who conduct the institutes and conventions, are quite largely, perhaps entirely, the more active, devoted, and earnest members of the churches; and so, in some towns, they take higher ground than do the churches themselves, as organized bodies, on Sabbath observance, and on the great moral questions of the day. They have no interests of politics or of policy to keep them silent. They are a kind of advance guard of the great Christian army in the conflict against immoral practices and habits and tendencies.

Institutes this year have been held in La Porte County at Michigan City, a silver medal contest having been held, the first ever held at Michigan City. There were eight contestants and "Miss Maud Staiger won the medal." In March one was held at Goodland in Newton County. "Six girls contested for a silver medal, which was awarded to Bessie Perkins." In White County, at Reynolds, an institute was held March 8, 1900.

In other counties where previously held, they have accomplished good.

The three northern counties began temperance work quite early, as they began improving in other lines, even in their early pioneer days, and when the "Crusade" movement started in Ohio, in Valparaiso

were found some noble and brave women who took up the same line of work. It was then February, 1874, when in Valparaiso there were eight saloons. The following proclamation issued by the city mayor, February 23, 1874, will show the course, in part, pursued by the women:

"Whereas, for several days last past, large numbers of persons have been engaged in assembling on and about the premises of citizens pursuing a lawful business, and remaining on said premises against the will of the owners thereof, and for the avowed purpose of interfering with their business; * * * now, therefore, all such persons so assembling and remaining, are hereby notified that such conduct is unlawful * * * and they are admonished as good citizens to desist from the same," and they were warned that it was a duty of the authorities to "disperse such assemblages." Singing and prayer in the saloons was not to be tolerated in Valparaiso.

The women in a few hours had their reply published and distributed over the city.

It commenced with a quotation from the Scriptures, "Why do the heathen rage and the people imagine a vain thing?" with all of Psalm 2:1-4, adding a quotation from Acts 4:18, 19, and 5:29; and then it declared that the women had no purpose to violate the laws of the State but that they believed they had the right to do what they were then trying to do, and that it was their solemn purpose to go forward in the work they had undertaken; and they close by saying, "if the hand of violence be laid upon us, we make our humble and confident appeal to the God whom we serve, and to the laws of the State whose faithful citizens we are." This reply was signed by

Mrs. A. V. Bartholomew, Mrs. L. C. Buckles, Mrs. E. Skinner, Mrs. A. Gurney, Mrs. E. Ball, executive committee, in behalf of the ladies engaged in the temperance movement."

It was a grand uprising of the temperance women of Valparaiso, and meekly and nobly did they pass unharmed through the excitement of the time.

Out of the Crusade movement of 1873 and 1874 grew the unions, and for twenty-six years these have been living, growing, spreading over the world, and doing for suffering humanity a large work.* The World's W. C. T. U. was founded in 1883.

The grand convention in Lake County was held in the Commissioner's room of the Court House, April 27, 1880, as the published records say, "the first convention in the county held under the auspices of women." Men and women were present as representatives from West Creek, Cedar Creek, Eagle Creek townships, also from Winfield, Center, and Ross, and letters from Hanover and Hobart expressing hearty sympathy in the work. The records say, "Mrs. M. C. C. Ball, president of the W. C. T. U., presided. Miss Annie McWilliams was secretary. The morning session was opened by the reading of part of the Sermon on the Mount and prayer by Rev. T. H. Ball. 'Only an Armor Bearer' was then sung." The record is added: "These are supposed to have been the first religious exercises publicly held in the new Court House."

The first address was given by Mrs. Susan G. Wood, twenty years younger then than she is now, in

*Fredonia, N. Y., Dec. 19, 1873, Washington Court House, Ohio, presents second claim, and Hillsboro, though called the "cradle," is said to be the third.

the course of which she said, "Steadily and slowly we have been gaining ground. Twenty, fifteen, nay five years ago we could not have rallied such a force as presents itself before us today." Among those taking part in the exercises are the names of J. Q. Benjamin, O. G. Taylor, Dr. J. A. Wood, F. Dickerson, H. Ward (then a county commissioner), J. Harrison, C. Baugh; and Mrs. J. Skinner, Mrs. Farfield, and Mrs. Young, visiting sisters from Valparaiso. Before the convention closed devotional exercises were conducted by Rev. O. C. Haskell and Rev. E. H. Brooks.

Since that day, along the twenty years that have passed, conventions and temperance institutes have been held in the different counties, and some good has surely been done, although the two amendments which were that year proposed to be added to our State Constitution, the one in favor of prohibition and the other in favor of woman suffrage, never were permitted by the General Assembly of Indiana to come for adoption or rejection before the voters of the State. And the number of saloons, since the Porter County Crusade, has largely increased. But the thousand saloons of North-Western Indiana, kept as some of them are by well-meaning men, and by fine-appearing young men, must some day yield to the moral power along the line of the temperance unions. "Lawful" as the strong drink traffic is, as the mayor of Valparaiso well and truly said, made lawful by our county commissioners, our State Legislature, and our Congress, all the legislation in the world can never make it noble, can never make it good; and when that promised time comes, when nations shall learn war no more, when the knowledge of the glory of the Lord covers the earth as do the waters the sea,

when there shall be none to hurt or destroy the peace and welfare of others, the time for the hastening on of which millions of Christian women are working and praying and longing, there will be then no more saloons.

Good and praiseworthy as are the other three varieties of institutes, no good citizen should fail to encourage those that seek to promote in all home life temperance and purity, purity in literature, purity in art, that seek to build up in boys and girls alike true and equal virtue. One large page of progress in our modern or railroad life, notwithstanding the demoralizing influences supposed to go with the railroad, that great attendant and promoter of civilization, is that on which we read the history of woman's work in the last two decades of the Nineteenth Century.

CHAPTER XI.

POLITICAL HISTORY.

It is not designed in this chapter to give the vote of each county, year by year, according to the division of citizens into political parties, but it is considered sufficient, for the objects of this historic record, to give the political aspects in each county in 1840, 1852, 1856, and 1860, and then the prevailing political sentiment of the counties since the changes brought about by the Civil War and the era of Reconstruction.

As all students of American history know, the year of 1840 was a time of great political excitement over the entire country, and it was the first presidential campaign in which these new counties in North-Western Indiana had taken much of any part.

For twenty-four years, from 1801 to 1825, Jefferson, Madison, and Monroe, had held in succession the office of President, all being what by some were called Democratic-Republicans; then, for four years John Quincy Adams, called a National Republican, was President; and for twelve years more Jackson and Van Buren, called simply Democrats, held that high office; and now many of the people were desirous of a change in the administration of national affairs. William Henry Harrison, of Ohio, was nominated for President and John Tyler, of Virginia, for Vice President by a party or a union of different forces bearing the old historic name of Whig. It was the noted

Log Cabin and Hard Cider campaign. In La Porte County the contest was a very exciting one, on the Whig side such men as General Joseph Orr and Hon. John B. Niles, with many other prominent citizens being found; and on the Democratic side such men as Gilbert Hathaway, C. W. Cathcart, and many more whose names will long remain in Northern Indiana history. It was not only an exciting and arduous, but with some even a bitter struggle for success. Wilber F. Storey, afterward connected with the "Chicago Times," was then an editor of the "La Porte Herald," and his utterances in regard to the anti-slavery men who were beginning to vote with the Whigs, just before the political campaign opened, indicated full well the spirit of the man whose utterances in the "Chicago Times" in the opening years of the Civil War needed to be suppressed by the strong arm of power at Washington. And the publisher, also an editor of that same "Herald," in his issue of July 11, 1840, says the Whigs, whom he styles Federalists, residing in La Porte, "are the most abandoned, reckless, hypocritical, murderous, and lost to every noble, honorable, virtuous feeling, of any other community with which I am acquainted; and within the last few years I have traveled through nine states of the Union," words which General Packard, with good reason, says, "embittered the already aroused feeling of the Whig party"; and words which he who in the heat of his vexation wrote them did not suppose, probably, would live a month. Surely one lesson of history is, that men should not write nor even speak that which they would be ashamed to have go down to posterity.

Two resolutions adopted in this hot campaign will

be quite sufficient to show the spirit of that time in La Porte and also in Porter County. The first is Democratic: “

“Resolved, That Federal principles are like Harrison victories, few and far between—and made to suit party customs; and that Harrison’s battles, so gloriously won, according to the tactics of the Federal party, are like his principles, wholly unknown and unheard of.”

The other is a Whig resolution, adopted by the senatorial convention at Valparaiso, March 28, 1840, “presided over by Solon Robinson,” then of Lake County, “with James Blair, of Porter, and Alexander Blackburn, of La Porte, vice presidents, H. S. Orton and Samuel S. Anthony, secretaries.”

“Resolved, That we have our political log cabin already raised, that next August we will roof it in, that next November we will chink Locofocos into the cracks, and that next March we will move into it.” And in March, 1841, General Harrison did go into the White House at Washington.

Those who, as young men, enter into political life since the great changes produced by the Civil War, may see corruption and hear abuse heaped upon political opponents, but the bitterness manifested by many toward those who were opposed to slavery, while that “irrepressible conflict” was leading on to the great battles and the red fields of blood, they cannot readily realize. That editor of the “La Porte Herald” already named, Wilber F. Storey, who became editor-in-chief and proprietor of the “Chicago Times,” published in March, 1840, a long article on what he called “Abolitionism.” In that article he styled it a “nefarious subject,” mentioned contemptuously

some "friends of the poor negro" who held a meeting in the La Porte court house, expressed the hope that the Democratic party would drive the anti-slavery men out of their party, and called those who spoke against slavery "abolition loafers."

It is evident that even in the campaign of 1840 elements were at work that would be felt more fully in 1860.

La Porte County, Porter County, the State of Indiana and the whole country went that year in favor of the Whig party.

Two brilliant speakers, "captivating" one was called, and the other "a popular speaker of great eloquence," were candidates for Congress, E. A. Hannegan and Henry S. Lane. The latter was elected.

In Lake County the Democrats were quite largely in the majority and gave their vote for E. A. Hannegan. Solon Robinson, however, the first settler at Crown Point, with some other Whigs, had attended that great gathering in May, 1840, at the Tippecanoe battle ground, held in honor of General Harrison, of whom the Whigs of La Porte said: "The battle fields of Tippecanoe, of Fort Meigs, and of the Thames, present to the world imperishable monuments of his fame as a soldier, and upon that evidence he may safely rest."

In 1840 Starke County and Newton had not been organized; and Jasper, with its large territory, having then only twelve hundred and sixty-seven inhabitants, and one hundred and thirty-eight polls, took but little part in political affairs.

Says Judge Thompson, of Rensselaer: "In 1840 the entire taxable valuation of property in what is now Newton, Benton, and Jasper, was \$20,340." He

says again: "Prior to 1840 there were settlements at Blue Grass, Wall Street, Carpenter's Creek, Gillam, Crockett's Graveyard, and a few scattering houses throughout the county."

White County, next to La Porte County in age, had not then become populous; nor yet had Pulaski, then but recently organized, its first term of court held in 1840; so these counties took no very active part in the political campaign of 1840. Lake County had then fourteen hundred and sixty-eight inhabitants.

In 1848 there was another exciting campaign. General Taylor was the Whig candidate for President and General Lewis Cass the Democratic candidate. One sentence may well be quoted here as belonging to this canvass which was "constant, thorough, and able." "Passions were deeply stirred, for more and more were questions, arising out of the institution of slavery, coming to the surface, and although both the old parties endeavored to ignore such questions, like the ghost of murdered Banquo, they would not 'down.'"

The "Higher Law" was mentioned in discussions in these exciting days. Schuyler Colfax, afterward Vice President of the United States, was for the first time a candidate for Congress, nominated by a Whig convention in May, 1851. His Democratic competitor was Graham N. Fitch. The position of the two parties in this part of Indiana is shown in two of their resolutions adopted at their district conventions. The first is Democratic:

"Resolved, That we abide by the letter and spirit of the Constitution, and that we will stand by each and all of its compromises, and therefore recognize the

binding force of every clause (the delivery of fugitives from labor included), and we regard any action from any quarter, North or South, that tends to weaken or estrange our high allegiance to its solemn provisions, as equally faithless and treasonable."

And the corresponding Whig resolution was this:

"Resolved, That our position remains unchanged; no interference with the domestic policy or peculiar institutions of sister States; no extension of slave territory; no diffusion of an institution, which it is believed tends to degrade labor and blight industry, over more of national soil than it now covers; no countenancing of disunion sentiments whether at the North or South; but devotion, unfaltering and unconditional devotion to our glorious Union, in any event, under all circumstances, despite all contingencies."

By a convention adopting this as setting forth their views Schuyler Colfax received his first nomination for Congress.

There was already a small but growing Free Soil party, not satisfied, even, with the position taken by the Whigs. Their candidate in 1848 was Martin Van Buren, and in 1852, the year which has been named as one of special interest, their candidate was John P. Hale. In this year, Franklin Pierce being the Democratic candidate and the Whigs endeavoring to elect one more general, the noted Winfield Scott, a Democratic wave seemed to sweep over the country. The Whigs had elected General Harrison, they had elected General Taylor, both of whom died in office; they had failed to elect that grand statesman and favorite son of Kentucky, Henry Clay, although La Porte County gave him a good majority; and now, in 1852, they failed to elect General Scott. It was their last great

effort. The party was broken up. A new party was growing, which became before long the great Republican party of the northern portion of the whole country. A square issue in regard to the growth of slavery was soon to be made. About 1852 a party also was formed, the American party which included the "Know-Nothings," which prevailed for a time in both the North and the South, including largely those who had been Whigs; the Kansas and Nebraska bill, repealing the Missouri Compromise of 1820, was introduced by Stephen A. Douglas and passed by Congress in May, 1854; and all those in favor of free territorial soil became still more aroused to the fact of the conflict before them, and were gathering their forces to meet it. The Republican party was organized. In 1856 the combined forces that went into this party held their first national convention and nominated for President John C. Fremont. But the Democrats elected this year one more President, James Buchanan, and it was evident before long that not ballots but bullets would be needful to settle the conflict, when in 1860, on a full tidal wave of success Abraham Lincoln was elected to be the next President of the United States.

The position of the counties in these different years is now to be examined.

La Porte County in 1852 gave to the Democratic electors a majority of one hundred and eleven, at the same time the Free Soil party in the county giving to John P. Hale one hundred and thirty-six votes, so that had these votes been given for General Scott La Porte would still have held a Whig majority. Schuyler Colfax and Henry S. Lane were this year among the defeated Whig electors.

In 1856 La Porte County went strongly Republican and gave Colfax one hundred and thirty majority for representative in Congress. The year, 1860, came, when the whole nation, both North and South, saw that there was no light conflict before them; yet not even then foreseeing how desperate and how bloody it would be. An organization known as Wide Awakes in La Porte, added brilliancy to the night scenes, as with torch lamps they moved in long processions on the streets of that beautiful city. The election day came. Colfax received a majority of one thousand and five for another term in Congress as Republican representative. La Porte County continued Republican till 1872, when it became Democratic, and since that time its vote has not been constant for one party.

Porter County in 1852 was probably Democratic, as it had been in 1848, giving a few Free Soil votes,—the vote of two townships is not at hand—but in 1856 it was strongly Republican, and in 1860 the county gave for Lincoln a large majority. It continued to be a Republican County until after 1880, and for several years past it has been generally Republican. Lake County, at first and for several years largely Democratic, when the Republican party was formed, became strongly Republican, the Free Soil Democrats of whom there were many, going with the Whigs to help form that large party that for twenty-four consecutive years had a Republican President in the White House. (It may be noted as a somewhat singular coincidence that as the so-called Democratic-Republican party had control of the government from 1801 to 1825, so the Republican, the Free Soil party, had control for the same length of time, from 1861 to 1885.)

The other five counties, Starke, Pulaski, White, Jasper, and Newton, have been quite uniform in their political preferences, Starke and Pulaski Democratic; Jasper and Newton Republican; and White in 1896 giving a Democratic majority for Secretary of State, the two parties, however, being quite evenly balanced.

In the last few years, in all these counties there have been some Prohibition votes. The Prohibition candidate for governor a few years ago, R. S. Dwiggins, was a resident of Rensselaer.

Number of voters in 1895—

Counties.	White.	Colored.
La Porte	9,414	38
Lake	8,192	21
Porter	5,128	2
White	4,780	3
Jasper	3,444	6
Pulaski	3,219	1
Newton	2,600	19
Starke	2,465	..

DISTRICTS AND CONGRESSMEN.

When, in 1843, an act was passed "for revising and consolidating the Statutes of the State of Indiana," it was enacted in the section in regard to the counties, "The State of Indiana shall be, and the same is hereby divided into the following counties, to wit:" The names of eighty-eight counties then follow, but no Newton County is named, as it was then included in Jasper. After defining the boundaries of the eighty-eight counties, ten Congressional districts were formed. Our eight counties Newton as a part of Jasper, were then placed in the Ninth

district, along with nine other counties, the General Assembly thus making this, in the number of counties, the largest district in the State. The other districts numbered from four to fourteen counties each. It is to be supposed that the northwestern part of Indiana, in 1843, was not very densely populated. In arranging the senatorial districts, "La Porte, Lake, and Porter," were entitled to one senator; "Warren, White, Pulaski, Jasper, Benton, and Starke," to one. So that, with the aid of two other counties, we then elected two State senators. In arranging for representatives, La Porte was then allowed to have two; Porter and Lake were to elect one; White, Pulaski, and Jasper, together with Benton, to elect one; and Starke along with Marshall and Fulton could also elect one. Five representatives we could elect with the help of three other counties. rious changes.

But population increased. Time brought its va-
In 1872 an act of the General Assembly re-arranging senators and representatives became a law, and then La Porte County alone was entitled to one senator; Lake and Porter to one; Newton, Jasper, and White, with Benton, to one; Starke with St. Joseph to one; and Pulaski, along with Marshall and Fulton, to one. La Porte, Porter, and Lake, were allowed one representative each; Jasper and White together, one; Newton with Benton, one; Pulaski and Starke with a part of Fulton, one.

In 1876, when there were thirteen Congressional districts, our eight counties, with Carroll and St. Joseph, constituted the Tenth. There were cast that year, for President, 35,187 votes in this Tenth district, distributed thus: For Hayes, 17,902; for Tilden, 16,917; and for Cooper, 368.

At the session of the Indiana Legislature in 1895 a new arrangement for Congressional districts was made. The State was again divided into thirteen districts, the Tenth to comprise the counties of Lake, Porter, and La Porte; White, Newton, and Jasper, with Warren, Tippecanoe, and Benton. Pulaski and Starke were placed in the Thirteenth district. The number of counties, according to this last division, ranges from two to ten in a district, one district only, the Fourth, exceeding the Tenth in number. The average number of counties in a district is now seven, so the Tenth is not quite up to the average.

In 1897 another act of the Legislature changed slightly the apportionments of senators and representatives which had been re-arranged in 1895. This last act gave to La Porte and Starke one senator; to Lake and Porter one; to Newton, Jasper, and White, one; and to Pulaski with Cass, one. This act gave, for representatives, to White and Pulaski, one; to Porter, one; to Newton with Benton, one; to Lake with Jasper, two; and to La Porte with Starke, two.

FULL LIST OF CONGRESSMEN.

This list contains the names of representatives in Congress for only one district. Some of the eight counties have been at times in other districts.

Indiana had in 1831 and 1832, the twenty-second session of Congress, only three districts; but at the time of the next session, for the years 1833 and 1834, there were seven, and ours continued to be the Seventh district till 1843.

First—Edward S. Hannegan, Democrat. Two terms, 1833 to 1836.

Second—Albert S. White, Democrat, 1837 and 1838.

Third—Tilghman A. Howard, Democrat, 1839 and 1840.

Fourth—Henry S. Lane, Whig, 1841 and 1842.

Fifth—Samuel C. Sample, Whig, 1843 and 1844.
The district was now the Ninth.

Sixth—Charles W. Cathcart, Democrat, 1845 to 1848. Two terms.

Seventh—Graham N. Fitch, Democrat, 1849 to 1852. Two terms.

Eighth—Norman Eddy, Democrat, 1853 and 1854.

Ninth—Schuyler Colfax, Anti-Nebraska and afterward Republican. Seven terms, 1855 to 1868.

Tenth—Jasper Packard, Republican. Three terms.
The district now the Eleventh, 1869 to 1874.

Eleventh—William S. Haymond, Democrat, 1875 and 1876. District now the Tenth.

Twelfth—William H. Calkins, Republican, 1877 to 1880. Two terms.

Thirteenth—Mark L. De Motte, Republican, 1881 and 1882.

Fourteenth—Thomas J. Wood, Democrat, 1883 and 1884.

Fifteenth—William D. Owen, Republican, 1885 to 1890. Three terms.

Sixteenth—David H. Patton, Republican, 1891 and 1892.

Seventeenth—Thomas Hammond, Democrat, 1893 and 1894.

Eighteenth—Jethro A. Hatch, Republican, 1895 and 1896.

Nineteenth—Edgar D. Crumpacker, Republican, 1897 to 1900.

JUDICIAL CIRCUITS AND JUDGES.

Thirtieth Circuit—Jasper and Newton counties with Benton form this circuit. Present judge elected in 1896, S. P. Thompson, of Rensselaer. Republican.

Thirty-first Circuit—Lake and Porter counties. Judge, John H. Gillett, residing at Hammond. Republican.

Thirty-second Circuit—La Porte County with St. Joseph. Judge, Lucius Hubbard, of La Porte.

Thirty-ninth Circuit—White with Carroll County. Judge, Foreman F. Palmer, of Monticello.

Forty-fourth Circuit—Pulaski and Starke counties, both Democratic, electing as the present judge, George W. Beeman.

In the records of La Porte County are the names of these four who have been members of the Congress of the United States: C. W. Cathcart, Jasper Packard, William H. Calkins, and Mulford K. Farrand.

Congressmen from Porter County are the following: Mark L. De Motte, Edgar D. Crumpacker.

From Lake County: Thomas J. Wood and Thomas Hammond.

La Porte County has furnished one United States Senator, Charles W. Cathcart, from 1852 to 1853, and one judge of the Supreme Court, Andrew L. Osborne, from 1872 to 1874.

Lake County has furnished a Secretary of State, Charles F. Griffin, from 1887 to 1891; a Crown Point boy and then a young lawyer; a Sunday-school superintendent and active in the temperance work of the town, then sent to Indianapolis, and now a resident lawyer at Hammond.

ADDENDUM.

Among those events that are deserving of notice some space should surely be given to the part taken by citizens in these counties to what is known as our Mexican War, which commenced in April, 1846, and ended in September, 1847. Of this conflict the author of that highly praised "Dictionary of United States History," advertised as "the grandest book of the age," takes the opportunity to say: "The war was plainly one of unjust aggression on a minor power, with the object of winning more territory for new slave States." The opinion of a recorder of history may be of value, or it may not be of value; but a writer of history is not required to express his private opinion in order to give correct facts. There are, probably, two sides to the questions concerning every war,—the present ones of 1900 being no exceptions—and there were many to uphold the action of our government in 1846, as there are to uphold its action in 1898, 1899, and 1900.

Whether any readers of these pages agree with Professor Jameson in his needless thrust at the action of our government or whether they believe, with many others, that the Mexican was a justifiable war, out of which grew grand and good results, they will surely accord to the men who went from these counties due respect for patriotism and for valor. La Porte County, the most populous and most wealthy,

took the lead in this as in some other movements, and soon a company was sent forth with W. W. McCoy as captain.

The ladies of La Porte presented to this company a beautiful silk banner, which was borne with honor over sparkling waters and bloody battlefields, and was in August, 1848, returned with credit to the hands of the ladies who had given it.

In that company, Robert Fravel, First Lieutenant; C. W. Lewis, Second Lieutenant; Samuel Mecum, Ensign and Color Bearer, were ninety-two young men. Some of them did not return. The company was organized in May, 1847. The peace was proclaimed July 4, 1848.

Captain Joseph P. Smith, a business man of Crown Point, proposed to raise a company for this war. (W. A. Goodspeed in "Porter and Lake" says that he was the "only one man in the county who knew anything of military tactics." And at that same time there was living in Lake County one who had been colonel of a company of cavalry, and had been on many a muster field before 1832. But of course W. A. Goodspeed could not be expected to know. He came, a stranger among us, to write the history of Porter and of Lake counties. He should have refrained from volunteering statements about matters which he could not know.) Captain Smith, it was understood, had been captain of a military company in New York, and did have some knowledge of military drill. He raised a company in four or five counties, some twenty-five men of Lake County, one hundred and seven in all, and left Crown Point for Mexico. It would seem that, in point of time, Captain Smith's patriotic action was in advance of Captain McCoy's

of La Porte, for the evidence is that he crossed the Tippecanoe with his entire company on the way to Madison, Indiana, before the last of April, 1847; but in regard to numbers La Porte County took the lead. This company was quite unfortunate; some actually deserted, and many never returned. Some made good soldiers in a later and a larger war.

CHAPTER XII.

THE WAR RECORD.

From the view given of the political aspects of these counties it is evident that the elements were here, as in all the non-slave-holding states, for energetic action when the first gun should be fired that was on both sides the call to arms. And where had been the larger number of Whigs and of Free Soil Democrats would naturally be the largest Republican majorities and the most complete uprising of the people.

April 12, 1861, that gun was fired that sent the blood flowing more rapidly through the hearts of millions. La Porte was then as now the most populous of our eight county seats, and having so many wealthy and prominent citizens rapid action was taken.

Says a La Porte writer :

"No one who lived in La Porte at the time will ever forget the magnificent uprising of the people on the thirteenth of April, 1861." It was Saturday. A large concourse of citizens gathered in Huntsman Hall to hear the telegraphic dispatches read. Sunday evening another meeting was held in the hall and further dispatches were read, those confirming the worst fears of the citizens in regard to the actual surrender of Fort Sumter." Thus closed with news of war and defeat the first Sabbath of the new American Revolution."

On Monday the war spirit was rising rapidly. Huntsman Hall was crowded Monday evening. That night the first man volunteered his services for the coming war, "Dan J. Woodward," a prominent Democrat. Meetings continued to be held. Vigorous, patriotic resolutions were adopted, a relief fund for families that might be left destitute was raised, that soon amounted to over four thousand dollars, and soon two companies were ready for marching orders.

On Tuesday when the crowd assembled at the mayor's office and marched to Huntsman Hall, "By request, General Orr bore the Star Spangled Banner." At the hall Tuesday evening Mayor Whitehead presided and John Millikan was secretary. An incident of Wednesday may fittingly be recorded here. A young man ready to enlist, recognizing that his highest duty was to serve God and the next his country, went to the pastor of one of the churches and in the presence of a few friends professed his faith in Christ, was baptized, and immediately joined the company of volunteers enlisting for the war. He would place himself first, outwardly, in the Christian army and then in the Union army, to battle for the right. On Monday, April 15, President Lincoln had issued a call for seventy-five thousand men, and on the same day General Lewis Wallace had issued an order, as Adjutant General, for the organization of the Indiana militia.

Further details cannot here be given in regard to La Porte County, only the statement that a company was organized at Michigan City in time to gain a place in the Ninth Regiment.

At Valparaiso, the next largest county seat, scenes somewhat similar to those in La Porte were wit-

nessed, the first public meeting having been held at the court house on Monday evening, April 15. Men enlisted, a company was raised that also went into the Ninth Regiment under Colonel Milroy, and was known as Company H. Among those active in promoting enlistments were J. N. Skinner, Dr. R. A. Cameron, who became captain of the first company, M. L. De Motte, J. C. B. Suman, G. A. Pierce, W. Bartholomew, T. G. Lytle, Rev. S. C. Logan, and Rev. Mr. Gurney. These were by no means all of the active and prominent citizens who gave good evidence of their patriotism.

It was supposed that there were, or might be, among those who had been strong Democrats in the former years, some, who were not in favor of the war that was opening, and the following, among other resolutions, was adopted at a public meeting April 18: "That if it is found that there are Secessionists in our midst, we will not encourage violence and bloodshed at home, but we will withdraw from them our social relations, and, if business men, we will not favor them with our patronage." A few such were found in these counties, as in other parts of Indiana, to whom was given, in those years of fearful conflict that followed, the not very complimentary name of Copperheads.

At Crown Point, the next county seat westward, then a small inland town, having no railroad connection with the outer world, depending on the little stage that came from Hobart or Ross for their news, but with a largely Republican and intensely loyal body of citizens, the Charleston gun, when its sound did reach them, aroused them also to speedy action. Enlistments were made with sufficient speed to secure

about seventy men a place in that Ninth Regiment, which from its war record became known as the "Bloody Ninth." Lake County in 1860 had a population of 9,145, containing about eighteen hundred families. And as near as can be known, some three hundred enlisting in Illinois, one thousand men from Lake County went into the Union army.

South of the Kankakee River, at Rensselaer, men were found ready to respond to the call of the President, and as Newton County, as such, was not organized until April, 1860, those who went as soldiers from Newton would naturally enlist in companies formed in Jasper. No account has as yet been found of war meetings held at Rensselaer or at Monticello or at Winamac, but there were loyal-hearted men and women there, and although in 1860 the entire population of Jasper and Newton, of White, Pulaski, and Starke, did not equal the population of La Porte County alone, it is very certain, without access to the records, that the inhabitants did their part in maintaining the union of the States and upholding the Constitution and putting down secession.

Says Judge Thompson, to whom as good authority it is pleasant to refer: "In the Mexican War our volunteers were few and little ardor or enthusiasm prevailed."

"In 1861, however, under the leadership of Robert H. Milroy, Jasper stepped to the front and furnished three hundred and forty-five blue coat soldiers. The ladies were loyal, too, and donations to hospitals were in order whenever called for. From our volunteers were made generals, colonels, and numerous line officers. In the 9th, 12th, 17th, 48th, and 87th Infantry, and 12th Cavalry, and 4th Artillery our brave boys fought for national unity to a finish."

Some one has ascertained that the number of men enlisting from Pulaski County was 1,166. The number just given of men enlisting in Jasper is 345. No exact number has been found for any other county, but from La Porte County the number of men is placed at about 2,600; from Porter County, about 1,200; from Lake County, more than 1,000. Estimating the men from White, Starke, and Newton at 700, and the total amount will be seven thousand men that went as soldiers from North-Western Indiana into the Union army. Rev. Robert Beer, in giving the record of Porter County, says: "The names of Porter County soldiers are found upon the rolls of twenty-nine regiments of infantry, four regiments of cavalry, and two batteries of artillery, which went from this State."

How many from these counties enlisted in Illinois regiments is uncertain. Mr. Beer gives as the result of his study of enrollment reports, honorably discharged 156, died of sickness 106, mustered out 539, thus accounting for 801 from Porter County with no mention of those who were killed in battle.*

Some promotions were the following: Robert H. Milroy, of Rensselaer, at first Colonel of Ninth Regiment, promoted Brigadier General September 3, 1861; promoted Major General November 29, 1862. Gideon C. Moody, also of Rensselaer, promoted Colonel; Joshua Healey, of Rensselaer, promoted Major of the 128th Regiment; William Krimbill, of Crown Point, promoted Major; W. H. Blake, of

*I am sorry that I have not been able to obtain, in regard to some of the counties, more full reports, but the work of searching through all the volumes of the Adjutant General's report seemed to be too great. T. H. B.

Michigan City, promoted Colonel, also promoted Lieutenant Colonel; Ivin N. Walker, of Michigan City, promoted Lieutenant Colonel, also of La Porte County, S. C. Gregory, 29th Regiment, promoted Colonel; John C. Walker, 25th Regiment, Colonel; Gilbert Hathaway, 73d Regiment, Colonel, killed at Blount's Farm, Alabama, May 2, 1863; R. P. Dehart, promoted Lieutenant Colonel; Nevill Gleason, 87th Regiment, Brigadier General by brevet, and Jasper Packard, 128th Regiment, Brigadier General by brevet. Soldiers of Porter County promoted: Robert A. Cameron, Colonel, afterward Brigadier General, then Major General by brevet; J. C. B. Suman, Brigadier General by brevet.

Of Lake County, John Wheeler, of 20th Regiment, promoted Colonel. He was killed July 2, 1863, on the battlefield of Gettysburg. Had he lived through that terrific battle, he too might have been Brigadier General by brevet.

Rev. J. M. Whitehead, of La Porte County, was Chaplain of the 15th Regiment, and of Porter County, Rev. J. C. Brown was Chaplain of the 48th Regiment, and Rev. James C. Claypool, of the 12th Cavalry. Of this regiment, William H. Calkins, of Porter, was Major, and Charles Ball, of Lake, performed the duties of Sergeant Major, although properly Lieutenant of Company G. A sketch of his life can be found in "The Lake of the Red Cedars."

To go with the various regiments in which our seven thousand volunteer soldiers were enlisted, over their various battle fields, to see them fall before shot and shell, or die in hospitals, or languish, as many did in Southern war prisons, and to look upon those of them who were permitted to live through the dreadful

carnage and see the valor which they displayed on so many noted battlefields, belongs to the general history of the State and of the country. And so far as our State is concerned, that history, to some extent, has been already written.

It was not long after the first blood was shed in battle before it was ascertained that there was work for the hands of women as well as suffering and anguish to reach many a woman's heart. And very soon women commenced work. Societies were organized and busy fingers prepared the various articles that became needful in camps and hospitals.

The record for La Porte County is brief, but full of meaning. Thus it reads: "The women were aroused, and all over the county relief societies were organized, and from that time forward during all the months and years of the war, their solemn vigils were kept, and they refused to know relaxation or weariness in their noble work of supplying comforts to diseased and wounded, and suffering men."

No record has been found of the work done by the women of Porter County, but they surely would not be far behind their sisters in other counties.

In Lake County the women became active helpers. A Soldiers' Aid Society was organized in Crown Point in 1861, and still later another was formed with Mrs. J. H. Luther as President, Mrs. B. B. Cheshire and Mrs. J. E. Young Vice Presidents, Mrs. A. M. Martin, Secretary, Mrs. T. H. Ball, Treasurer. At Plum Grove also an Aid Society was organized, Mrs. M. J. Pearce, President, Miss A. J. Albert, Secretary, and Miss M. J. Wheeler, Treasurer. Other societies were organized in different parts of the county, but of these no special record is at hand. These societies

raised considerable sums of money and sent many articles of convenience and comfort to the soldiers.

And two of the noble-hearted women of Crown Point, Miss Elizabeth Hodson and Mrs. Sarah Robinson, gave their services in these dark years of suffering, to the care of the sick and wounded and dying. Connected with the Christian Commission work they found large employment in the hospitals at Memphis. They both returned to Crown Point, and Miss Hodson afterward was governess at the Soldiers' Orphan Home at Knightstown, Indiana. They both were very noble Christian women, and at home were active in Sunday-school and church work. One was a Baptist, the other a Presbyterian.

The records of the work performed by the noble and patriotic women of Rennselaer, Monticello, and Winamac are not at hand.

REMINISCENCES. NOTES.

This chapter has awakened some personal reminiscences which are placed here in notes:

Note 1. In the years, probably, 1845 and 1846, Colonel Gilbert Hathaway, then a lawyer in La Porte, used to have business in my father's court, the Probate Court of Lake County, and was sometimes a guest at my father's home. One morning I took him down to the south part of the west side of the Red Cedar Lake, where was then a large marsh, to initiate him into the art of shooting sand-hill cranes with my little, unerring Springfield rifle. In those days I was an expert marksman and good hunter. Game was not abundant that morning, but we had the exercise and the hunt.

In 1851 I was a young teacher, in the spring and

summer, at a fashionable watering place known as Franklin Springs, south of Tuscumbia, near Russellville, in North Alabama. Among these hills and mountains I had the training of some Alabama boys, three of whom were brothers, connected with the family of General Coffee, noted in the Creek War of 1813 and 1814. April 28, 1863, twelve years later, the 73rd Indiana Regiment, the lawyer, Gilbert Hathaway, Colonel, left Tuscumbia as a part of Colonel Straight's Provisional Brigade, "on its hazardous expedition," then "only 1,500 strong," and April 30th, repulsed an attack of 4,000 cavalry under Forrest and Roddy, but a few days later, after that fierce encounter "in the passes of Sand Mountain," pursued by the forces of General Forrest, the brigade having reached what was known as Blount's Farm, on the second day of May, Colonel Hathaway was shot from his horse, an animal upon which that day he ought not to have been seen.

How fifteen hundred men could have been sent through that region with any hope of success seems strange to one who had spent a summer there in 1851, and I imagine that some of those mountain children whom it was then my lot to teach, were active among those who regarded the Northern soldiers as men who must be driven from their valley and mountain homes. Perhaps some of those very boys were present, but boys no longer, when Colonel Hathaway fell. He was warned about appearing on that captured horse, but he liked a fine horse too well. A man stepped out from the Confederate ranks, took a sure aim at the officer on the Southern horse, and fired. He himself never stepped back.

The Southern account of these days of fighting and

marching is interesting. Says Brewer: "The mountain wall on her northern boundary gave a feeling of security to the people of Blount during the progress of the late war. But the closing day of April, 1863, was signalized by 'the shock of resounding arms' in the direction of Moulton. At dusk on that day, Forrest overtook Straight in the passes of Sand Mountain, and the fight lasted for three hours. The enemy were at length driven back and came hurriedly down the valley into Blount. 'The scene of this prolonged and desperate conflict on the barren mountain heights of North Alabama is remembered by participants who have mingled in the great battles of the war, as one of peculiar, weird grandeur, impossible to paint with words.'"

The scene is now in Etowa County. "The scenery of this county is as wild as that 'on the bold cliffs of Benevue.' * * * The fall of Black Creek is a romantic spot. The water is precipitated abruptly over a precipice ninety feet in height. * * * One clear May morning, 1863, about noon, the peaceful inhabitants of the vicinity were startled by the galloping of horses, the rattling of sabers, and the hurried glances and excited shouts of armed men. * * * Amazed but curious, the good people flocked to the roadside where passed the dusty and confused columns of the dreadful Yankees. They stopped only long enough to seize the horses of the citizens, and the hindmost passed hurriedly over the bridge. This they fired, and held the wooded heights beyond to guard the pass while the timbers blazed. A second cavalcade followed the first, but the deep and rapid stream, with

*Brewer's Alabama, pages 139 and 140.

sheer and high banks, stopped them. Their leader, stalwart and begrimed with dust, asked a group of females if there was not a ford near that could be crossed." Let us stop a moment in this account to see who these were, this little group of women. Emma Sansom had that morning just returned from Gadsden to her home. The horse she rode had hardly been stripped of the saddle when the advance of Straight's command came up and seized him. Her mother, however, assisted by Miss Emma, was holding on to the beast, amid a torrent of threats, when a federal officer ordered his men to release him. "The war-worn pageant passed her home, Forrest reached the spot," and now we return to the time when we left him inquiring for a ford. He was told that there was a ford. "He then asked if there was a man about who could guide him to it. 'There is not, but I can,' said the young maiden. So not waiting for her own horse to be re-saddled, she mounted behind him and guided them to the ford, about a mile above the bridge. This also they found guarded." "A volley of musketry whistled over them." They dismounted and Forrest descended a ravine "to reconnoiter the ford, crawling on his hands and knees." He left the girl hidden at the roots of a fallen tree, but she followed into the ravine. Soon they returned. "A storm of bullets greeted their re-appearance on the level. 'They have only wounded my dress' she said, as she met his anxious glance. Then, facing the enemy, she waved her sun bonnet defiantly round her head. Cheer after cheer came from the foe, who ceased firing at once."*

*Brewer's Alabama.

Emma Sansom returned to her home to be numbered in Alabama among their heroines. Forrest with his troop crossed the ford. On May 2nd, Colonel Hathaway fell, Straight's command, his "provisional brigade" surrendered.

After so many years the Northern and the Southern accounts blend well together. He who writes these lines can appreciate the feelings of the actors on both sides then.

Note 2. From a list of members of 9th Regiment, Company B:

On page 319 of General Packard's valuable history of La Porte County the first line on the page reads:

"Tozier, Reuben, September 5, '61; Transferred V. R. C., Feb. 19, '63." (The above letters seem to denote Vol. Reserve Corps.)

As early as 1844 I became acquainted with this Reuben Tozier. He was living on a farm one-half mile from my father's home. He went to the Mexican War in Captain Joseph P. Smith's company. When he returned I was away. He went into the Union Army, as the line above indicates. A few years ago I was in the La Porte Poor House, or County Asylum. I found him there. I knew him well. He must have made a good soldier. He deserved a better home in his old age. In his youth he had enjoyed cultivation somewhere. I was a member with him, before the Mexican War, of a Cedar Lake Literary Society. He was an interesting member. He could give one recitation, I might say, to perfection. He had been trained somewhere. Why he should have had only a pauper's fare I know not. But if he has no other monument, I set this page apart as the memorial of an old friend of my youth.

**Sacred to the Memory
...of...**

REUBEN TOZIER.

Note 3. Before this chapter was all written the tidings came of the death of General Jasper Packard. A teacher at one time in La Porte, an editor afterward in La Porte, a soldier and a statesman, he was the true historian of La Porte County. His work, of which mention has been made, from which extracts have been taken, was published four years after the publication of the first history of Lake County; and it is the foundation, the source in fact, for the La Porte County history contained in that large work called "The History of La Porte County," published by Charles C. Chapman & Company in 1880.

Three hundred and twenty-eight pages of that work contain a history of Indiana gathered from various sources, but the true La Porte history, when one reaches it, is largely from General Packard. To him, therefore, the citizens of La Porte are indebted for the collection and preservation of their earlier history.

I am glad to have been a co-ordinate worker with such a man as he was in collecting and preserving pioneer county history. And I am glad to have the aid of his La Porte History in this larger work in which I am now engaged, in gathering into one compact volume, small enough as to size to be conveniently readable, the history of our eight counties for one hundred years.

His death recalls to mind the last time that I met with him. It was one Sunday, in the city of La Porte, several years ago. He was on his way to Sunday school with his Bible under his arm as I passed him, and we exchanged greetings on the street. He was, while a public man, our representative in Congress for a time, also a church-goer and a Sunday-school man, a soldier for a time in the great Union Army, he was also a soldier in that grander army called many times the Church Militant in distinction from that grandest of all armies, in which surely he will have a place, known on earth as the Church Triumphant.

T. H. B.

Record. 1899. "General Jasper Packard, Commander of the Indiana State Soldiers' Home, died at his residence in Lafayette, December 13. General Packard was a man well known throughout the State as a politician and journalist, and was one of the leading men of Indiana."

CHAPTER XIII.

RELIGIOUS HISTORY.

Members of different denominations were among the pioneers. Especially were there Methodists, Presbyterians, Baptists, United Brethren, and Quakers. Other denominations were also represented.

It was very needful and quite pleasant, for a time, that all the members of the small neighborhoods should meet together and listen, sometimes to a Methodist minister, sometimes to a Presbyterian, and then again to a Baptist. All could worship in harmony, and all would get some good from the Scripture expositions of those earnest, zealous men, who first as religious teachers came among the settlers. To those yet remaining who enjoyed those earliest religious gatherings in private rooms and little log school houses, and in the groves in summer time, the remembrance is pleasant now. There was a simplicity, a reality, in the worship then, of which but little remains now. As settlements increased the larger denominations began to organize themselves into congregations for church activity and growth.

Some account of the formation of the earliest churches as it has been gathered from different sources will here be given; and then the number of members of the various churches at the present time. The struggles, the changes, the individual church history, from the organization of each till 1900, would fill a

quite large volume. Some of the denominations, it will appear, have succeeded much better than others, in maintaining church life and in securing a fair amount of growth. The real good accomplished cannot be estimated by any standards or measurements known in this world. Some churches die and some live. As it is with men so it is with organizations, who can tell what is really failure and what is success? In the realm of the moral and the spiritual neither wealth nor numbers can be the sure criterion by which to determine what God at last will call success. From the words "Well done," when uttered by the great Judge there will be no appeal.

Members of the following denominations at length formed organizations in these counties, and some brief notices of each will be given: Methodist Episcopal, German Methodist Episcopal, Congregational, Presbyterian, United Presbyterian, Baptist, Lutheran, Reformed, Protestant Episcopal, Roman Catholic, Unitarian, Second Adventists, Disciples or "Christians," Quakers or Friends, "New Church" or Swedenborgians, Free Methodists, United Brethren, Believers, German Evangelical, and Union. Also a congregation of Mormons, claiming to be Christians.

An order passed by the Board of Commissioners of Porter County in February, 1842, gives a partial list of the denominations then. They had in 1841 closed the doors of the court house "against preaching by any denomination of Christians." So reads their order; but now they say: "Ordered by the Board, that the Methodists, Presbyterians, Mormons, Universalists, Baptists, Campbellites, Associate Reformers, Infidels and all other denominations be allowed to hold meetings in the court house, provided they

do not interfere with the business of the courts of the county and political meetings."

1. The Episcopal Methodists.

As introductory to the Methodist history of this part of the State may be fittingly placed here the following statements from the Rev. Dr. R. D. Utter's "Conference History."

In 1820 there were in Indiana eleven circuits, all in the south part of the State. Three of these were in the Miami District of Ohio Conference, and eight in the Indiana District of Missouri Conference. In 1824 the Illinois Conference was established and all of Indiana was assigned to that Conference. In 1832, in October, was organized at New Albany the Indiana Conference, this then including the entire State.

Dr. J. L. Smith, author of an excellent history of Indiana Methodism, states, that in 1844 the North Indiana Conference was formed, the line dividing the two passing through Indianapolis. In 1852 a part of North Indiana was cut off and a new conference formed called North-West Indiana Conference, which held its first session in Terre Haute in September, 1852. About the same time was also organized the South-East Indiana Conference, holding its first session at Rushville in October, 1852. In Indiana were then, at this time, four conferences, each cornering in Indianapolis. The four continued for some forty years, but a few years ago the two in the south were united, leaving three conferences now in the State of Indiana.

In 1823 Methodist church life commenced in Indianapolis, and there their semicentennial was held in May, 1873.

The first Methodist preaching in this region seems

to have been in La Porte County, probably in 1832, possibly in 1831.

According to a record or historical paper, prepared by Rev. G. M. Boyd, Rev. James Armstrong was appointed Superintendent or Presiding Elder of the northern district of Indiana, then called Missionary District, in the fall of 1832, at the first session of the Indiana Conference, and when he came into this part of his large district, he found an organization of Methodists gathered by a local preacher, Jeremiah Sherwood, near where Westville is now. This is considered not only the first Methodist but probably the first Protestant organization in La Porte County. In the fall of 1832 an organization was formed,—thus the records reads—"at Door Village, or on a log in the grove where the village now stands." There, in 1833, a chapel was built. (Rev. G. M. Boyd calls this the first house of worship built north of the Wabash River, but the probability is that there was a Roman Catholic chapel at Bailly Town in 1827). In 1833 the name of the district "Missionary," was changed to "North Western." The work of gathering congregations went rapidly on. In 1834 the name was again changed to La Porte District. In 1836 Rev. G. M. Boyd was placed on the La Porte circuit with Stephen R. Jones as assistant. They now had fourteen places for preaching in the county. In 1837 a small brick church was built in La Porte. Union Chapel, the first church building in New Durham Township, was built in 1839.

As Porter and also Lake County had at this time settlers, the missionary field extended from La Porte westward.

Some of the statements now to be given rest on

the authority of the Conference minutes, four bound volumes examined some years ago at the home of Rev. W. J. Forbes in Valparaiso, and some on his authority.

In 1834 on the South Bend Circuit was stationed Stephen R. Ball. In that year no settlements, but few settlers in what became Lake County. Some in Porter County. In 1835 Deep River Mission was formed, Stephen Jones missionary. In 1836 assigned to Deep River Mission Jacob Colclazer. In 1837 Hawley B. Beers. In 1838 Samuel K. Young. In 1839 Kankakee Mission was formed, William J. Forbes missionary, who found on his entire field about one hundred members. In 1840 was formed Valparaiso Circuit, including Porter and Lake, W. J. Forbes minister in charge. In 1841 on this circuit Isaac M. Stagg. In 1842 Wade Posey. In 1843 Warren Griffith. The Conference minutes say, Crown Point to be supplied. In 1844 North Indiana Conference is named and Crown Point is called a circuit.

The Conference Minutes are to be considered first-class authority and officially correct, but in Mrs. Susan G. Wood's historic paper in "Lake County, 1884," which gives an excellent history of Methodism in Lake County, are some names of devoted ministers in Lake County that are not in the Conference Minutes. These are, for the year 1839, as a supply, Robert Hyde, and again, in charge of the work, perhaps as a supply, a few years later, D. Crumbacker, and at the same time, in 1843 and afterward, as a "local preacher of more than ordinary ability," Major Allman. (Mrs. Wood, a daughter of Rev. G. W. Taylor, has resided in Lake County since 1845.)

Pulaski is, like Lake, quite largely a Roman

Catholic county, yet the Methodists organized the first church in Winamac, as they are accustomed to do in most places. Their organized work commenced in 1839, the year in which Winamac became the county seat, and but two years after what is called its first settlement.

Although many settlers came in from Europe, yet the work of gathering congregations continued, and Pulaski has now nine Methodist churches and four chapters of the Epworth League.

In White County the Methodists commenced organized work in 1836 or 1837, the pioneer preachers being Richard L. Hargraves, John L. Smith, J. Ritchie, and Samuel Reed. There is a tradition that Rev. Mr. Lowrey preached the first sermon in the county at the house of Robert Spencer. He came from Rockville, but whether a Methodist or Presbyterian the tradition does not state.

With such missionaries and pastors as those named above the work of gathering congregations and erecting church buildings would go rapidly forward.

The Methodist Episcopal congregations in White County are, in Monon, Monticello, Reynolds, Talmadge, Wolcott, Idaville, Burnettsville, Brookston, and three country congregations.

In what became Newton County the Methodist preaching was for several years across the state line in Illinois, but at length congregations were gathered and church buildings erected in Kentland and Goodland and Morocco.

In Jasper County the first sermon, according to the tradition and record, was preached by Rev. Mr. Walker, a Methodist, at the house of a widow, Mrs.

Thomas. Date not given. But the first good-sized Methodist church in Rensselaer was built in 1849.

After Remington commenced town growth, in 1860, a church building was soon erected there.

In other parts of the county, congregations were gathered and church buildings erected.

In Starke County, what success attended the labors of the first Methodist preacher, "Elder Munson," has not been ascertained, but in 1856 there was a church building at Knox, and besides the congregation and church in the county seat, there are Methodist Episcopal churches in North Judson and San Pierre and Hamlet, making four now in Starke County. And they have good Sunday schools.

The date of the mission work in Starke has not been found, but L. W. Munson was on the La Porte circuit in 1843.

In 1844 the Indiana Conference met at Fort Wayne, and for the next conference year, the names of the pastors are: Monticello, A. D. Beasley, G. W. Warren; Rensselaer, N. N. Werdon; Winamac, Franklin Taylor; La Porte, John B. De Motte; Valparaiso, Jacob Cozad; Crown Point, Jeremiah Early.

Knox and Kentland as yet were not.

In 1852, when Valparaiso was set off as a station, the preaching places in Porter County were fourteen: Valparaiso, Morgan Prairie, Kankakee, Ohio, Hanna's Mill, City West, Jackson Center, Griffith's Chapel, Horse Prairie, Hebron, Union Chapel, Twenty-Mile Grove, Salt Creek, Louis Pennocks.

Presiding elders of the Valparaiso District since 1852:

J. L. Smith, W. Graham, B. Winans, James Johnson, Conrad S. Burgner, S. T. Cooper, W. R. Mikels,

1871-1875. R. D. Utter 1875-1879. S. Godfrey, 1879-1880. For a time no Valparaiso District. J. L. Smith 1886-1890. J. H. Wilson 1891-1895. S. Beck 1896 to the present time.

The date, 1840, is given for the organization of the present church in Valparaiso, church building commencing in 1848. Membership in 1852 two hundred and forty-five.

The Woman's Foreign Missionary Society of the Conference was organized about 1870. In 1876 Mrs. J. P. Early of La Porte was elected Conference Secretary of the Society. She left for California in the winter of 1880. In April of 1881 she resigned her secretaryship. She came not back to Indiana again.

In 1897 was published, by Rev. George R. Streeter, an interesting volume, the Conference Biographical Album. This contained likenesses and short sketches of many of the active members of the Northern Indiana Conference.

The History of Indiana Methodism, by Dr. John L. Smith, has been already mentioned. Dr. Smith came into Indiana and commenced preaching in 1840. That was a summer of great revivals, "some of the most remarkable," says Dr. Smith, "ever witnessed in the West." Laboring among the Indiana Methodists for so many years, he was well fitted, in that respect, to write their history.

Of Dr. John L. Smith, to whom the Methodists of Indiana owe much, Rev. Dr. Utter says: "His last appointment, 1886, was Valparaiso District. He remained in charge of the district five years, when, at South Bend, October 6, 1891, fifty-one years from the date of his admission on trial, * * * he requested the Conference to grant him a superannuated relation."

"At the close of the Conference session, 1891, he retired to his cottage home in Valparaiso, where, at 5 P. M., Saturday, March 11, 1899, in the eighty-eighth year of his age and the fifty-ninth of his ministry, he was transferred from the militant ranks to the Church triumphant, from earthly toil to his home in heaven." (See Conference Minutes of 1899.)

In La Porte County are now fourteen Methodist churches and two German Methodist. These are at Michigan City, La Porte, Westville, Union Mills, Wanatsh, Hanna, Door Village, and in country places called Summit, Waterford, Salem, Bald Hill, Rolling Prairie (this a railroad station), Lamb's Chapel, and Posey's Chapel.

Since 1876 the gain in membership has been four hundred.

In Porter County are ten. In Lake thirteen, White eleven, Pulaski nine, Starke four, Newton three, Jasper three, perhaps four.

Present membership, 1899.

The following figures are given on the authority of the Minutes of the Northwest Indiana Conference for 1899. All the preaching stations in the counties are not given in the Minutes, but the membership of the smaller localities is probably included in the larger. It appears that in our eight counties there are forty-three preachers "in charge" or as supplies, and seventeen local preachers, making in all sixty Methodist ministers in North-Western Indiana for the year 1899.

For the fifteen different objects for which these churches contribute in the year, aside from ordinary expenses, the Valparaiso District, in which most of these churches are, contributed, not including Royal Center, \$5,217. Adding to this amount the contribu-

tions from Brookston in La Fayette District, and of the ten amounts reported in South Bend District, \$1,658, and the full amount will be \$6,875. These congregations also paid in the same year for pastoral support, including presiding elders and bishops' amounts, more than thirty-three thousand dollars. And the amount of expenses in Valparaiso District alone were more than seven thousand dollars. Over fifty thousand dollars, in round numbers, will be the amount raised by the Methodist congregations in the year 1899.

The following is the membership by counties: Lake, 1090; Porter, 1263; La Porte, 1420; Starke, 360; Pulaski, 865; White, 1462; Jasper, 762; Newton, 1189. Total, 8541.

The average membership, it thus appears, is nearly one thousand and seventy in a county.

Number of Methodist Episcopal Sunday schools, 88. Membership in these schools, 8,921. The average of Sunday-school membership is about eleven hundred and fifteen for a county.

The Epworth League force is also quite strong, although included largely in the church membership and school membership.

2. German Episcopal Methodists.

Of these there are in Lake County four churches. The oldest is in Hanover Township on Lake Prairie. The earliest families of this church were the Beckley family, about 1840, George Krinbill and family in 1851, and then many others. A church was organized and a building was erected about 1853. In 1874, a church at Crown Point was organized, a church building was completed, and at about the same time a third one at Hobart. Still later the fourth organization was

perfected at Hammond. For fifty years the German Methodists have been an important part of the religious element of Lake County. They have had excellent pastors, they have been active in Sunday-school work, there has been vitality in their religion.

In these later years the oldest and strongest congregation has been declining, as families not of their faith have taken the lands which once they occupied. Numbering in the county in 1884 about one hundred and fifty members, they now number, with a large increase at Hammond, about two hundred and thirty.

In La Porte County they have an old and strong congregation, with one hundred and seventy-five members, in the city of La Porte; and at Michigan City they have one hundred and twenty-five members. At Crown Point and Hammond, at Michigan City and La Porte, besides church buildings, they have good parsonages. Entire membership, five hundred and thirty. They have only four resident pastors, and the total amount they raise is, including the same items as were included in the notice of the American Methodists, forty-two hundred dollars. So it appears that where the American Methodists raise an amount equal to six dollars for each member, the German Methodists raise an amount equal to eight dollars for each member.

3. Swedish Episcopal Methodists.

Of these there is one organization in Lake County, at Hobart, church building erected in 1889. Membership, —. Probably membership forty.

4. The Congregationalists.

There were not many of this denomination among the pioneers. It is mainly in these later years that these churches have been spreading outward from

New England. For the following statistics the Congregational Year Book for 1899 is the authority.

In La Porte County are three churches, all at Michigan City. 1. Michigan City 1st Congregational, organized in 1835, present membership 264; number in Sabbath school, 152; benevolent contributions, \$180; home expenses, \$1,675. 2. Emmanuel, German, organized 1891; membership, 43; in Sunday school, 72; for benevolent objects, \$63; home expenses, \$537. 3. Sandborn Memorial Church, Scandinavian, organized 1893; members, 39; in school, 30; for benevolence, \$20; home expenses, \$381.

In Porter County is one church, Porter, organized 1891; members, 53; in school, 175; benevolence, \$53; home expenses, \$575.

In Lake County are five churches: Hobart, organized in 1885; Hammond, 1887; Ross, 1888; East Chicago, 1889; Whiting, 1890. Membership in 1899: Hobart, 63; Hammond, 51; Ross, 31; East Chicago, 66; Whiting, 64. In Sunday school: Hobart, 120; Hammond, 142; Ross, 52; East Chicago, 50; Whiting, 150.

For benevolent objects in Lake County, including missions, total amount \$265, East Chicago and Whiting contributing over ninety dollars each.

For home expenses: Hobart, \$550; Hammond, \$500; Ross, \$222; East Chicago, \$900; Whiting, \$689.

Totals. Churches, 9; membership, 674; in Sunday school, 943; benevolent objects of different kinds outside of home expenses, \$581; home expenses, \$6,029. Total amount of money raised in the year, \$6,600. Nearly ten dollars for each member, or more exactly, nine dollars and about eighty cents.

5. The Presbyterians.

In the West and in the South Presbyterian ministers, although apparently not so well adapted to the ways and needs of frontier life as some others, have nevertheless gone into new settlements, carrying their very thorough education, their scholarly ways, and their dignity and culture, into the homes of the pioneers. If not always the first, they have generally been second or third to enter upon new fields. The first in promoting and building up schools they have generally been.

LA PORTE COUNTY.

As early as 1831, "in the late autumn," the first Presbyterian man, Myron Ives, settled on Rolling Prairie, "just east of the Little Kankakee," in a log cabin. In May, 1832, Mrs. Rebecca Ives, his mother, and his sister, Mrs. Sarah Aldrich, came with their families and settled near; and soon also, into the same neighborhood, came Alexander Blackburn. Soon, in the true Christian spirit of worship they commenced a neighborhood prayer meeting which was held each Sabbath in the Ives or Blackburn cabin. Presbyterian church life there commenced.

In November, 1832, Rev. James Crawford from the Wabash region held religious services in the cabin of Alexander Blackburn in Kankakee Township, and in 1833 completed the organization of a church with twenty members. The elders were James Blair, W. C. Ross, David Dinwiddie, and Myron Ives. Meetings were held in a log school house on the Niles road. For some reason the locality of this church was changed to the young and growing county seat and it was called the Presbyterian Church of La Porte. This church was what was then called Old School. In 1837

work on a church building was commenced, but the house was not dedicated before 1842. In November, 1844, a New School Presbyterian church was constituted "in a school house belonging to Rev. F. P. Cummins."

Some of the ministers who were pastors or supplies of the first church were John Morrill in 1834, W. K. Talbot in 1835, W. K. Marshall in 1837, until October, 1844. The membership increased from ninety-six to one hundred and fifty while he was pastor.

Rev. F. P. Cummins, a successful teacher of a private, academic school, was pastor from 1851 to 1858. Some other pastors were: J. W. Hanna, R. S. Goodman, S. C. Spofford, and L. M. Stevens.

Some of the pastors of the second church were: From 1846 to 1858, John W. Cunningham, in the first year of whose ministry, after he was duly installed, eighty-eight were added to the church membership; from 1859 to 1868, George C. Noyes, the church membership in 1866 having reached nearly three hundred.

In 1871, October 31st, the two churches were united, and Rev. John F. Kendall, D. D., became pastor. His was a long and successful pastorate.

The present pastor is Reuben H. Hartley. This church, with its present membership, according to the Assembly Minutes of 1899, of 365 members, raised in the year, for various objects, \$4,830, or more than thirteen dollars for each member. It is a strong church, with an "elegant church building" and a large Sunday school, and ought to be in the city of La Porte, along with the other strong churches there, as no doubt it is, a large factor for good.

In 1845 a New School Presbyterian Church was organized near Union Mills, but it did not grow and live.

What may be called the second, now living church in La Porte County, was constituted, with ten members, by Rev. F. P. Cummins, in a school house east of Union Mills, June 22, 1850. It took the name of Bethel Presbyterian Church. A building was in due time erected at Union Mills. The church has had several supplies and a few installed pastors, and has now one hundred and twenty members and a large Sunday school.

The present Rolling Prairie Church may be called the third in the county, organized in February, 1852, with twenty-eight members, and now reporting only twenty.

And the fourth, not counting one organized in 1870 with a few members at Wanatch, but which has ceased to exist, is the present Presbyterian Church at Michigan City, organized May 9, 1871, with thirty-nine members. The first elders elected were: J. S. Ford, John Orr, J. A. Thornton, and Henry W. Johnson.

In 1872 a church building was erected and Rev. J. Q. Hall was installed as pastor. In 1896, in February, the church building was destroyed by fire. A new building on other ground was erected in 1897.

Present membership about two hundred. Number in Sunday school in 1900, 215. Of this large and well conducted school H. W. Johnson has been Superintendent for twenty-five years, and A. B. Barron, Secretary for eight years, and two better officers than these have been need not anywhere be sought.

PORTER COUNTY.

Rev. J. C. Brown, a young licentiate, began preaching in Valparaiso December 4, 1839, and July 3, 1840, having been ordained, he with Rev. W. K. Marshall of La Porte organized the Presbyterian Church of Valparaiso with ten constituent members, James Blair and M. B. Crosby being the first elders. A Sunday school, at first Union, was organized by Mrs. Brown and the pastor's brother, Hugh A. Brown, near the close of 1840.

Both church and school prospered. A frame church building was erected, and at length, the present massive brick structure became needful. The church has had few pastoral changes. Dr. Brown, a remarkable man, teacher, preacher, Sunday-school worker, full of labor and of untiring zeal, taking, so it was said, his breakfast at six, his dinner at twelve, and his supper at six, all the year round, continued as pastor till September 4, 1860. In 1862 he was appointed Chaplain of the Twenty-eighth Regiment of Indiana Volunteers, and died in a hospital at Paducah, Kentucky, July 14, 1862. He had preached not only in Valparaiso, but at Tassinong, Salem, Twenty-Mile Prairie, Eagle Creek Prairie, and at Crown Point. In his twenty years of a busy ministry he received into church membership four hundred and seventy-five members. Well did one of his successors, Rev. Robert Beer, say of him: "Dr. Brown was a man of such piety, zeal, activity, and self-denial, as to make an impression never to be forgotten by those who knew him."

The second pastor was Rev. S. C. Logan, from October 14, 1860, to July, 1865. The third was Rev.

Robert Beer, from December 17, 1865, to later than 1882. The fourth was a more than ordinary man in the qualities of a winning, noble, vigorous manhood, Rev. S. N. Wilson. His successors have been Rev. H. B. Fleming, now pastor at Hammond, and the present pastor, Rev. Martin Luther. Six pastors only in sixty years.

The Presbyterian Church at Tassinong was organized by Rev. J. C. Brown, and has been supplied usually with preaching from Valparaiso and Hebron.

The Presbyterian Church at Hebron was organized by Rev. S. C. Logan of Valparaiso and Rev. J. L. Lower of Crown Point, October 29, 1860, with fourteen members. First elders: William Mackey and Amos A. Burwell. Pastors, J. L. Lower, A. Y. Moore, Robert Beer, and others from Valparaiso or Crown Point, and in these later years having a resident pastor, or a seminary student.

LAKE COUNTY.

The pioneer Presbyterian minister in Lake County was the Rev. J. C. Brown of Valparaiso, who made an exploring visit westward in 1840 and reached the home of the Ball family at the Red Cedar Lake, which was then one of the two religious centers of Lake County, and in that home he preached, as it is believed, the first Presbyterian sermon in the county.

He returned to Crown Point, the new county seat, found there two Presbyterian women, Mrs. Holton and Mrs. Fancher, arranged for preaching in the log court house, alternating these with the Baptist pastor, Rev. N. Warriner, encouraging the Union Sunday school which held its sessions in the same room,

and there, April 27, 1844, he organized a Presbyterian Church with eighteen members. The pastors succeeding him were Rev. William Townley, from 1846 to 1856, Rev. Mr. Schultz, J. L. Lower, A. Y. Moore, S. McKee, Dr. S. Fleming, W. J. Young, J. McAlister, Rev — Carson, B. E. S. Ely, E. S. Miller, L. W. A. Luckey, Ph. D., J. A. Cole, W. O. Lattimore, and the present pastor, Dr. Hearst.

A church building was erected between 1845 and 1847. The last services were held in this building August 10, 1884, when it was replaced by a much larger brick-veneered edifice. Present membership, 74.

The second Presbyterian Church of the county was organized November 9, 1856, on Lake Prairie, in the New Hampshire Settlement, with twelve members. These New Hampshire families had the year before made a settlement in the heart of the open prairie, a prairie so beautiful that some three years afterwards Professor Mills of Wabash College, having looked over the landscape from a knoll on one of the farms, said: "I have been thirty years in the West and have been in every county in the State, and never but once have I seen so beautiful a view."

Of this church on the prairie Rev. Hiram Wason, then from Vevay, Indiana, but a native of New England, in 1857 became pastor. After seven years of faithful and successful service he resigned the pastoral charge, but continued to reside in the neighborhood where he made for himself and family a beautiful home, and continued to be active and useful until laid aside by the infirmities of age. He died in June, 1898, eighty-three years of age. Some of his successors were B. Wells, Edwin Post, Homer Sheeley, and for thirteen years past until 1898, Rev. J. F. Smith, now residing in Crown Point.

A church building was erected at length, costing fifteen hundred dollars, and dedicated in 1872. This, while a true country church, has been, with its large Sunday school, a power for good of no little weight in the southwestern portion of the county. And it is doing no injustice to others to make this record: that the two Presbyterian ministers who have made the largest and most durable impressions for good upon the social and intellectual and religious life of Lake County have been Rev. William Townley and Rev. H. Wason. Were a third name to be added to these two it would be that of Rev. J. F. Smith, who for thirteen years, from 1885 to 1898, has been diligent in school and church work in the bounds of the Lake Prairie Church, who has taken a large interest in the public schools and in the social life of the community. His public addresses on many occasions have been always interesting and instructive.

A third Presbyterian Church was organized in the city of Hammond in 1890. This at once became a city church, erecting a quite costly edifice and entering actively upon church and school life.

A fourth church was organized at Plum Grove, in the south part of the county, with about twelve members, a few years ago, but it has lately been disbanded. It was reported in the Minutes of 1899 and will be found named therefore in the concluding summary.

OTHER COUNTIES.

In Pulaski County the Presbyterians seem not to have made an early beginning; but there are now two Presbyterian churches in the county: one at Winamac with eighty members and a Sabbath school of seventy-five members; the other at Pulaski with sixty mem-

bers and a school of sixty-five members. Also a Christian Endeavor society connected with each church. Rev. Samuel B. Neilson, residing at Winamac, pastor of both churches.

It has been said that about one-half of the population of Pulaski County were Roman Catholics, but that must be too large an estimate; for in the county are United Brethren, Lutheran, Advent, five "Christian," and nine Methodist churches, besides the two Presbyterian; four chapters of the Epworth League, and seven Christian Endeavor societies. Also forty-four Sunday schools.

Of the County Sunday School Association (1899) Miss Emily Hoch is President, Mr. E. C. W. Dunn of Star City, Secretary.

The first Presbyterian Church in White County was organized in 1836, Rev. J. Stocker the minister. The first meeting was in the cabin of John Wilson, a mile west of Monticello, then the members met in school houses and in the court house. This church was Old School. First settled pastor, Rev. Alexander Williamson, in 1840. Soon afterwards Rev. Samuel Steele organized a New School church, and this organization in 1842 erected, it is said, the first church building of the county. First pastor, Rev. W. M. Cheever, in 1843.

In White County, in which both Baptists and Presbyterians seem equally to prosper, are now nine Presbyterian churches or congregations, but some have no church buildings.

In Newton County are two: one at Kentland, one at Goodland. In Jasper there is one at Remington and one at Rensselaer. In Starke County there seems to be for Presbyterians as until very recently for Baptists no need.

The first Presbyterian minister preaching in Jasper County was Rev. John A. Williamson of Monticello. In 1849 or 1850 was erected the first Presbyterian church building.

SUMMARY.

Most of the following figures are given on the authority of the Minutes of the General Assembly for 1899. These churches are all in the Presbytery of Logansport, Synod of Indiana. The first figures, after the name of the church, give the membership, and the second number gives the members in Sunday school.

Churches in Lake County, 4. Crown Point, 74, 110; Lake Prairie, 34, 75; Hammond, 94, 100; Plum Grove, 17. Total membership 219, 285.

Churches in Porter County, 3. Valparaiso, 238, 201; Tassinong, 68, 25; Hebron, 59, 40. Total, 385, 266.

Churches in La Porte County, 4. La Porte, 365, 260; Michigan City, 180, 215; Union Mills or Bethel, 120, 186; Rolling Prairie, 20. Total, 685, 661.

Churches in Pulaski County, 2. Winamac, 75, 125; Pulaski, 50, 125. Total membership, 125, 250.

Churches in White County, 8. Monticello, 310, 345; Brookston, 96, 71; Chalmers, 83, 71; Idaville, 71, 94; Monon, 50, 100; Bedford, 33, 69; Meadow Lake or Wolcott, 50, 50; Buffalo, 25. Total membership, 718, 800.

Churches in Jasper County, 2. Rensselaer, 100, 90; Remington, 100, 100. Total, 200, 190.

Churches in Newton County, 2. Kentland, 110, 94; Goodland, 152, 138. Total membership, 262, 232.

Whole number of churches, 25. Total membership, 2,594. In schools, 2,684. Amount of money

raised in the year, including twelve items, \$27,285. This is about \$10.50 per member.

6. United Presbyterians.

The "Bethlehem Church of Associate Reform Presbyterians" was an early and probably the first church of this denomination in Northwestern Indiana. It was organized July 28, 1838, one month after the organization of the "Cedar Lake Baptist Church." The organizing minister was Rev. Hannon. The first members were "Samuel Turner and wife, Thomas Dinwiddie and wife, Berkley Oliver and wife, Susanna Dinwiddie, Sr., Susanna Dinwiddie, Jr., Margaret Dinwiddie, Mary McCarnehan, Susan P. West, John W. Dinwiddie, David T. Dinwiddie, Margaret J. Dinwiddie, and Elza A. Dinwiddie."* Rev. Wilson Blain was the first pastor. The second was Rev. J. N. Buchanan, who came in May, 1851, and was installed, according to the custom of Presbyterian churches, November 29, 1851. He still resides near Hebron, but resigned as pastor in 1897. The present pastor is Rev. J. A. Barnes.

The members of the Bethlehem Church met first at the homes of their members, then in the school house, then they erected a log building about a mile south of Hebron, and in 1852 a frame building, still nearer to the village, which was moved into Hebron in 1864, and in 1879 the present church was erected. The first frame building cost twelve hundred dollars and the present one twenty-five hundred. The name Bethlehem was soon changed to Hebron, probably at the suggestion of Rev. W. Blain, through whose efforts a postoffice

*G. A. Garard in "Porter and Lake," 1882.

was secured for the young village at "the Corners," and as there was one Bethlehem postoffice in Indiana some other name than that must be found. So church and town both took the old Bible name of Hebron.

The name "Associate Reform" of the denomination was changed many years ago to "United Presbyterian." Mr. Buchanan preached not only in Porter County, but for many years in Lake County at the South East Grove and Center school houses, and, in later years, at Le Roy, where, February 18, 1888, a second United Presbyterian Church was organized, members of the Reformed Presbyterian body uniting with others in its organization. A neat and good church building was soon erected and a Sabbath school organized. Pastor, Rev. J. A. Barnes.

CHAPTER XIV.

RELIGIOUS HISTORY.

7. The Baptists.

Among the religious denominations the Baptists made the first start in White County, commencing evangelical work in 1834, the year in which the county was organized. The pioneer preachers were, with perhaps, some others, "Elders Reese, Corbin, and Miner." They organized the first church in the new county. For some reason—Baptists are sometimes rather slow—the Baptists in White County, for many years, erected no church building; but at length "bought the Old School Presbyterian Church." The noble, devoted pioneer ministers passed away. But in White County the results remained. Growth took place, a more progressive age, so called, came on. About 1860 was formed the Monticello Baptist Association, as elsewhere mentioned; and besides the church in Monticello, churches were organized called Pine Grove, Mount Zion, Brookston, Monon, Liberty Township, West Point, Wolcott, Burnettsville, and Chalmers. It is the main Baptist county in Northwestern Indiana. One of these churches named, the Monticello Church, has ceased to exist; but there are now nine living Baptist churches in White County.

Samuel Benjamin was the first Baptist minister whose name is found in the records of Newton County. The first Baptist meetings were held near the village of Brook. The churches of Newton now are: Prairie

Vine, Morocco, Mount Ayr, Goodland, and Beaver City.

In Jasper County are three churches, at Rensselaer with about ninety members, one called Kankakee, the pastor residing in North Judson, and the Milroy Township Church, organized quite recently by Rev. D. J. Huston with six members and now having about sixty, and its pastor, energetic, devoted, almost untiring in labors, passed several years ago that third "dead line" of three score and ten. There are sensible churches yet left in the land.

The first Baptist ministers in Jasper were Elders Joseph Price and Samuel Benjamin. Of the years of their ministry and the results of their labors no records are found.

In Starke County the first Baptist Church was organized December 3, 1899, with fifty-eight members through the labors of J. W. Keller, a licentiate. This is called the Nickel Plate Baptist Church.

In Pulaski County there is no Baptist Church.

The "first anniversary" of the Monticello Baptist Association was held at Rensselaer in 1860. Its organic life commenced with six churches. In 1867 Rev. D. J. Huston came into the bounds of this Association. He was soon chosen as Moderator and has held that office for twenty-five years. He is still an active pastor, having recently built up a promising and flourishing church a few miles south from McCoysburg and secured the erection of a neat church building dedicated in 1899. He was born in 1822, was a student at Franklin College and would probably have graduated in 1850 with the writer of this work, but duty of another kind seemed pressing, and he commenced pastoral work near Franklin in 1847,

in the church where Dr. T. J. Morgan's father's family were members.

In 1869 Rev. A. H. Dooley became a resident pastor and was elected after a little time Clerk of the Association. He remained in its bounds till 1889, having been pastor of the Prairie Vine Church for ten years. In forty years the Association has increased to sixteen churches. Present membership about thirteen hundred.

July 25, 1899, was an important day for this Association, and especially for the church at Morocco. The event, which on that day called many together, was the laying of the corner-stone for a Baptist church building. The exercises, all, were of large interest. Rev. A. H. Dooley read a paper giving the history of the Baptist churches of Newton County, and "Rev. D. J. Huston, who has almost reached the four score limit, gave a good address and laid the corner-stone."* Addresses also were given by Rev. V. C. Fritts of Rensselaer, Rev. W. F. Carpenter of Goodland, and Rev. J. C. Boutell of St. Anne, Illinois. Also by the pastor of the United Brethren Church at Morocco, Rev. W. F. Hunt, and of the "Christian" Church, Rev. R. S. Cartwright. "Our venerable brother, Rev. A. I. Putnam, led in prayer."* The address of Rev. J. O. Boutell was given in the open air at the new church corner, where prayer was offered by Rev. A. H. Dooley.

"The Baptist organization of Morocco is in its infancy. The pastor is the brave, enthusiastic Rev. P. H. Foulk, who has undertaken a great work for the

*The Morocco Courier, July 29, 1899.

*The Standard, August 5, 1899.

town and community. The plan of the church, which is the product of Pastor Faulk's own mind, is of the institutional order. The building will contain, beside the ordinary auditorium and Sunday-school department, a library and reading room, a kitchen and parlor for social occasions, a well fitted system of baths, and a large modern gymnasium." The building is of brick and stone. The estimated cost five thousand dollars. This is the first building of its kind among the Baptists of Northwestern Indiana. Its success will be of no small interest among Indiana Baptists in the coming century.

The pioneer Baptist ministers in La Porte County were: Phineas Colver in 1833 and 1834, who organized the first Baptist Church in Stillwell Prairie in 1834; T. Spaulding in 1836; Alexander Hastings in 1837; Benjamin Sawin in 1838; Charles Harding, Augustus Bolles, and Samuel W. Ford in 1839. The church organized in 1834 took the name of Kingsbury. Elder Sawin became the pastor. It is a living church now.

The Rolling Prairie Church was organized June 23, 1836, "at the house of James Hunt," ministers present Elder T. Price of Michigan and Elder T. Spaulding of La Porte. Constituent members, "James Hunt, John Salisbury, Matthias Dawson, Nancy Hunt, Catherine Whitehead, Sarah Mason, Phoebe Hunt, Clarrissa Canada, Sabina Salisbury, Alsie Dawson, and Martha Whitehead."* In 1839 a church house "was built on the grounds of George Belohaw."

This was for some years a large and prosperous

*General Packard's History.

church, having in 1853 one hundred and forty-eight members. In 1861 it reported sixty-five members. In 1864 only forty-four. In 1870 "No report." It ceased to exist.

In the days of its prosperity it sent out several young men as ministers; among them Thomas L. Hunt, who in a few years finished up his life work in the county of Lake, where his dust reposes; as a man, a Christian, and a pastor, amiable, exemplary, and devoted beyond many; and J. M. Whitehead, a man of power, a tower of strength, among Indiana and Illinois pastors, for many years; a chaplain of note in the Union Army in the time of the war for the life of the Government; now in Topeka, Kansas, (1899), a man known and honored by many thousands.

The following extract from a letter written September 9, 1898, by John M. Hunt of Oakland, Oregon, to his cousin, Mrs. M. L. Barber of Burlington, Kansas, referring to this once flourishing church, is so applicable to other early churches, only changing names, that it is given a place here. To some yet living it will have a special, personal interest.

"There is one plain picture now before me that often presents itself, and that is, where we were often at church, your uncle Milton [Rev. J. M. Whitehead] and brother Thomas [Rev. Thomas L. Hunt] in the pulpit of the old church, your uncle Jasper and deacon Betteys just in front, and just behind on the next seat, uncle John Hefner, brother William, and uncle David Stoner, and a few others. Then your uncle Newton, and Alfred Salisbury, and several more male singers, and a half dozen female singers, rise and join in singing old Coronation; and as they

sing I see your Grandmother and Mrs. Betteys and your aunt Polly, and many others, all drinking in the music, while the seats on each side are full, but some of the faces are almost faded out, while many others are very distinct yet. Shall we meet again? Yes, in the great 'Beyond' we shall meet again. Those who have loved the Lord and tried to do His will, as they understood the word, will surely join in singing that 'New Song' that the 'Revelator' speaks of, whether they were members of our church or not, or may be not members of any church." Surely a blissful hope! And quite surely with no Baptist church building in Northern Indiana are more rich and pleasant associations connected than with that old frame building and its large, box-like pulpit of Rolling Prairie. Such men as have preached from that pulpit are not readily found now. The revival there in mid-summer of 1839, Elder A. Hastings, in the prime of his manhood, pastor, was one to be through life remembered. And the ordination there, February 27, 1846, of T. L. Hunt, Stephen G. Hunt, and J. Milton Whitehead, was one of the memorable occasions. "For nearly five years these three young brethren supplied the pulpit of the Rolling Prairie Church, preached in the neighborhoods around, and kept up, for a time, six Sabbath schools."

"During the five years of labor on Rolling Prairie about sixty were baptized by the three home missionaries."

But abundant as is the material we must leave this once consecrated place, where such men as Elder Hastings and Elder Sawin have been, and in the neighborhood of which they died, both living to an advanced age; and such visitors from Central Indiana

as Elder W. Rees and Elder U. B. Miller, and where Elder S. W. Miller, the veteran of all, so often preached. Of the last named, this record must be made. Born in July, 1812, married in Ohio in May, 1834, ordained at Belmont, for fifty-five years he was actively engaged in the work of the ministry, and is still living with his wife (1899) sixty-five years from the time of his marriage, in their comfortable and pleasant home in the city of La Porte, not able to engage in active duties as formerly, having been twice injured by accidents, yet enjoying a good degree of health. He can recall the names of some thirty ministers with whom he has been associated who have gone before him to the other shore. He is now more than eighty-seven years of age. Near him reside his son-in-law, Rev. W. S. Hastings, and at Door Village, one of his associate laborers, Rev. G. F. Brayton, both born March 24, 1822, both now retired from active ministerial labors, although ten years younger than Elder Miller. Honor should ever be given to whom honor is due. The pastors now are young. With some churches the "dead line" is fifty, and with some it is down to forty. Shame!

The La Porte Church was organized in 1838. This is now the large Baptist Church of the county. Its earlier pastors were Charles Harding till 1840; Silas Tucker, afterwards Dr. Tucker of Logansport, till 1845; E. W. Hamlin for one year, 1846; Morgan Edwards, "the sailor preacher," for a few months in 1849; R. H. Cook for a year and a half, to July, 1851; for a short time in 1852 again Morgan Edwards; S. C. Chandler, and in 1853 Gibbon Williams. In later years quite a number have been pastors, among them H. Smith, J. P. Ash, and Addison Parker. Present pastor, Rev. G. C. Moor.

The other living churches of the county are, Swedish Baptist at La Porte, organized in 1884, and the church at Michigan City, in 1889. Michigan City is another of those places where it has been difficult for a Baptist church to live. One was organized in that then young town in 1836 or early in 1837. Its life as a church was short. Again in 1853 a "newly constituted" church at Michigan City was "received" into the Northern Indiana Association. Pastor "Rev. A. Hastings." But soon its visibility was lost. A third church was organized in 1889 and it is not yet regarded as a self-supporting church. Seventy-nine Baptist are a small band among fifteen thousand people.

The early Baptist history of Porter County is obscure. Some claim that Rev. Alpheus French, known as Elder French, an aged Baptist minister, preached the first sermon in Valparaiso in 1836. Others think that a Baptist church was organized in Center Township in 1835 or 1836 by Rev. Asahel Neal and that he preached the first sermon in Valparaiso in the house of William Eaton. If such a church was organized it did not live. In 1836 there were in the county four ministers, Elder French, Baptist; W. K. Talbott, Presbyterian; Cyrus Spurlock and Stephen Jones, Methodists.

The present church in Valparaiso was organized June 10, 1837, with twelve members. First deacons, John Robinson and John Bartholomew. First clerk, Jacob C. White.

The name, First Baptist Church of Valparaiso, was adopted February 8, 1840. The first pastor was Elder French, who continued for five years. The second was H. S. Orton. The third was W. T. Bly, 1844

to 1847. The fourth was Elder A. Nickerson, for five years. The fifth was Harry Smith, 1854, continuing as pastor for six years. The sixth was G. T. Brayton for one year. The seventh was Jirah D. Cole, one year, May, 1861, to May, 1862. The eighth, J. M. Maxwell, nearly two years. The ninth, M. T. Lamb, one year. The tenth, Otis Saxton, one year, from October, 1867, to October, 1868. The eleventh, Elder Harper, for six months. June, 1869, "No pastor" is the report to the Association.

The next pastors were: W. A. Caplinger, two and a half years, W. A. Clark, nearly two years, E. S. Riley from October, 1875, to 1885 or 1886, then brethren Banker, C. J. Pope, Dr. Heagel, W. E. Randall, and W. E. Story, the last closing his pastoral work in 1899. In 1885 Rev. E. S. Riley was Moderator of the Association and Rev. C. J. Pope was Clerk in 1887 and in 1888.

The Northern Indiana Association with which the churches of La Porte, Porter, and Lake are connected, held its first annual meeting in 1837, extending into counties further east than at present. A division, for convenience sake, took place at South Bend in 1845, when 1,126 members were reported. Meeting in 1846 at Valparaiso, 654 only were reported. Of the pastor here at this time, a true pioneer minister, the following sketch is inserted:

Rev. William T. Bly was born in Norway, New York, January 20, 1812, studied at Hamilton, was married in 1839 to Miss Elizabeth Miller, sister of Elder Miller of La Porte, became pastor at Valparaiso in 1844. He also went into Lake County once in each month, and in 1845 was pastor there of the Cedar Lake Baptist Church, baptizing in that year, in the

Lake of the Red Cedars, T. H. Ball, Elisabeth H. Ball, Mrs. Sarah Farwell, Eli Church, and in January, 1846, Fanny C. Warriner. His salary was not large, and, like Rev. J. C. Brown, the Presbyterian pastor, he added something to it by teaching in Valparaiso a "day school."

He was a very earnest, devoted, faithful preacher and pastor. He was a pastor in Michigan, Indiana, Illinois, and Minnesota. He went into the last State in 1853, where he organized and assisted to organize several churches, and there died at Etna, June 16, 1897, eighty-five years of age. A few yet remain who knew him well in the days of his early ministry in Indiana.

In Lake County the pioneer Baptist families settled in 1836 and 1837 not far from the Red Cedar Lake. They were the large Church and Cutler families, the two Warriner families, and the Ball family.

Their church, taking its name from the lake, was organized June 17, 1838, Elder French, of Porter County, the minister present. Its pastors were: N. Warriner, ordained as its first pastor; W. T. Bly, A. Hastings, Uriah McKay, and Thomas L. Hunt. As missionaries and visiting pastors it enjoyed the occasional services of Elders French, Sawin, Whitehead, Brayton, Kennedy, Hitchcock, and N. V. Steadman, of Evansville, who in April, 1855, baptized the last member received into this church, Henrietta Ball, then thirteen years of age. In its life period as a church it had nearly one hundred members. It was quite a model church. Population changing, the record says, "some being about to remove," this church was disbanded January 17, 1856, having existed seventeen years. Its history is given in "The Lake of the Red Cedars."

Since the organization of that church in 1838, eleven other Baptist churches have been organized in Lake County, making twelve in all, and of these, two only, one at Hammond organized in 1887, and another at Hammond organized in January, 1899, are now maintaining church life.

In the life time of seven of the ten churches not now manifesting church life, were baptized one hundred and seventy-five, and of all these ten or twelve are now left in the county.

The Hammond church of 1887 reported in 1898 three hundred and two members. The "Baptist Messenger," a church paper, under date of January 21, 1899, says: "A few weeks ago the First Baptist church dismissed from its fellowship seventy-six members, who expressed their determination to organize a second Baptist church in Hammond. We understand that such church has about perfected its organization, assuming the name Immanuel Baptist church. We suppose that members of any society, who are dissatisfied with their relationship and associations, have a right to withdraw and make a society of their own."

The recognition of such a right is surely liberal and noble. Many have in the past denied it.

Of the first church at Hammond S. W. Phelps has been pastor since 1893.

In La Porte County the Baptists number about five hundred and fifty members; in Porter three hundred members; in Lake, at Hammond, three hundred; in Starke sixty, and in Pulaski, no church; in White about nine hundred; in Jasper one hundred and sixty, and in Newton four hundred. Total membership about twenty-six hundred. Of the eight county

seats, Knox, Winamac, Kentland, Monticello, Crown Point, have no Baptist preaching.

In the Northern Indiana Association, the churches north of the Kankakee, with 1,150 members, contributed in 1898, for their twelve different objects, \$6,886, or less than six dollars for each member. In the Monticello Association, number of members 1,400, there was contributed in 1899, \$10,456, or seven dollars for each member.

The Baptists do not seem to have held their ground well north of the Kankakee River. Nineteen churches have been organized in La Porte County; at Kingsbury, at Rolling Prairie, three in La Porte, three in Michigan City, at Door Village, Westville, Mill Creek, Wanatah, Pleasant Hill, Clinton Township, Macedonia, Salem, Galena Township, Byron, and Hudson. Of these four only are now living.

In Porter County have been organized the Neal Baptist Church in 1835 or 1836, the "First Baptist Church" in Valparaiso, the Twenty Mile Prairie Church, the "Second Baptist Church of Porter County," 1850, the Union Center and Willow Creek churches. And of these six there is one now living.

In Lake County churches have been organized at the Red Cedar Lake, West Creek, Lowell, Eagle Creek, Plum Grove, Hobart, Griffith, Ross, two at Crown Point, and two at Hammond. And of these the two at Hammond are the living churches now.

It thus appears that of thirty-seven Baptist churches organized in these three counties since 1834 but seven maintain an existence as this Nineteenth Century is about to close. It is easy to say that some of the thirty should never have been organized; and easy to say that some of them should not have been

disbanded; but who knows? Only the Omniscient One. In the seventy years of white occupancy many things have changed. Social centers and church centers grew up and changed; Baptist pioneers gave place to other settlers; pioneer centers ceased altogether to be central; and the German and Swede and Bohemian and many other immigrants now are on the localities where once the Baptist pioneers and the Methodist pioneers, and the Wesleyans and United Brethren met for worship. History teaches lessons. The Baptist history of Indiana never has been written. Its earlier history, in much detail, never will be written. But if, in many localities, in our good State of Indiana, Baptists have not flourished as have some other denominations, it has been in part their own fault.

Of seventy-five towns in the State, having each a population from five hundred to twenty-five hundred, and containing no Baptist Church, sixteen are in North-Western Indiana. Of nine counties with no Baptist Church Pulaski and Starke were two. And of twenty-eight county seats without a Baptist Church we have of these only five.

There may be such a thing as denominational pride, there may sometimes be even church rivalry; but the historic facts above recorded seem to teach that there is no need in every town, or in every county, for churches of each large denomination to exist. It is not so essential by what denomination the Gospel is preached. If in any community, and in every community, there is one Evangelical Church, then there the Gospel can go forth on its mission to the hearts of the people; and there may be found those who are among the choice number called "the light of the world" and "the salt of the earth."

Connected with most of the Baptist churches are Young People's Societies or Unions, the letters representing which are, B. Y. P. U.

North of the Kankakee River these are (1899) the figures including active and associate members: At Kingsbury 35, at Michigan City 37, at Valparaiso 40, at Hammond 62, at La Porte 75; total 249. South of the Kankakee, some reports for 1899, some for 1898, Seniors and Juniors, at Burnettsville 90, at Beaver City 35, at Goodland 124, at Milroy 71, at Monon 108, at Rensselaer 40, at Mount Ayr 28, at Sitka 67, at Wolcott 61; total 563. Grand total 812.

8. The Lutherans.

In La Porte County of this large and wealthy body of Protestant Christians there are two varieties, the churches being connected with two different synods.

At Michigan City are two churches belonging to the Ohio Synod. The buildings are nearly opposite each other, both large, massive looking brick structures, and each having a church school attached.

1. St. Paul's Church, families 500.

2. St. John's Church, families 475.

The other Lutheran churches in La Porte County are the following, the figures attached denoting the entire membership of all the families connected with each church, called the number of souls, the families averaging about six members each:

La Porte, George Link, pastor, 2,070; Wanatah, F. Heickhoff, pastor, 500; Tracy, 197; Hanna, 153; A. Neuendorf, pastor of both; Otis, M. C. Brade, 361. Also in La Porte a Swedish Lutheran.

In Porter County. Valparaiso, A. Rehwaldt,

640; Kouts, A. Baumann, 325; Chesterton, 135. A Swedish Lutheran at Baillytown.

In Starke County: North Judson, W. Roesener, 405; San Pierre, probably 200; Winona, 185.

In Pulaski County: Winamac, 65; Denham, 290; Medaryville, A. Baumann, 60.

In White County: Reynolds, J. Lindhorst, 393.

In Jasper County: Fair Oaks, G. Bauer, pastor, 125; Kniman, same pastor, 83; Wheatfield, perhaps 60.

In Newton County: Goodland, G. Bauer, 155; at Morocco, a congregation, 36.

There are also preaching places, with small congregations, number of members not ascertained, at McCool in Porter County; at Westville in La Porte, and at Hamlet in Starke County.

In Lake County are the following, with date of building attached:

1. Trinity Church at Crown Point, first building, frame, 1869; second, large brick building, 1886. Pastor from 1871 to 1890, Rev. G. Heintz. Since 1890, Rev. August Schuelke. Members, 594.

2. St. Paul's at Deer Creek, 1886. Pastor, Rev. G. Heintz, 80.

3. Trinity Church at Hobart, 1874, German Lutheran. Pastor, Rev. E. R. Schuelke. Members, 649.

4. Swedish Lutheran at Hobart, 1873.

5. St. John's Church at Tolleston, 1869. Pastor, Rev. A. Rump, 484.

6. Swedish Lutheran at Miller's Station, 189.

7. Church at Hammond, South Side, 1883; second building, brick, 1889. Rev. W. Dau, 1,257.

8. Church at Hammond, North Side, 1889. Rev. W. Brauer, 496.

9. Church at Whiting, Rev. P. Wille, 235. Orchard Grove congregation, 56.

9. "Reformed."

The churches of this variety of German Protestants are sometimes called "Evangelical," but are more commonly, by their American neighbors, considered as Lutherans. Holding to a great extent the doctrines taught by Luther, on some points of doctrine they follow the teachings of Calvin and Zwinglius. There are four churches of this variety in Lake County. Three are German and one is Hollander.

1. Zion's Church, in Hanover Township, north of Brunswick, established by Rev. Peter Lehman in 1857, with twenty-six members. A church building was soon erected and a church school commenced. Present membership ———.

2. Reformed Church near the southeast corner of Center Township, building erected in 1883. Members ———.

3. Reformed or Evangelical in Hammond.

4. Hollander Church in North Township near Lansing on the Highland road. Hollander settlement commenced on the Calumet bottom lands and along the Highland sand ridge in 1855. Church building erected about 1876. Entire membership about 300. There is also a Hollander Reformed Church at De Motte, in Jasper.

10. "Christians."

Some years ago Dr. T. J. Conant, one of the Bible Union revisers, mentioned a "large and wealthy community calling themselves 'Disciples of Christ,' the followers of Alexander Campbell."

The Journal and Messenger, of Cincinnati, October 5, 1899, mentions the Independents of England, the Congregationalists and the Baptists of America, and adds to these three varieties of Christians "Disciples," numbering, says the editor, hardly less than a million in all.

Why did that editor put quotation marks around Disciples?

In a table of seventeen denominations, including Jews and Mormons, published in January, 1900, by the "Independent," Christians are placed at 112,414, and Disciples at 1,118,396. Those called Disciples must be the body calling themselves Christians in Indiana, and in order to discriminate between Christians and Disciples as given by the "Independent," and between Christians as denoting those believing in Christ and Christians as denoting one variety of believers in Christ, quotation marks are, in this book, placed around "Christians."

In giving the history of Pleasant Township, which General Packard says was one of the most attractive parts of La Porte County, adding: "Its rich and flower clad prairies, its groves of noble forest trees, its numerous small lakes and flowing streams, combined to form a spot of unsurpassed beauty;" he makes this statement: "The earliest preachers in the township were Elder St. Claire, Campbellite; Elder Spalding, Baptist; and Rev. Geo. M. Boyd, Methodist." This sentence shows the titles in early times applied to ministers and the names given to three varieties of Christians. All readers will thus understand that by "Christians" Disciples, so called, are meant. This is a large and growing body of Christians.

So far as ascertained, they have three churches in

Lake County, at Lowell, in West Creek Township, and at Hammond. The Lowell church was organized south of Lowell in 1841, constituent members Simeon Beadle and his wife Sarah Beadle, William Wells and his wife Sarah Wells, Thomas Childers and his wife Sarah Childers, and J. L. Worley. In 1869 the members built a brick church in Lowell costing about four thousand dollars, of which sum one of the members, Henry Dickinson, gave twelve hundred dollars.

The church at Hammond was organized in December, 1888, by Rev. E. B. Cross. A comfortable building was soon secured, and a pastor resides in the city. The West Creek Church, a country church, was organized some years ago, and a good building erected, through the efforts of the Worley and Pinkerton families and some others who were members at Lowell. The location is a pleasant one.

In Porter County there are of these congregations four. In Valparaiso a church was organized with eight members, in 1847, by Rev. Peter T. Russell. In 1874 a large brick church edifice was erected and the congregation numbers more than a thousand members.

In Hebron a church was organized in January, 1870, with twenty-six members. A house was built in 1878 costing eleven hundred dollars. The first pastor was Lemuel Shortridge. Present membership has not been ascertained.

It is somewhat remarkable that the mother of Elder Shortridge, Mrs. Esther C. Shortridge, born in October, 1804, is still living, having quite good use of her senses and faculties, now almost ninety-six years of age. She has been a resident for a number of years with her daughter in the city of Hammond, and is a

noble illustration of what an aged Christian woman may be. Few are permitted to reach her age.

A third and a flourishing church is at Boone Grove, and the fourth is at Kouts.

In La Porte County there are churches at La Porte, organized in 1837 "by means of the efforts of Judge William Andrew and Dr. Jacob P. Andrew. Their labors were earnest, unremitting, and successful." This church has had both deacons and deaconesses. The latter at one time were Mrs. W. H. Calkins, Mrs. Angeline C. Wagner, and Mrs. T. J. Foster. The elders at that time were S. K. Pottinger and Isaac N. Whitehead. To have in a church elders and deacons and deaconesses seems like a return to Apostolic times.

In 1848 a church was organized at Westville by John Martindale.

About 1850 one was formed in Galena Township, "re-organized in 1872 by Elder Joseph Wickard."

In 1854 a church was established at Rolling Prairie which has been very flourishing, numbering in 1894 one hundred and sixty members.

About 1874 a church was organized at Wanatah, making five for La Porte County. Membership in the county in 1876, about five hundred. Other churches have been added to these, making seven for La Porte County, the church at Michigan City and one at Union Mills.

In Starke County, at Knox, a church was organized some years ago and a good building erected.

In Pulaski County are churches at Winamac, at Star City, and at Francesville.

In White County there are churches at Monticello, Reynolds, Wolcott, and Headlee.

In Jasper County are churches at Rensselaer, Wheatfield, Fair Oaks, and at Goodhope.

In Newton County, churches are at Kentland, Remington, Morocco, and Brook.

Note. For some reason or, perhaps, for no reason, it has been quite impracticable to obtain information, beyond my personal knowledge, in regard to the churches of this denomination. The pastor at Hammond, Rev. H. E. Luck, gave some valuable aid.

T. H. B.

CHAPTER XV.

RELIGIOUS HISTORY.

11. Protestant Episcopal.

1. In 1836 was organized the Trinity Church at Michigan City, the Rev. D. V. M. Johnson first pastor. For the first 40 years, up to 1876, the succeeding rectors and pastors were, with perhaps some others, G. B. Engle, Henry Safford, C. A. Bruce, W. H. Stay, E. P. Wright, R. L. Ganter, T. L. Bellam, J. F. Winkley, Dr. Reeves, R. Brass, and S. S. French.* Membership in 1876 sixty. Present membership —.

2. St. Paul's Church in La Porte was organized July 25, 1839. For thirty-seven years, commencing in 1840, the rectors of this church were, Solon W. Manney, H. W. Roberts, F. R. Half, W. E. Franklin, A. Gregory, A. E. Bishop, J. H. Lee, F. M. Gregg, G. J. Magill and C. T. Coer. The rectorship of the Rev. W. E. Franklin was terminated by his death. It is said of him that in life he was beloved by his parishioners and his death was deeply lamented. Membership in 1876 about one hundred and fifty.

3. The Episcopal Church at Hammond is much younger than the two in La Porte County. Meetings had been held in Crown Point and for a time there was an organization kept up, a few church members then residing in the town who were visited occasionally by

* General Packard.

the bishop. This was about twenty-five years ago. Meetings were held, first in Miss Knight's school house, and after 1881 in the Baptist Church on Main street. The few members removed, and as Hammond grew, in 1890, an interest having started there, a church building was erected and Rev. R. C. Wall became the resident pastor. The church is neat and nice; the congregation is not large, but composed of good citizens; the Sunday school is interesting. The following notice of a memorable occasion is from the report to the Old Settlers' Association in 1896: "On Sunday evening, November 3, 1895, was held in the Episcopal Church at Hammond the first Armenian service ever held in a church building in this county, conducted by Armenians, about fifty in number, and in the Armenian language. The service was in commemoration of the cruelties, the suffering and death of so many Armenian Christians, inflicted by the brutal Turks. There were prayers, responsive readings of Scripture, the singing of psalms and hymns, and the recitation of the Nicene creed, and an address. While the tunes, so thoroughly Oriental had a strange sound in western ears, the whole service is said to have been 'singularly interesting.'"

12. Roman Catholics.

In La Porte County there are: In La Porte two churches, St. Joseph's, which is German, and St. Peter's, which is Irish. The latter was organized soon after the city was first settled, and its congregation is large. St. Joseph's Church was organized in 1858 and a large brick building for the congregation was in a year or two erected, one of the substantial buildings of the city, the steeple being one hundred and thirty-five feet in height, and two chime bells, weighing one

thousand pounds each, soon were swinging in the church tower. In the centennial year of the country this church numbered one hundred and twenty-five German with some Polish families.

In Michigan City are also two, one of which is called St. Mary's, and one is Polish Catholic. Present number of families about six hundred. As the families are large, there are estimated to be "3500 people."

At Otis is a Polander Roman Catholic Church; this building erected in 1872. Membership, —.

At Wanatah is one, and one some two miles from La Crosse. In all seven. Membership about 900 families.

In Starke County are two churches, one at North Judson and one at San Pierre.

In Pulaski are churches at Winamac, Francesville, Medaryville, Monterey.

In White are churches at Reynolds, and probably other towns.

In Jasper churches are at Rensselaer, Wheatfield, and Remington.

In Newton County there is a church at Kentland and one at Goodland.

In Porter County, the early Roman Catholic history, as given by the Rev. Robert Beer in "Porter and Lake," is not flattering to the members nor to some of the pastors, especially not to one who was, he says, "a man of great learning, but totally unfit to be a pastor." After him came a young man, Rev. M. O'Reilly, with whose advent, "the organized congregation of Saint Paul's properly begins." "He found the affairs of the Catholic Church in the worst state possible, the church, poor as it was, closed under an

injunctio; law suits pending on every hand; debts unlimited to be paid; a bitter division of sentiment amongst the members of the congregation; no pastoral residence; no school for the youth." (Page 145 of Porter and Lake.) It was now January, 1863. The new, young, resolute, talented pastor began work. He secured possession of the church building, repaired it, bought land, started the St. Paul's School, secured as teachers "the Sisters of Providence," erected buildings, the Gothic Church building "153 feet long" and "with a steeple 108 feet high," and school buildings, obtained "a large parish bell, and a very fine pipe organ," secured harmony in his congregation, and in the first twenty years of his ministry "baptized about 1700 persons in his congregation." Says Rev. R. Beer: "The congregation is composed of several nationalities—Irish, Americans, German, French, English, and Polanders. All live in harmony, and their children are educated together in St. Paul's schools."

The other churches of Porter County are at Kouts and at Chesterton. The entire number of families in Porter County has not been obtained.

In Lake County are the following churches:

1. Church of St. John the Evangelist, at St. Johns. Brick building, 1856. First Chapel, 1843.
2. Church of St. Joseph at Dyer. Large building, 1867.
3. Church of St. Michael at Schererville, 1874.
4. Church of St. Anthony at Klaasville, 1861.
5. Church of St. Martin at Hanover Center, 1869.
6. Church of St. Edward at Lowell. First building, 1877. Second, October, 1897.
7. Church of the Blessed Virgin Mary. First building, 1867. Second, large brick building, spire

one hundred and forty-one feet in height, 1890 and 1891, at Crown Point.

8. Church of the Holy Apostles Peter and Paul at Turkey Creek. First building, logs, in 1852. Second, of Joliet stone, large, 1864.

9. Church of St. Bridget at Hobart, —.

10. Church of St. Peter and St. Paul, at Lake Station, 1861.

11. Church of St. Joseph at Hammond. First building, 1879. Second, large, two-story brick building, for church and school, 1889.

12. Church of St. Mary at East Chicago, consecrated October 26, 1890.

13. St. Michael's Polish Catholic at East Chicago.

14. Church of the Sacred Heart at Whiting.

15. All Saints' Church at Hammond, January 19, 1896.

16. Polander Catholic Church at Hammond.

Whole number of Roman Catholic families in Lake County, about one thousand.

13. Unitarians.

There is of this body of people one church or congregation at Hobart, in Lake County, and one in the city of La Porte. The one at Hobart was organized, with forty-eight members, August 23, 1874. For a time meetings were held in a hall, but they soon proceeded to erect a church building which was dedicated January 27, 1876, "Rev. Robert Collier officiating." This church keeps up its social and church life, has a Sunday school of about a hundred members, and a free circulating library of between seven and eight hundred volumes. The school library contains three hundred or more volumes, making in all a thousand volumes. Present membership, —.

The Unitarian congregation at La Porte was in part organized June 22, 1875, when Rev. Dr. Robert Collyer of Chicago visited La Porte and preached "with a view to the formation of a" Unitarian church. March 7, 1876, the Rev. Enoch Powell became pastor. For a time regular services were held "at the Court House," and a Sabbath school was organized.

Afterward a church building was secured, where the services were held. The congregation is not large.

14. Second Adventists.

This term by no means denotes simply those who believe in the return again to this world of Jesus of Nazareth, who at his first advent came as the Babe of Bethlehem; for all evangelical Christians believe that at some time and for some great purposes he will return. Nor yet does the term denote those who believe that the return of the Saviour to this world will be before what is called by many the Millennial Era, "the Times of Restitution of all things." But it includes, rather, those who, believing in such a return, believe also in the ceasing of conscious existence at death, or in the non-immortality of the human soul; and are therefore called sometimes "Soul-Sleepers." Some of these observe Saturday as their Sabbath, and so are called "Seventh-Day Adventists." Of this variety of Christians have been found five congregations in these counties.

In La Porte County, at Union Mills, there is one congregation with a good church building; in Jasper County, at Rensselaer, there is also one, called The Church of God, having a large church building and congregation and Sabbath school; there is at Star City, in Pulaski County, one congregation; and in White County one in the country not far from the town of Reynolds.

There is also a congregation with no church building at Knox in Starke County.

15. Quakers, or Friends.

Of those Christians bearing the above name, among whom, generations ago, William Penn was so noted, and who took such a large and noble part in the settlement of Pennsylvania, few have retained homes in any of these counties. Some came from New Jersey and from the Wabash in early years. One church building and one church organization of their form of faith and practice is found existing here now. That one is in the city of La Porte. The house is a plain looking brick building, erected a number of years ago. Membership not large.

16. "New Church."

Of those called Swedenborgians or members of the New Jerusalem Church, also called New Church, there is one organization, and that also is in the city of La Porte. This church or Society was organized June 14, 1859, although there had been the preaching of this faith in La Porte since 1850 by the Rev. Henry Weller. He became the first pastor and continued, until his death in June, 1868, to be pastor of this church. The second was Rev. W. M. Fernald, and the third Rev. Cyrus Scammon. Some of the wealthy, of the most cultivated, and of the most noted citizens of La Porte have had membership in this church. But it is evidently not here a growing faith. In the entire country are now about five thousand members. A few have resided in Lake County, but no organization has been formed.

17. Free Methodists.

In Starke County there are two churches of this denomination, one at Knox and one at Toto, each

having good church buildings. Each of these churches also has a good Sunday school and some excellent members. Membership, seventy.

In Jasper County, at Dunville and at De Motte are Free Methodist congregations.

In La Porte County at Springville is a church building and a prosperous congregation and Sunday school; also one at a country locality called Bunker Hill. Members in the county sixty.

The Free Methodist Church at Crown Point owes its existence to a religious movement which forms a singular chapter in the religious history of Lake and Porter counties. A brief notice of that movement seems desirable.

In the summer of 1876 there came to Ross a number of evangelists, English by birth and training, resembling in their teachings English non-Episcopal Methodists, but claiming no denominational connection. They came to the village of Ross from Chicago, where one of them was understood to carry on the business of a butcher. One of them, it was said, had been brought up a Baptist. They were in number six, Messrs. Hanmer, Andrews, Martin, Flues, Cooke, and among them was one woman, Mrs. Cooke, but not the wife of this evangelist Cooke. Others united with them. These held a series of meetings at Ross, and some singular conversions took place. They came to Merrillville and held meetings for many evenings in the old Wiggins and Indian village grove. Many there professed conversion. In the early winter of 1876 they reached Crown Point. A large warehouse was fitted up and called a tabernacle, and there daily meetings were held. But the room could not be made comfortable for the large numbers that at-

tended, and soon the use of Cheshire Hall, now Music Hall, in the center of town, was secured; and in that hall meetings were held day after day, night after night, not only for weeks but for months, making the most singular series of meetings connected with Lake County history. The order of exercises need not here be detailed. A record can be found in Lake County, 1884, page 216. The winter was quite cold, the sleighing was usually good, and from the country those who resided many miles distant would come each night, devoting their time during that winter largely to religious interests. All classes of citizens attended. The meetings would not fully close often until eleven o'clock at night. The record is that for some three months these meetings thus continued at Crown Point. Some strange influence seemed to bring together and to hold the people. Quite a large number professed conversion, and many were afterwards baptized. The baptisms were usually immersions, the administrator evangelist Martin.

Similar meetings, but not of so long continuance, were held at Lowell and Hobart in Lake County; and at Blachley's Corners and at Hebron in Porter County. Although at first and through the series of meetings disavowing any denominational plans or efforts, it was found by the leaders, when the results of the meetings appeared in the several congregations that were naturally formed, that something of church work must be undertaken. And so they organized churches in 1877 at Crown Point, at Ross; at Hobart, probably the same year; at the Handley school-house and at Hebron, having at Hebron eighty members.

The name proposed for each was, the Union Mis-

sion Church. Some church buildings were erected. A general superintendent or presiding officer was appointed, and for a few years systematic work was carried on. But the leaders separated. One became a Congregationalist, one an Episcopal Methodist; one a Free Methodist, and the new denomination of Band Mission churches was suffered to go down. The "Union Mission Church" at Crown Point became Free Methodist in 1881. As a result of that Band movement about one hundred and fifty were baptized in Lake County, quite a number in Porter, and four church buildings were erected, one at Ross, one at Hobart, one at Hebron, these at length becoming in name Congregational, and the one at Crown Point which became Free Methodist.

As early as 1882 the church, which had been organized with eighty members and which in 1878 had erected a building costing two thousand dollars, had lost its visibility, and in its place was organized in April of that year, a Congregational church of forty members. This church maintained an existence for some little time, but that has also disappeared and the two thousand dollar church building is now tenantless. At Ross, where the Band movement commenced, and where a good brick building was erected, the congregation is in part, denominationally, Congregational and in part Free Methodist.

At Hobart the Band Church is fully Congregational.

18. United Brethren.

The Christians that bear this noble name, kindred they would seem to be to the noted Moravians, are not very numerous in these counties. In Starke

County are three United Brethren churches, at Round Lake one, at North Judson and at Grovertown.

In Newton County, at Morocco, there is a strong, prosperous congregation. There the "Brethren" built in 1898 a brick church, a more than ordinarily excellent house for any of our towns. Years ago there were individuals and congregations of this denomination in other counties, but no other church organization, besides these four, seems to be in existence in these counties now. Professor Jameson, in his Dictionary says of the "United Brethren in Christ," as a body, "Its membership lies principally in rural districts and numbered in 1890, 225,000."

19. The Believers.

In 1878 there came to Crown Point a preacher who not long before left Scotland, where he had for several years been holding religious meetings in hamlets and villages and forming congregations of a somewhat new variety. He held some meetings in the Presbyterian Church. In 1879 he came again with a tent, and for a number of days and evenings held tent meetings on Sherman Street. As a result of these meetings a congregation was gathered from the then lately formed "Band" congregation, and from the Methodist, Presbyterian, and Baptist churches. This congregation, not large in number, and having lost some of the original members, has been holding regular meetings ever since.

It is not needful to endeavor to give here their peculiar views, any further than to place on record this statement, that they endeavor "to copy the simplicity of primitive Christianity."

A congregation of the same kind was some years later formed at Lowell, and these of late have held

their meetings in the unoccupied Baptist church building. Both of these congregations maintain Sunday-schools.

A third congregation was formed in Valparaiso about the same time that the one was formed in Crown Point.

These are not called churches, yet they seem to have some kind of fellowship with others of the same variety of Christians in Illinois, and some of them unite in an annual meeting in Chicago each fall or early winter. Their historic record is that they have proved to be very quiet, peaceful, pious, useful citizens. These three congregations number about —.

20. The German Evangelicals.

In 1855 an organization of Christian workers called The Evangelical Association, commenced missionary work in Hanover Township of Lake County. A church was organized and a building erected; but church life soon ceased.

In 1867 mission work was commenced by Rev. L. Willman at Crown Point. In 1874 a church was organized and a building erected. A congregation was gathered east of Crown Point at Deer Creek. Since 1856 about thirty different missionary and resident pastors have labored in Lake County, faithful and diligent workers all, but the membership has not increased for the last sixteen years, continuing to be about forty.

Again and again, in the records of this chapter, the same lesson appears: that there seems to be no need in every place or in every county for every variety of Christians to be represented. There are too many small interests. There is not enough hearty good will and fellowship among the different companies of the

Christian army, to enable them to march on, as some of them seem confidently to expect, to the conquest of the world.

Not counted in with any of the twenty varieties of Christian denominations that have been named, not numbered with these thousands, yet helping to form with these a little part of the great Church Militant, is a small congregation at Dyer in Lake County, constituting a Protestant Union Church. This church was organized September 20, 1891. A good house of worship was soon built and well furnished, and for now nearly nine years an interesting Sunday school has been kept up and Protestant worship has been maintained. For several months a student from a Methodist seminary at Chicago will be the "supply" for the pulpit, and then for several months a student from a Baptist seminary. But the church is Union, those who had been brought up Lutheran or Reformed, or Methodist, or Congregationalist, or Episcopal, or Baptist, or Universalist, all agreeing to worship and work together as Protestant Christians. The town of Dyer is almost entirely Roman Catholic, and they must as Protestants be a peaceful and compact body.

There are in Lake County two other undenominational church buildings, but no other Union organization, and at Kouts in Porter County there is an undenominational church house.

CHAPTER XVI.

SUNDAY SCHOOLS AND MISSIONARIES.

To a large extent the men and women who settled this region came from centers of cultivation and intelligence in older states, and brought with them the results of their early training. There were some families who had lived on frontiers before, and had enjoyed few advantages for education and improvement; but they were not the founders of institutions here.

It was but natural that those men and women with firm religious principle and with their strength of character, realizing almost intuitively that they were here to lay foundations for coming generations, should soon commence studying and teaching the Scriptures, and should have soon in active development what are called Sunday schools. They had brought with them their Bibles and their hymn books, and although the world was not sixty-five and seventy years ago as it is now, human nature was the same, the deep human needs were the same, and no book was so well adapted as was the Bible to meet these needs in the wilderness. The religious history and the beginning of church life have been given, so far as these records are concerned, and it remains now to look over some of the school records of sixty or more years. But the material for minute details has not been generally preserved, and a general survey of the beginnings in most of these counties is all that can be attempted here to be given. As prayer meetings were held, first in La Porte

County as the first that was really settled, and then in White, and in a few years in Jasper and Pulaski, and in Porter and Lake, so in these counties the children were invited to meet on Sundays in the log school houses, and to bring their Testaments, and to spend an hour or more—there was not so much hurry then as now—in reading and in reciting verses learned at home, and in singing some of the good, old church hymns, and in prayer. Those who have searched early records and conversed with the first settlers do not seem to have secured the dates of many schools or the names of the first teachers.

Incidentally, in General Packard's account of La Porte, it is mentioned that a Sabbath school was there organized in 1837, "in which A. and J. B. Fravel took a deep interest." And it is further mentioned, Rev. G. M. Boyd is the narrator now, that there was then no barber in La Porte and so J. B. Fravel cut the hair of the men, charging each man a dime, and appropriated the money to purchase a Sunday-school library. Also it is stated that on the Fourth of July of that year, "the little school was out in patriotic procession, "and that Daniel Webster, then in La Porte, "standing in his carriage addressing the citizens," said of the children as they came in sight, "There, fellow citizens, is the hope of our country." Perhaps this is the record of the first school and first library and first procession of Sunday-school children in this region. It may be that among the Presbyterians on Rolling Prairie there was an earlier school. Let him, who can so do, produce the record.

In 1843 Rev. G. M. Boyd says, "As the church increased, the interest in the Sunday-school cause increased. The returns show an aggregate of three

hundred and five scholars in the county." The schools continued to increase, and in 1876 there were reported fifteen Methodist schools and one thousand four hundred and eighty-two scholars.

Other denominations were not remiss in establishing and carrying on schools. The county of La Porte for sixty-three years has a good, but largely unwritten, Sunday-school record.

In Porter County, the first record of a Sunday school found, is in the history of "Porter and Lake," where it is stated that in 1838 or 1839 a school was organized by Benson Harris and Ira G. Harris, (who were sons of Elder Harris, a Baptist minister), and George Bronson. This school was near the present town of Wheeler. It is further stated that this school soon had an average attendance of eighty members and that sometimes more than one hundred were present. Some of the statements in regard to this school are such as to cast a doubt upon the accuracy of the record. A year or two later in date would probably be more accurate. The next record, and this comes from the pen of Rev. R. Beer, is of a Union school of eighteen pupils, organized by Mrs. Brown and Hugh A. Brown, wife and brother of Rev. J. C. Brown, in the fall of 1840 or in the winter. This was in what became the city of Valparaiso, and this school of eighteen members is said to have included "every child of suitable age in the neighborhood." It was held in the court house until the spring of 1841.

The children increased in number and school after school followed this one in various parts of the county.

The same course of events took place south of the Kankakee River. Some one started a pioneer Sunday school, and year by year other schools were added

to the number; but the names of those first earnest men and women are not at hand to be placed upon this page.

White and Jasper are the leading Sunday-school counties now, so far as the number of schools is considered, and it is a matter for regret that their earliest Sunday-school history cannot be given here. There may be yet living those who know it, or there may be some who have access to it. Next in the number of schools to Jasper is La Porte, and then Pulaski and Lake, which are in number the same. Whatever may have been its early history, Pulaski is a good Sunday-school county now. And Starke and Newton, with later beginnings, have worked nobly up. In Starke, in that part of the county where is now North Judson, the first school was organized in 1866, a Union school, William Palmore, Superintendent. Succeeding superintendents were Dr. Quick, and brethren Strong, Lightcap, and Jones. Another Union school, W. Palmore, Superintendent, was also organized in 1866, about four miles west of North Judson. This must have been about the beginning of school work in Starke. In the same year the United Brethren organized in North Judson with seven members, and about ten years later, an organization having been previously effected, the Methodists erected a church building in North Judson. In 1884 the "Brethren" also built a church, and then the Union school was divided, and two denominational schools formed, one meeting in the morning, the other in the afternoon, some of the children attending both schools.

In 1886 twenty schools were found in Starke, as reported in "Our Banner," a Sunday-school paper, called more fully North-Western Indiana Sunday

School Banner, published in 1886 in the interest of the "22d District," which included then as now the counties of Lake, Porter, La Porte, and Starke. Probably the oldest Superintendent in Starke County, that is, the one longest in office, is W. Lightcap of North Judson. He was in office in 1886 and it is understood that he is Superintendent of the United Brethren school still. He is a nephew of the earlier one of the same name.

Lake County has its Sunday school history for fifty years, from about 1840 to 1890, in a volume of two hundred pages, published in 1891, called "The Sunday Schools of Lake." In that work it is stated: "Wednesday, August 27, 1890, the 25th anniversary of the Lake County Sunday-school Convention was observed, as also the 50th anniversary of Sunday-school work in Lake County. To the observance of this double anniversary this memorial volume owes its existence." As in that volume the Sunday-school history of Lake County is so fully given, but little need be given here; only such statements seem needful here as will give some general idea of Lake County Sunday schools in connection with the schools in the other counties.

The first schools in the county were commenced about 1840 and some of them have been kept up through all these sixty years, while to most of the earlier schools changes came, and year after year new ones were opened.

The Lake County Sunday School Convention was organized at Crown Point in 1865. It held its "First Anniversary" in 1866, and its twenty-fifth in 1890; while the State Convention, organized the same year, in 1865, counted its twenty-fifth annual meeting in

1889. As in the year of this writing (1899) the "35th Annual State Convention" was held at Columbus, the State organization would seem to be one year older than the Lake County organization, which could call this only its 34th annual meeting. The difference of a year in numbering is only a different method of counting. Whether a child born in 1865 would be twenty-five years old in 1889 or in 1890 is not a hard question to settle; but of course an organization may call the day of its organization its first annual meeting, if it so chooses. It does not make it one year old on that day.

The Lake County organization, claiming to be as old in years as the State organization, held its second anniversary in 1867. Two days were devoted to the exercises. On the first day was held a teachers' convention. There were present by invitation, from Chicago, Rev. O. Adams, brother M. W. Smith, a devoted infant class teacher, and Rev. N. D. Williamson. Questions were investigated, How can the churches be more effectually enlisted in the Sabbath school work? What are the duties of superintendents and teachers? An address was given by Rev. O. Adams on "The Art of Teaching," the subject of "Teachers' Meetings" was taken up, and written questions were answered by brother Williamson.

In the evening an address was given by Rev. N. D. Williamson on "Claims of the Sabbath School on the Whole Community."

The next day, which was Wednesday, August 21, 1867, most of the schools of the county met at the Fair Ground. Addresses to the children were delivered by brothers Williamson and Smith. Rev. Mr. Clarke, of La Porte, spoke on "the best means of

reaching the destitution of the county," the Secretary reported the schools of the county, and seven resolutions were presented by Judge Turner, of Crown Point, and adopted. Also two were offered by Rev. T. C. Stringer, Methodist pastor at Crown Point. As showing what the county organization proposed to do, the fifth of Judge Turner's resolutions is here quoted: "That the work of the Lake County Sunday School Union is, the establishment in every school district in the county, of a Sabbath school, for winter as well as summer, furnished with blackboards and all suitable requisites."

The sixth resolution had reference to township organizations, and the seventh to sending out a Sunday-school missionary. In adopting these resolutions, and in undertaking this work, it is evident that the Sunday-school workers of Lake County had, as early as 1867, some fair ideas in regard to Sunday-school work.

The presidents of the convention for twenty-five years were Judge Hervey Ball, who lived to be about seventy-five years of age, Rev. H. Wason, who lived more than eighty-three years, Rev. R. B. Young, seventy-five years of age, Rev. Dr. Fleming, age at death unknown, Judge David Turner, seventy-three years of age, Hugh Boyd, of South East Grove, still living, between eighty and ninety years of age, J. L. Worley of Lowell, still living, seventy-nine years of age, A. A. Winslow, now American Consul in Belgium, and Cyrus F. Dickinson, of Lowell. First Secretary, Rev. J. L. Lower; second, Rev. T. H. Ball, from 1866 to 1877; third, Professor O. J. Andrews; fourth, Rev. T. H. Ball, from 1879 to 1890; in all twenty-two years.

Besides the regular convention meetings each year,

institutes have been held along the lines of these years by the county secretary, aided by others, at the Butler School, at Ross, Merrillville, Hammond, Hobart, Lake Station, Hurlburt Corners, Le Roy, Eagle Creek, Plum Grove, Orchard Grove, South East Grove, Lowell, Pine Grove, Creston, and Crown Point.

In 1890, when the work of organizing schools was about completed, there were reported forty-five "schools of the present," also forty-five "schools of the past," and twenty-two schools not connected with the County convention, Catholic, Lutheran, and Unitarian.

On Wednesday, August 29, 1894, "The Lake County Sabbath School Convention" was changed to "The Lake County Sunday School Union." "A new constitution was adopted and allegiance to the State Association was pledged. This action marks an epoch in the Sunday School history of Lake County."* It certainly did mark quite a change in some respects. A new name, a new object, a new constitution, and a new time for holding anniversary meetings. The old organization continued for twenty-nine years and then came to a sudden and unexpected close. The new one has not enlisted the interest of many of the schools of the county. What it may do remains to be seen.

* Quoted from the *Awakener* of Indianapolis.

SUNDAY SCHOOL STATISTICS.

Counties.	Schools.	Membership.
Lake	46	*4,500
Porter	39	*4,000
La Porte	59	7,460
Starke ..	26	2,027
Pulaski ..	46	*4,000
White	66	*6,000
Jasper	64	4,029
Newton	32	*3,000
Total	378	35,016

The figures here given, as to the membership of the schools, are not all of them in accordance with official reports, but none are less than the official reports at hand, and are sufficiently accurate for comparison.

MISSIONARIES.

Among those who have gone from Indiana to heathen lands as missionaries Lake County has sent out one.

Mrs. Annie (Turner) Morgan, a member of a pioneer family, the third daughter of Judge David Turner, was born in Crown Point; was a member of the Crown Point Presbyterian Sunday School, was educated in Crown Point, and at Oxford in Ohio; was married to the Rev. Freeman E. Morgan of Elgin, Ill., a Baptist minister, who spent some time in Crown Point, and the two, having been appointed as missionaries by the American Baptist Missionary Union, left for India by way of Europe, in October, 1879.

*Estimated.

Mr. Morgan was stationed at Kurnool, a city of 25,000 inhabitants, on the Tungabhadra River, in the Madras presidency of India, his field extending outward from twenty to forty miles. Mr. and Mrs. Morgan were members of the Telugu mission, fifteen millions of people speaking the Telugu language. The name was formerly written Teloogoo. For seven years valuable labor was performed among the Telugus, and missionary life was well learned, when the family were obliged to return to this country on account of Mr. Morgan's health. His affliction terminated fatally in a few years. Mrs. Morgan and her children are living near her early home. Twenty full years have passed since she went forth full of hope to do good service in the wide mission field, that "field" which "is the world."

Porter County has also been represented in the foreign field. Miss Carrie Buchanan, daughter of the Rev. J. N. Buchanan of Hebron, for eight years a missionary of the United Presbyterian Church, having her portion of the field in Egypt, returned to her home in Hebron on account of failing health in the fall of 1899. It is understood that she will soon return to her Egyptian field.

White County has a representative now in Persia as a missionary physician. Miss Emma T. Miller was born in Monon, then called Bradford, received her first school instruction there and then at the high school at Monticello. In September, 1886, she entered the Cook County Nurses' Training School, Chicago, having some six years before, when fifteen years of age, felt herself called to do mission work. She graduated in 1888, in the spring, and the next fall entered the Womans' Medical College of Chicago, and graduated

"with high honors" in 1890. In 1891 she sailed from New York and reached Oroomiah, in Persia, where she became matron of the hospital which had been established there. "Her work consists in attendance on the patients in the hospital, teaching a class in Materia Medica, and answering calls from the people in the surrounding country." Dr. Emma T. Miller is still in active work.*

Presbyterian teachers in what Mrs. Moore calls Home Missions, aiding the colored people of the South. Mrs. Mary E. Allen, born in Indiana, for some years a pastor's wife in the South, established the Mary Allen Seminary at Crockett, in Texas, for the education of "colored girls," which was opened in 1886. Rev. J. B. Smith, then Presbyterian pastor at Monticello, left that church to take charge of the Seminary. The teachers from northwestern Indiana have been: Miss Margaret P. Bolles, from Remington, a teacher there in the public schools, who went to Mary Allen Seminary in 1866, but who returned to Remington in feeble health and died in 1895, and Miss Ella Ferguson, of Monticello, now in the Seminary, "the head teacher, a noble woman and good worker."

Jasper County has a representative also in the same kind of mission work, a Baptist teacher, Miss May Huston, daughter of Rev. D. J. Huston, a noble, devoted young lady, teaching at Nashville, Tenn.

ORDINATION OF MISSIONARIES.

On Monday, May 28, 1900, at the Congregational Church in East Chicago, Rev. Thomas Gray and wife

* From Mrs. A. Y. Moore's "Sketches of Indiana Missionary Women of the Presbyterian Church." 1900.

* Mrs. Moore. Page 67.

were set apart to go as missionaries to Micronecia, They were both examined in the afternoon by an examining board and their examination was said to have been extremely satisfactory. The ordination services were held in the evening in the presence of a large audience.

CHAPTER XVII.

TOWNS AND VILLAGES.

In some stages of society and connected with some occupations, the history of villages, towns, and cities, is to a large extent the history of that region, for the people are mainly in the towns and cities, and from them usually go forth the guiding and controlling influences. But the more fully any region is strictly agricultural, the less number of large towns will it have, and the true history will be made much more in the country homes, on the farms and by the firesides. And as the counties south of the Kankakee are agricultural, their history is to a large extent the gradual increase of home comforts, the growth of school and church life, and the diffusion of intelligence among thousands of peaceful, prosperous homes. Yet villages and towns have sprung up, as the needs of the people, and an enjoyment of railroad facilities required, and a notice of these will give a quite full idea of the growth of the communities. As there are many of these villages and towns, the notice of each must be brief.

Remembering what the region was when we first took a mental view of it, as it was actually seen by a few in 1830, beginning with the broad belt of the Grand Prairie, its rich soil, tall grass, beautiful summer and autumn flowers, as it extended over the southern portions of what are now the counties of Newton and Jasper and White, and even up into Pujaski, and then looking upon Beaver Lake and the

“oak barrens” of the once large Jasper, and the “fly meadows” and timber lands of level Pulaski, having left the large water courses and the outcropping limestone region, and crossing the wet lands and the sand ridges south of the Kankakee, and passing on northward, glancing over the wide marsh and then the beautiful prairies and the thick timber and open woodlands, and rivers and creeks and small marshes and lakes, till we looked upon the broad waters of Lake Michigan, we shall now, as we go over this then Indian home and luxuriant hunting ground, find abundant traces of the presence, the enterprise, the skill of the white man.

Villages, towns, and cities are now to receive our attention, and their number and appearance, and resources, will show what seventy years have done in the progress of modern civilization. We start upon a railroad, and may as well look first upon the growing town of Newton County. As the results of the United States Census are not yet public, the population given is estimated:

1. Morocco.—Population, 1,000; location, southeast quarter of section 21, township 29, range 9. (As all of northwestern Indiana, as here included, is west of the second principle meridian, the word “west,” in marking or naming the ranges is usually omitted.) The following memorandum was given by a citizen for insertion here: “The town of Morocco was laid off in 1850, by John Murphy, an early frontier man. He was born in old Virginia, moved to Ohio when a mere boy, from this to Lafayette, Indiana, where he enlisted in the Black Hawk war, and after the Indian trouble was settled came to Morocco.” This was as early as 1833. He lived to be 72 years of age. The

growth of Morocco, as a village, was for many years slow, but in 1855, the Bank of North America, it is said, "flourished here," and it further said that the president of this bank was chosen for his skill in 'coon hunting. (The village at one time had quite a fur trade). The cashier of the bank owned the village smith shop. The amount of capital of this peculiar bank is not stated in the records consulted, but it is declared that, unlike the early "red-dog and wild-cat" banks, it did redeem its issues. The history of this village for the next forty years is not to be here given. It was in a quite inaccessible part of the State. North of it, covering nearly all of township 30, was Beaver Lake, and all the northern part of what was then Jasper County, was called, in 1856, in Colton's large atlas, "Oak Barrens," and no indications of any settlements appear on that map northeast of Beaver Lake. But Beaver Lake is not a lake now, and in 1889, the Chicago and Eastern Illinois railroad passed through Morocco and placed it in connection with all the world. It may be stated here that on Rand & McNally's new "Universal Atlas," up-to-date as that work is supposed to be, all the northeastern portion and nearly all the northern part of Newton County is heavily shaded as though representing marsh and swamp, or something of that kind. But one who travels over that region now, in township 31, range 8, and township 31, range 9, will find that this excellent atlas has hardly done justice to Newton County. Some sand ridges and a plenty of sand he will find, some marsh land he will see, but farms and ranches, and family homes he will find lying along the roads from Lake Village to Thayer and to Rose Lawn. From this digression, coming back to Morocco, as a

town, it was incorporated in 1890. In the last few years it has grown rapidly. The population is estimated at fully 1,000. Five brick buildings have been erected, including a three-story brick hotel; it has four churches, Methodist, Episcopal, "Christian," United Brethren, and Baptist, the last-named, a stone and brick building, commenced in 1899, and the United Brethren having erected an excellent brick church in 1898; it has a brick school house for 1900; it has a tile factory, and many business houses of various kinds. It waited long for much improvement, but enterprise and growth seem now to be imprinted upon the living town. The soil seems favorable for the growth of fruit. W. Murphy, on a little more than one town lot, raised, in 1899, twenty-two bushels of strawberries; and in July he had trees loaded with peaches, and blackberries were ripening then in abundance.

2. Lake Village.—Population, 120; on section 16, township 31, range 9, is quite an early settled place. It is in the civil township named Lake, and bears the name, probably on that account, of Lake Village. It has no railroad communication with the world, being about eight miles from Thayer or Rose Lawn. Westward, about eleven miles, in Illinois, is Momence. It is a place of some business. "The religious element is Methodist, Baptist and Presbyterian." It has had a Sunday school for many years.

3. Rose Lawn.—Population, 300. The name of this place suggests beauty. But a natural suggestion in regard to the origin of the name would be far from correct. Before the railroad was completed, now called the "Monon," which was in 1882, three men formed a company and opened a store on the line of

the coming road. They were: Jacob Keller of North Judson, Lon Craig of Winamac, and Orlando Rose of Missouri. A name was wanted for the locality and some one proposed to combine a surname and one given name and call it Rose Lon. The sound of the last name was slightly changed and so the place became known as Rose Lawn. No more wild roses grew there than elsewhere in Newton County, and on the ridge of sand there was no lawn. When, in 1882, the railroad reached that place it was for a time a terminus, till the track could be laid across the river and the marsh up to Lowell. Yet on account of its nearness to Thayer and an agreement that had been made there in getting the right of way, it was difficult to secure at Rose Lawn a side track and a depot or station. This was finally accomplished at a cost of about \$2,000. While quite a business point growth was not rapid. In the last few years many improvements have been made. There are several business houses, one large store with two rooms, a school house, a church, and the streets have macadam pavement. It is now a thriving little town, about four miles south of the Kankakee.

4. Thayer.—Population, 100. This village, on the "Monon" road, about a mile from the river, secured a station before the neighboring village called Rose Lawn, but it has not made as good use of its opportunities, and has not attained much growth. It has a good two-story school house, used also for Sunday school and church gatherings, and is slowly improving. It has some business houses.

5. Mt. Ayr.—Population, —. This town is on the railroad that runs north from Goodland, and is thirteen miles from that place, on the northeast corner of

section 23, township 29, range 8. The railroad passes from Goodland through the center of sections 26, 23, then northward through the center of 14, 11, 2 and in the next township of 35, 26, 23, 14, 11, 2, and then, still running north, cuts the east side of section 35, as in that township (29), the sections are far from being exactly north of those in 28 and 27. Mt. Ayr is about midway between Morocco and Rensselaer, being eight miles from Morocco and nearly due east. It is a pleasant town.

6. Beaver City is a railroad station on the northwest of section 2, township 28, range 9. It has one elevator but few houses.

7. Brook is the next station on the southeast, coming from Morocco. This is an enterprising and a true business place. Its inhabitants are ambitious. Its location is on the northwest quarter of section 19, township 28, range 8. It is in an old settled neighborhood.

8. Foresman is nearly east of Brook, on the other railroad, three and one-half miles distant, near the center of section 14. Like Beaver City, it is not a large place, but a good shipping point.

West of Kentland, among the names of railroad stations, is mentioned Effner. It is on the State line. It has no stores, no business to any extent. A school house is near the station, and a neighborhood of several families around it.

9. Kentland.—Population, 800. This town is the county seat of Newton County. The first house was built in 1860 by William Ross, who now resides in Indianapolis, and is nearly blind, but who happened to be in Kentland July 26, 1899, and stated that he put up the first building where the town now is, kept

a store there for several years, was the first station agent and the first postmaster. The court house was also built in 1860. It is a frame building, and is said to have cost \$1,000. It is in use still. The public square or ground in front of the building, is large, quite large, and is well supplied with shade trees. It affords ample room for the gathering of thousands, and for the ball games of the smaller boys, and is indeed quite a natural park. A stand and permanent seats indicate that the citizens meet there for public exercises on their gala days. In Kentland are four churches, Catholic, "Christian," Methodist, and Presbyterian. There are eight lawyers and five physicians. The town is supplied with telephones and electric lights. Oats and corn are shipped. It is but four miles from the State line and about one and a half from the county line, and is so near to the corner of the county that an effort has been made to have the county seat removed to Morocco, but at an election held in June, 1900, Kentland received 1,446 votes and Morocco only 1,398. So the county seat seems likely to remain at Kentland, and probably a new court house will before long be built.

10. Goodland.—Population, 1,800. This is the second town west from the Illinois line, on the Logansport and Peoria railroad, eight miles east of Kentland. Its area is nearly one square mile, section 26, township 27, range 8. It has five churches, Roman Catholic, Lutheran, Methodist Episcopal, Baptist, house erected in 1895, and Presbyterian, date of building, 1897. There are in town two elevators and one a short distance north of the town, and large quantities of oats and corn are shipped. This is a business town. One of the prominent business men

is J. A. Patton. He deals in butter, eggs, poultry, game, birds, and wool, shipping to the east. His business amounts to \$100,000 a year. Like Kentland, this town also has telephones and electric lights. The side walks are largely of Bedford stone. There are two banks, ten or twelve physicians, many business houses. There is a good school building. The town has the appearance of more than the ordinary neatness, thrift, and enterprise, characterizing so many of our towns and villages. There must evidently be among the citizens of Goodland much public spirit and intelligence.*

These ten are the towns and villages and stations of Newton.

Jasper County is almost entirely devoted to agriculture or to farming and stock raising, and its towns are few. In 1883, the Indiana, Illinois and Iowa railroad went across the Kankakee Valley from east to west, and gave three principle stations in the north of Jasper, Dunnville, Wheatfield, and De Motte. Oil has lately been found here, especially south of Wheatfield, and there may be large town growth here in a few years. These places are now not very large.

1. Dunnville, about two miles west of the county line, in Kankakee township, is a somewhat thriving town, the population being estimated at from three to five hundred. It has but one church building, which is Methodist Episcopal. There is a Baptist church in the township, and Baptist meetings were held in the town in the early summer of this year

* I am indebted to the very accommodating and intelligent pastor of the Baptist Church at Goodland, Rev. W. F. Carpenter, for courtesies and for information. T. H. B.

(1900), with much success. A school and some business houses are now among the necessities of town life.

2. Wheatfield is said to have been so named because it is situated where once was the first wheat field in the county. It is on the crossing of the Indiana, Illinois and Iowa, and what was once called the Chicago and Indiana Coal railway. The church buildings are: Roman Catholic, Lutheran, and "Christian." It commenced village life about twenty years ago. It is four miles west of Dunnville, and is now quite a growing town feeling the influence of the oil wells. Population, 500.

3. De Motte, eight miles further west, has not made a large growth since the first impulse which the railroad gave passed away. But it now has three churches, Methodist Episcopal, Free Methodist, and Hollander "Reformed." It has a pleasant location. Its population may be called 300. It bears the name of a former congressman, Mark L. De Motte of Valparaiso. There is a station called Stroutsburg, four miles west of De Motte, but not yet classed among the towns. About two and a half miles east of De Motte is a locality called Kersey, which is the point of departure toward the southeast for a peculiar railroad, the Chicago and Wabash Valley road, of which mention will be made, and on which villages are starting, to be known as Zadoe, Laura, Gifford, Comer. and Lewiston. These are agricultural shipping points on a private road runing through a large estate owned by Mr. B. J. Gifford.

4. Fair Oaks has a pleasant location, section 6, southeast quarter, township 30, range 7. Population about 300. On the high ridge of the town are the

school house and two quite new, neat-looking churches, the one "Christian," the other Methodist Episcopal. The town is growing.

5. Remington.—Estimated population, 1,200; date 1860. This is one of those growing towns on the Logansport and Peoria railroad. It is eight miles east of Goodland and sixteen from Kentland, and twenty from the State line. It has had a fair growth in forty years. Like Goodland, it is in a rich farming region. It has five elevators. Oats, corn, hay, and live stock are shipped. Also some horses. It has telephones and waterworks. The well which furnishes water for the town is 315 feet deep. The tower or standpipe is of brick for 80 feet, with a tank 24 feet in depth, making the entire height 104 feet. The churches are four: Presbyterian, Roman Catholic, Methodist, and "Christian." The various secret orders, so-called, are well represented. These are: Masons, Odd Fellows, Grand Army of the Republic, Womans' Relief Corps, Knights of Pythias, Daughters of Rebekah, Woodmen of the World, Rathbone Sisters, Eastern Ancient Order of United Workmen, Catholic Order of Foresters, Knights of the Maccabees, and Modern Woodmen of America. These all, and the four churches, are advertised in the Remington paper.

6. Rensselaer.—Population, 2,500. According to some authorities, the first settlement, in what is now Jasper County, was made where is now the county seat, the town for many years, and now the city, of Rensselaer. In 1834, so it is claimed, one family, John Nowels, his son David, born September 15, 1821, and so at that time 13 years of age, a married daughter and her husband, Joseph Yeoman, and a young

daughter, made for themselves a home at this locality on the Iroquois River, the place being then called the Rapids. Here Joseph Yeoman built the first log cabin on the ground where now stands the Rensselaer bank. It is evident that this account differs from that given in Chapter III, where the earliest settlers are named on the authority of the Historical Atlas of Indiana, the traditions and recollections on which that work is based having been collected more than twenty-five years ago, when many pioneers were living. That authority places the settlement at the Rapids in 1836. Mr. David Nowels, who was visited in his city home October 16, 1899, confirms the date of his father's settlement as having been in 1834. In some of these counties the records and evidences are such that there is no room to question who was the first settler. In others the question cannot be perfectly settled. That a cabin was built where is now a city, on section 30, township 29, range 6, as early as 1836, perhaps in 1834, seems very certain. The village that soon came into existence was called Newton, and it became the county seat about 1839. The first term of court was held in Newton in 1840. There came from the East about 1838 or 1839, James C. Van Rensselaer, a descendant of a wealthy New York family, who bought thousands of acres of land, built a mill, had the name changed from Newton, the name of that great philosopher Sir Isaac, to his own name of Rensselaer, and looked for the coming city. But in his day the city came not. In 1876, before the railroad passed through, it was called, by a writer in the Historical Atlas, "a quiet and, in some respects, an attractive country village." In what respects it fell a little short of "attractive" that writer says not. In

1870 the number of inhabitants was 617. It shared with Remington, that town having a railroad, in the commercial business of the county, but in 1876 Remington was called "the leading town in the county, both as regards business and inhabitants." But a railroad passed through in 1882, and then the town did grow. It soon became the residence of quite wealthy men who erected nice dwelling houses and solid business blocks. One of these men, Alfred McCoy, born in 1831, becoming a citizen of the county in 1852, owns in Jasper some five thousand acres of land, and commenced, eight miles eastward on the road, a villa, now bearing the name of McCoysburg. At this suburb of the real city cattle are sold and bought, pastured and fed, for some little time, and shipped to different parts of the country and to Canada. The cattle market is held once in two weeks. On Saturday, October 7, 1899, thirty-eight hundred head of cattle changed owners. Other wealthy men of Rensselaer have their individual interests. Mr. David Nowels, son of the first settler, owned at one time thirty-five hundred acres of Jasper County lands. Rensselaer has now two large school houses, with only a street and the school grounds between them—seven hundred and sixty-four school children in the city in 1898,—a number of church buildings, and a new large court house. The churches are: one Roman Catholic; a Baptist, a Primitive Baptist, and a Free-will Baptist, and a Presbyterian; a Methodist Episcopal; a "Christian;" and one Adventist, called the "Church of God." In all eight. Rensselaer was incorporated as a city in 1897. Population about twenty-five hundred. The Iroquois River runs through the city.

The water works of the city are somewhat peculiar. The water is obtained from two wells, one being two hundred and seventy feet in depth, and the other two thousand feet. The tower, one hundred feet in height, is not, as in other towns, a large cylindrical tower, but a comparatively small pipe firmly encased and surmounted by a water tank apparently about thirty feet in depth, but said to be forty feet deep. This "stand pipe" does not make as fine an appearance as the brick or iron cylindrical towers but seems to answer the same purpose.

"The Peoples' Pilot" of Rensselaer, early in January, 1896, issued a large holiday historical and descriptive number, containing information concerning the business men and prominent citizens of the town. Some statements gathered from that number found in the hands of Dr. Utter, of Crown Point, then a pastor at Rensselaer, have been inserted here. The statements coming from home writers are considered very reliable.

The Primitive Baptist church was constituted May 7, 1877, with seven members. First pastor Elder William Jackson; the second Elder W. R. Nowels; a building erected in 1892; about forty members.

A church called the "Church of Christ," was organized in April, 1887. A Christian Endeavor Society, in 1892.

The Presbyterians in Rensselaer had for some time quite a struggle for existence.

Commenced with nine members, "there were times when the church had apparent prosperity, but
* * * for long stretches of years, at one time from 1866 to 1883, not one ray of light came."

The church was constituted February 20, 1847.

Some of the early ministers were, E. Wright, F. M. Chestnut, and T. Wharton. For seventeen years the church had no pastor.

The first church building was completed in 1852. It cost \$1,200. A new church has taken its place now, but to the Presbyterians of Jasper, the old building is like the one on Rolling Prairie to the Baptists of La Porte County. One of these Presbyterian members, W. B. Austin, writes: "The old church has passed from our sight, but not from our memory. To many of us some of the fondest and sweetest memories of childhood and youth are entwined with the old building."

"Here was the cradle of Presbyterianism in this county; here were baptized as infants and adults representatives of almost every family in the town and surrounding country."

"The songs, the Sunday school, the Christmas entertainments, the festivals, the harvest homes, the choir practices, the installations, have so engraven themselves that the lapse of years will not eradicate them." It speaks well for a community when, in the hearts of many such associations cluster around a church building.

The pastor at Rensselear in 1895 was Rev. M. R. Paradis.

The Odd Fellows' Lodge, erected in 1896, cost \$9,000. The O. F. hall is considered equal to any in the State.

Near Rensselaer are the St. Joseph's College and the Indian Normal School.

The Catholic church, called St. Augustine's church, is quite strong, the membership being given as five hundred, or one hundred families.

CHAPTER XVIII.

TOWNS AND VILLAGES.

In White County the large towns are not many. Eleven villages and towns will be named here. In the northeastern part of the county are three country villages having schools, some business, and mail facilities, but on no railroad. These are Buffalo, Sitka, and New Bedford. West of these, on two railroads is Monon, formerly called Bradford.

It is on section 21, township 28, range 4, laid out originally on the northeast quarter of the section by James Brooks, James K. Wilson and Benjamin Ball in 1854 laid out additions. The first house was built in 1853. Joseph Chamberlain built a storeroom in connection with his dwelling house. Two other houses were built in the same year.

In 1879 the town was incorporated with the name Monon. It is quite a shipping point for grain. Three hundred thousand bushels shipped in a year.

In Monon are now streets paved with stone, the macadam pavement it is called, some well built business houses, a good-sized school house, and three churches.

These are: Methodist Episcopal, Baptist, and Presbyterian.

A small stream runs near the town. The two railroads make considerable business. The town has

improved quite a little in the last few years. Population probably six hundred.

Wolcott, in White County, is the next town east of Remington, five miles, on the same railroad. Its population is about eight hundred. The churches are three, Methodist Episcopal, "Christian," and Baptist. There are three physicians and two lawyers. This is a great grain shipping point. There are two elevators, and it is said that as many as 10,000 bushels of oats and corn have been taken in on one day. One of the best, if not the very best, road in all Northern Indiana extends for four miles north of Wolcott, up near to the "Blue Sea." It is hard, smooth, and surely will be durable, made of crushed bowlders. Travelling on this road is delightful. In fact, this county is in advance of the other seven counties, unless it may be Lake, in improved roads. In White County, the construction of gravel roads commenced in 1885. Some have been made by private enterprise, but mostly they are built by the township or county. But see "Improved Roads."

Near Wolcott is a large sand bed covering an area of ten or fifteen acres from which sand excellent glass tumblers are made. No doubt much nice glass ware could be made from this sand. It lies about four feet from the surface and has been examined to a depth of one hundred and forty feet without reaching the bottom. Probably some day at Wolcott will be a large manufactory for glass ware.

The town now has three dry goods stores, five grocery stores, one furniture store, two banks, and a good, frame school house, with five teachers.. It is thirteen and a half miles from the south line of White County. In 1859 it was all open prairie, a part of

the Grand Prairie which extended over all the south parts of Newton and Jasper counties, and across the western part of White up into Pulaski. As might be expected from a prairie region, much hay is shipped as well as corn and oats. As a railroad station Wolcott dates from 1860 as do the other towns on this line. It is a neat looking town, evidently improving. Forty years it has had of growth.

Reynolds, west from Logansport twenty-seven miles on the crossing of the New Albany and Logansport and Peoria roads, while an old station, has not advanced rapidly. The estimated population is five hundred.

The churches are: Catholic, Lutheran, Methodist Episcopal, "Christian," and, counting one out a little way in the country, Advent. In all five.

Seafeld is a station six miles west of Reynolds. One church; M. E.

Chalmers. Population 800.—This place, which bears the name of one of the great and good men of Scotland, is south of Reynolds about seven miles, on the same road. There are three churches, one Presbyterian, one Methodist, one Baptist, and business houses such as would be needful in such a town. The people are enterprising.

This was first called Mudge's Station, a house having been built by a man named Mudge, probably in 1853.

The Methodist church here, erected in 1881, cost \$1,500, and will seat five hundred people.

Six miles east of Monticello is a station called Idaville. It is in the center of section 28, township 27, range 2, twelve miles east from Reynolds.

There is here quite a large Presbyterian congrega-

tion and a Sunday school with about one hundred members. It is a place of some business.

Burnettsville, three miles further east on the same road, is on the northwest quarter of section 25, township 27, range 2. This is quite a town. It is very near the southeast corner of the county. The Baptist church here numbers 184 members.

There was an early town, which like many others, failed to live on into these latter years, situated on the Tippecanoe River, section 21, township 27, range 3, where, in 1845, William Sill had in operation "a merchant grist-mill," also a carding mill. In 1845 the town was laid out and called Mount Walleston, but the name was soon changed to Norway. In 1850 this was quite a village, competing with Monticello in enterprise and population. But it did not live.

As the name indicates, this was an early Norwegian settlement, and one of these pioneers from Northern Europe bought a thousand acres of the choicest of this land near Norway. A saw-mill was started here about 1833. The name of this then large land holder was Hans Erasmus Hiorth. Another of these Norwegians was Peter B. Smith.

Monticello. Population 2,000.—This locality, on the west bank of the Tippecanoe River, section 33, township 27, range 3, was selected for a county seat, named, town lots laid out and a sale ordered, in 1834, soon after the organization of the county. William Sill is called the first settler, who opened a store in 1834 and became the first merchant in White county. It is said that Peter Price built a cabin just west of Monticello in 1831 and became the first settler of Union Township.

In the new town Malachi Gray was the first hotel

keeper. Early lawyers were: T. M. Thompson, R. W. Sill, and Judge David Turpice, who at length became United States Senator. Early physicians were: Dr. Samuel Rifenberrick, Dr. Rudolph Brearley, and Dr. Alson Potut.

In 1853 the town was incorporated. A large brick school building was completed in 1870, costing forty thousand dollars. It has a massive looking court house which is elsewhere mentioned. In front of the court house, in the public square, is a well of cool water, said to be in depth one hundred feet, and on two sides are plain seats for about twenty-five men and boys. These boys of Monticello have a delightful bathing place about three-quarters of a mile up the river, where the bank is low, sufficiently well shaded, the place secluded so that no bathing dresses are needed and no intrusions feared; the river bottom sandy, the cool, clear, flowing water of the Tippecanoe deep enough for swimming and diving,—all the circumstances combining for pleasant bathing. And well the boys seem to enjoy it. Exposure in the sunshine in the water has fitted them to be what one has called “boys in their sunny-brown beauty.” And their stranger friend who visited them while they were diving and swimming in the morning hours of Thursday, July 27, 1899, and saw them in the afternoon of that day around the well and on the ground of the public square, reclining on the grass, calls these Monticello boys well-mannered. They showed no rudeness to a stranger.

Monticello has some streets paved with crushed stone; it has electric lights, telephones, and “water works.” The water supply is from a spring some twenty feet in depth. The steel stand pipe is one

hundred feet in height, or entire height one hundred and sixteen feet. The fire company have hose but no engine. The force of the water in the pipes is sufficient for their needs.

There are some neat residences in the town and some good business houses. There are three hotels and a boarding house.

There are three church buildings: the Presbyterian, a large brick structure, date 1873; the Methodist, also of brick, large, no date; and the "Christian," an older looking frame building.

Population about two thousand.

In Pulaski County as in White the large towns are few, and the first one to be noticed is the county seat.

Winamac. Population 1,800.—Note. Much of the history of this town was taken from a paper read by Mrs. M. H. Ingram, before the Woman's Culture Club of Winamac, April 29, 1899. I have added to the statements the results of my own observations and researches made in 1899. T. H. B.

In the year 1837 a trapper named Kelly built a "pole-hut" on the Tippecanoe River and resided there until his death, in September of that year. He was one of the first inhabitants. Two log cabins were in 1838 "Winamac's next buildings." The names of builders unknown.

George P. Terry and Hampton W. Hornbeck are the next residents recognized after the trapper Kelly and they occupied one of these log cabins, keeping house for themselves, obtaining some supplies from Logansport, depending on their guns and fish hooks for meat. Deer, raccoons, and squirrels were abundant, and their flesh, with a little salt pork, flour, meal, sugar and coffee, from Logansport, made good, hearty

living. These men were preparing land for tillage and not then directly building up a town. John Pearson, who seems to have had a family, before the year 1838 closed, occupied the other of those two log cabins, but soon built something more commodious. and then started a store with "two hundred dollars worth of goods and notions," selling to a few settlers who had founded the Hackett and Wasson neighborhoods, and to the Pottawatomies who brought in exchange cranberries and maple sugar and venison. When commerce commences town life soon follows, and more inhabitants came, and in 1839 the county seat was located. Twenty-two blocks were laid out in town lots and twelve streets located and named.

Twenty of these blocks contained eight lots each. Soon a government land office was located at Winamac, the one at La Porte, probably, having been removed to that place. The office was opened in a log building and entries of land were soon made. But the growth of the town was for some time quite slow. In 1846 there were about thirty families. In 1868 the town was incorporated, one hundred and seven votes then being cast. Churches, schools, banks and business houses came along, as the needs of the inhabitants of the now growing town required, and at length substantial, fine looking brick blocks were erected, the Keller block in 1880, the Frain block in 1883. The church buildings of the present are: a Roman Catholic, large brick building, quite massive amid the buildings around it, the most costly church building in the county; a Presyterian brick structure, fine looking, the second in cost in the county; the third in the town is Methodist Episcopal, a frame building, painted white, standing over the burial place, so tra-

dition says, of chief Winamac; the fourth is the "Christian" church, a frame building; the fifth is an old frame building occupied by the United Brethren and Free Methodists; and the sixth is the Lutheran.

Winamac has a brick school house, two stories and basement, built in 1895, costing twenty thousand dollars. A. F. Reid, Superintendent. Number of teachers, ten. School children in the town, five hundred and fifty.

Mr. Thomas Hackett is called the oldest resident of Winamac. Another old resident of the county is Mr. James Rover, living a mile and a half out of town, over the river, who was born in October, 1816. He is a good Christian man, a member of the Methodist Episcopal church, an active man, with his faculties still in good condition.

Being a county seat there are in the town many resident lawyers, among whom, in years, experience, and strong principles, Judge Spangler would surely rank high.

There is quite an industry in the edge of the town, a steam canning factory and hominy factory; buildings of brick.

The Tippecanoe River, a very pretty stream of water, is, at the town, one hundred and forty feet in width. The first island in the river below the town was the scene, according to tradition, of a sad tragedy in the Indian times. Their name for the island was Wasatch-a-hoo-la, the meaning said to be ghost or spirit island. Young Mi-neek-e-sunk-ta, "a dark-eyed Indian belle," was here one day with a young warrior who sought her love and wished to make her his wife. But already "to another tribal lover" "she had plighted her troth," and of course rejected his suit.

Then fully equal in savage conduct to the young civilized white men of our day who shoot the white maidens that reject their horrid kind of love, this young savage, in his disappointment and rage, tomahawked the beautiful belle upon the spot, buried her body in the sand of the island, and disappeared in his canoe. He was not quite refined enough, like some of our "high-toned" young men, to kill himself also, but lived, possibly, to regret, and it may be hoped, to repent. "Mi-meek-e-sunk-ta's spirit is said to appear there and chant its wailing song frequently at the midnight hour."

A fitting legend is this for the town of Win-a-mac, where the Pottawatomies lingered till 1844.

Next to Winamac in size are the following eight towns, villages, and stations: Medaryville, Francesville, Monterey, Star City, Oak or Parisville, Pulaski, Denham and Thornhope.

The comparative size of these will appear from the number of teachers, taken from an annual report of the Public Schools of Pulaski.

Winamac nine and the Superintendent. Francesville, Medaryville, and Star City four each. Thornhope, Pulaski and Monterey, two each. Denham, one.

Star City is on section 8, township 29, range 1, about six miles southeast of Winamac. It was laid out as a town in August, 1859, by John Nickles and Andrew Wirick. Village growth commenced in 1860. The population is about four hundred. Although not yet a large place it has become a great shipping point for horses and for sheep. It has a large brick school house erected at a cost of about five thousand dollars, a Methodist church, a "Christian" church, and some Seventh Day Adventists. It is a thriving town.

Thornhope, is a small village between Star City and Royal Center, a station without a station house, but a church, a school house, and a few families, a neat looking, pleasant, prosperous village. This is in Van Buren township, not far from the Pulaski county line. It is about one hundred miles from Chicago, as the Pan Handle Railroad counts the miles.

Nine miles northwest from Winamac is a station and a small village called Denham. It is six miles only from North Judson. It has a large Lutheran congregation.

Pulaski. Population 150.—A dam was placed across the Tippecanoe River at a favorable location and a saw-mill was put in operation there in 1854. In 1855 a grist-mill was added, and there a village started taking the name of the county. Across the river was a quite noted mound about twelve feet high and one hundred feet in diameter. It would appear, therefore, that this had been a chosen location many long years ago.

The present village is not large. It has a Presbyterian church with a good Sabbath school, institutions which the mound builders could not have known. Also a Roman Catholic church. The school house is of brick.

Monterey. Population 425, is on the Chicago & Erie road, eighty-four miles from Chicago. It has two school houses, one a frame building, the other a brick building. The churches are two: Roman Catholic, the building of brick, and Methodist Episcopal, the building of wood.

It is the only station in Tippecanoe Township and is near the river.

Oak, is the postoffice name and Parisville is the town name of this little place, population 75, in Van Buren Township, on the Pan Handle road. It has one church, Methodist Episcopal. In the school are 75 pupils.

Francesville. Population 900, is nine miles north of Monon, on the Michigan City Division of the Chicago, Indianapolis & Louisville Railway. It became a railroad station, and then a village and town, like other places on this line when the road went through in 1853. Its growth has not been rapid. It has three churches: Methodist Episcopal, Roman Catholic, and "Christian." It has a two story frame school building, with two hundred and ten pupils. The usual business houses and professional men, for a town of a thousand inhabitants, are to be found here.

Medaryville, population 700, is six miles north of Francesville, on the same railroad. About the same kind of soil extends through this portion of Pulaski County. The public school building at Medaryville is of brick. The pupils number one hundred and seventy and the teachers are in number, five.

The churches are four: Roman Catholic, Lutheran, "Christian," and Methodist Episcopal.

The business interests similar to those at Francesville.

Knox was the name given to the locality chosen in April for the county seat of Starke County. It is on section 25 and 26, east half of one and west half of the other, township 33, range 2. At that time it was land, soon laid out in town lots, but without a house. But building commenced, families moved in, village life commenced, and then a town was formed. Civil as well as social life began. Its growth for sev-

eral years was slow. Within the last few years it has improved rapidly. Brick buildings have gone up, large business houses have been opened, cement sidewalks have been laid down, and one of the best arranged court houses in Northern Indiana has been erected, completed on the inside with very modern improvements, at a cost of one hundred and twenty-five thousand dollars. The population is estimated at eighteen hundred.

The Yellow River passes a little east and north of the town.

In Knox there are a Methodist Episcopal church, a Free Methodist church, a "Christian" church, and a church or congregation of Adventists, these having no house of worship, also a congregation of "Latter Day Saints" more commonly called Mormons. These have a building of their own. The churches are frame or wooden buildings.

Knox has a good, two story school house, but not modern, like the court house.

Half-way between Knox and North Judson is a station called Toto. It is on the northeast corner of section 1, township 32, range 3; has a school house, two stores, a Free Methodist church, about a dozen families, and a postoffice. This postoffice is one of the oldest in the county, and its peculiar name, Toto, said to be Indian and said to mean Frogpond, was adopted by the railroad officials as the name for their station. For the original location of the office, a short distance away, the name is said to have been perfectly appropriate. Before the great and the smaller ditches went through the county, a frog pond, one of the oldest residents there says, the location was.

Drainage, good drainage, changes the condition of

land remarkably. The Indians would not recognize their "toto" now.

North Judson. Population 1,000.—This now enterprising town, seventy-seven miles out from Chicago, on the Pan Handle road, commenced village and business life about 1863. In 1867 "Keller Brothers," L. and J. Keller, commenced business. They had a store and a mill. The first year the amount of business transacted was about \$7,000. It increased year by year until it reached \$133,000. Their place of business is now occupied by "Craig & Kurtz," the house being called "Hardware, Furniture & Merchandise Co." Amount of business in 1899, \$50,000. Expecting to reach \$100,000 in 1900. Have shipped in one season two thousand bushels of huckleberries. The industries here are: 1. A curl grass factory, said to be the only one in the State. The native grass is twisted and curled into a form to be used in making mattresses. 2. A pickle factory, J. Nichols, Manager, started about 1890. Some 25,000 bushels of cucumbers used in a season. 3. A broom factory, to be changed into a different factory. 4. A sugar beet factory in near prospect. Seven thousand acres desired in an area with a radius of forty-five miles. 5. North Judson Brewery.

North Judson has four physicians: J. F. Noland, W. A. Noland, P. C. Enllerth, C. Waddell; and one lawyer, S. Bybee. It has three drug stores, seven business houses, two hotels. The brick school house, two stories and basement, built in 1896, cost \$12,000. The churches are four: Catholic, Lutheran, M. E. and United Brethren. Population one thousand; some estimate at twelve hundred.

Besides the Pan Handle railroad, the Chicago & Erie passes through North Judson, and also the Indiana, Illinois & Iowa, giving good railroad facilities in different directions. Incorporated some ten or twelve years ago.

It is located on sections 17 and 16, township 32, range 3.

San Pierre. Population 300.—The station and town bearing the above name has had an existence about forty-five years. It contains three stores and a few other business houses. It has four churches: a Roman Catholic, a Lutheran, a Methodist Episcopal, and an "Evangelical Association" church.

A brick and stone school house for 1899. Contracted to be built for \$4,224.

The town is not specially growing. Location, northeast quarter of section 29, township 32, range 4.

Next in size to North Judson among the towns of Starke, and next in enterprise and growth, is Hamlet. For some time it was only a quiet little hamlet and a station on the Fort Wayne railroad, but the Indiana, Illinois & Iowa road lately went through it to South Bend, and this seems to give it new life. The population is now estimated at four hundred. It is at the center of section 24, township 34, range 2, six miles from Knox.

Grover Town, on the Fort Wayne road, has not made as much advance in the last five years as has Hamlet. It is on the northeast quarter of section 27, township 34, range 1. Number of inhabitants about two hundred. It has a United Brethren church, a school house, and business houses.

Ora, in section 32, township 32, range 1, on the Chicago & Erie road, and close to the south line of the

county, is a young and growing village, with, perhaps two hundred inhabitants.

Between Ora and North Judson are two stations, H. Ba Aldine and Alida, making nine stations in Starke. all.



TY.

H. Ball.

all.

NA

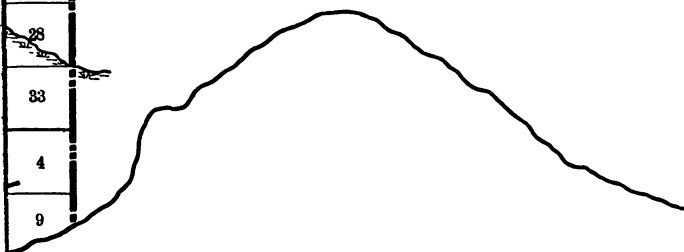


Hebron

R.

P

R.



J A S P E R

C O U N T Y

RANGE 7 WEST OF 2ND PRINCIPAL MERIDIAN.

THE
PUBLIC LIBRARY
OF THE
CITY OF
ALBANY
NEW YORK
JAN 1 1891

CHAPTER XIX.

VILLAGES, TOWNS AND CITIES.

LAKE COUNTY'S FIRST COUNTY SEAT.

On Colton's Map of Indiana, compiled from "authentic sources," published in 1853, among other towns located upon it may be found these five: Chicago, Indiana City, Liverpool, City West, and Michigan City. Indiana City was at the old mouth of the Calumet, on the shore of Lake Michigan, town lots having been there laid out and that name having been given to the place by a company of men from Columbus, Ohio. No evidence has been found that it ever had any inhabitants; but the statement may be taken as quite reliable, that in 1841 the place was sold for fourteen thousand dollars. It seems to have been made a city on paper, in 1836.

In this same year, or perhaps in 1835, John C. Davis and Henry Frederickson, of Philadelphia, and John B. Chapman called a Western man, laid out some town lots for a new city on Deep River, near its union with the Calumet, and to this was given the aspiring name of Liverpool. In 1836, for three days, lots were sold, and the sales amounted to sixteen thousand dollars. A deed of nine of these city lots, written by John B. Niles, then an attorney, acknowledged before Judge Samuel C. Sample, was preserved for

many years by John Wood the builder of Wood's Mill on Deep River. He and a friend bought lots amounting to two thousand dollars. As early as 1835 or 1834 a ferry boat had been placed on Deep River at this locality, the "pole bridge" in Porter County being then the place for crossing the Calumet.

In the year 1836, George Earle, of Falmouth, England, came with his family from Philadelphia, settled at this new city of Liverpool, and, having quite an amount of means, soon became the owner of a large part of the surrounding territory. His large ownership of so much of Lake County, then wild land, laid the foundation for the large wealth of his son, John G. Earle, now of Chicago. For some time the stage line, started in 1833 along the beach of Lake Michigan from Detroit to Chicago, had its route of travel changed to pass through Liverpool, perhaps, in 1836; but, probably finding too much deep sand to pass through, the stage line of travel was put back upon the more northern road.

This Liverpool on Deep River, some four miles from Lake Michigan and three from the Porter County line, became the county seat of the new Lake County in 1839. It would seem almost needless to state that it did not there long remain.

It is worthy of note that the land, on which this first county seat was laid out, was an Indian reservation, or perhaps, more accurately, was land selected under an Indian float. "In the Recorder's office is a copy of the patent, signed by Andrew Jackson, President of the United States, June 16, 1836, conveying to John B. Chapman section 24, township 36, range 8, being 603.60 acres, in accordance with the third article of the treaty made on the Tippecanoe River with

the chiefs and warriors of the Pottawatomies in 1832."

This same John B. Chapman also bought of Re-se-mo-jan, or Parish written also Parrish, as the deed says, 'once a chief but now an Indian of the Pottawatomies,' section 18, township 36, range 7, for which he paid eight hundred dollars. It would have cost him from the United States Government just the same. These sections, with some ten others, including the localities where are now Lake Station and Hobart, came into the hands of the final proprietor of Liverpool.

In Lake County are now two incorporated cities Hammond and East Chicago, and four incorporated towns, Crown Point, the county seat, Whiting, Hobart, and Lowell; also twenty-two other towns and villages; making in all twenty-eight, and with two post-office stations not yet exactly villages, Lottsville and Winfield, making thirty town localities for Lake County.

Brief notices of these are here given. The order is one of convenience rather than of age, size, or comparative importance.

1. Dyer. Population 400.—A settlement was quite early made near the Illinois line on Thorn Creek, where is now the town of Dyer. In 1838 a tavern or hotel, the first "State Line House," was there. In 1855, there were two places where travellers could stay, and a few other houses. In 1857 was opened a store, and village life commenced.

About 1855, A. N. Hart, who had been a book publisher at Philadelphia, settled with his family, three sons and one daughter and his wife, on the State line at Dyer. His enterprise and business operations contributed largely to the building up of the town.

His business manager for many years was Henry J. Prier, a young man of large business qualifications, of integrity, and fidelity. His management was excellent. He afterwards was connected with the McCormick Company in the sale of agricultural implements, and is now doing business in the same line at Indianapolis, where he has a pleasant residence with his wife and two daughters just east of the city limits.

A. N. Hart, besides carrying on through others a large business in Lake County, for some years was engaged in real estate business in Chicago. He had entered and purchased a large amount of what was called swamp land, east of Dyer and elsewhere in the county. In 1892 he held some fifteen thousand acres and its estimated value was one-half million of dollars. One thousand acres of it was sold in 1891 or 1892 for one hundred thousand dollars. A big ditch leading out of Dyer, extending five miles to the Calumet River, is known as the Hart Ditch, and it quite effectually drained what was once called Lake George, lying between Dyer and Hartsdale and Schererville.

Adding much to the business life of Dyer were also the Davis families, from England, settling later, one of the three brothers, George F. Davis, becoming one of the large stock raisers of the county.

In 1898 was erected a large, substantial and fine looking brick school house, with two stories and a basement. There are two church buildings; one a large Roman Catholic; the other, a small, neat Protestant church.

There are two quite large stores, one is a brick building owned by L. Keilman & Son; the other is a frame building, proprietor A. W. Stommel.

The great industry is the creamery, commenced in 1893. In 1899 the average amount of butter was about four thousand pounds a month, the average price about twenty cents a pound, and there was paid to the farmers for milk an average of one thousand dollars each month.

Dyer has had many years a steam flouring mill, but it is not doing so much work as in former years.

This has been a large shipping point, situated on what is called the Joliet Cut Off, connecting with the Michigan Central at Lake Station. The Elgin Belt Line also now runs parallel with the Cut Off from Joliet to Griffith, and then passing east to Hobart.

2. Schererville. Population estimated at 250.—Near the eastern limit of the southern ridge of sand that extends out from Dyer into Lake County, on a slightly curving road that marks the line, to some extent, of the old Sac Trail, is the village that bears the name of one of its early settlers. Along the wagon road, along that slightly curving ridge of sand that seems once to have been washed by the waters of Lake Michigan, thousands of emigrants have passed, on their way to the westward. This was for many years the great thoroughfare for western travel. Coming from the eastward through La Porte and Valparaiso then on the line of the old Sac Trail, crossing Deep River at Wood's Mill, now Woodvale, and then passing Wiggins Point, now Merrillville and going out of Indiana at Dyer, the lines of white covered wagons passed on to Joliet. Only those along that road, which was four miles north of Crown Point, had much idea of the amount of travel that passed over it.

In 1866 village life at Schererville commenced, and for a time its growth was rapid. It now has two

stores, a large, two story brick school house, and a large Roman Catholic church building. Sixty families are connected with this church.

3. St. Johns, or St. John. Population estimated 250.—The post-office department name for this place is "Saint John." In the county usage is divided. Some write St. John and some St. Johns. For euphony's sake the added s seems desirable. Southeast from Dyer four and a half miles village life commenced about 1846. Like Schererville, it is a Roman Catholic town. It has a large brick church, and had, about 1870, the largest Sabbath morning congregation in the county. It is near where the first German immigrant in the county settled, John Hack, and near where was erected in 1843 the first chapel.

The leading business men here are, Keilman, near the church, and Gerlach, near the station. Both of these men have done a large amount of business.

A large creamery has for several years been in successful operation changing milk into excellent butter. St. Johns is distant from Crown Point six miles.

4. Hanover Center, population about 50 commenced village life in 1855. H. C. Beckman opened here a quite large store, but afterward removed two miles west. There is still a store here; a large church, (known as the Church of St. Martin, connected with which are five acres of land and a cemetery, also a good parsonage), is a center of religious life in Hanover township; a school house is near; and other buildings belonging to a village, help to keep up civil and social life.

5. Brunswick, population about 65, two miles from Hanover Center and ten from Crown Point, and one from the Illinois line, began to be a business center

when a store was established there in 1858. For many years H. C. Beckman carried on here a large business, for a country store, having bought in a single day three thousand and seven hundred eggs and about three hundred pounds of butter. After his death, in 1894, his son, John N. Beckman, continued the same business, both father and son having been for some years interested also in raising Jersey cattle and in other home pursuits.

6. Klaasville, population about 50, some twelve miles from Crown Point, is a true Lake County village on the Grand Prairie of Illinois. It is a half-mile or less from the State line, and is on a prairie eminence from which a view can be obtained as far as the eye can reach, over that broad prairie that extends to the Mississippi River. H. Klaas settled there in 1850, a solitary German for a time. And as other families settled around him, and school and church life commenced, the locality became Klaasville.

These three places, Hanover Center, Brunswick, and Klaasville, are on no railroad, and their growth is slow.

7. Creston, population about 75, is on the Monon line of railroad, one mile south from Red Cedar Lake, and one-half mile west of the early center, where, in 1850 or earlier, village life commenced with a store, a postoffice, a blacksmith shop, and a school house. At that school house the Cedar Lake Sunday School and Cedar Lake church held their meetings for some years, the postoffice also bearing the same name, Cedar Lake. There were several families on their farms within the distance of a mile, but no compact village. At the railroad station, now called Creston, are two stores, a church, and a good school house. There are

near the station, about eighteen families. The families of this community are largely connected by blood relationship and marriage, being descendants of the large Taylor and Edgerton families that were pioneers in 1836 on the east side of the lake. Some grain is bought at Creston for shipment and there is a hay barn where large amounts of hay have been bought, pressed, and from which it has been sent to the great markets of the country. John Love ships the hay, and A. D. Palmer and Cassius Taylor are the merchants.

8. Shelby. Population 250.—In July, 1886 there was laid off into streets, avenues, and town lots, by a surveyor, under the direction of William R. Shelby, President of the Lake Agricultural Company, the southwestern quarter of section 28, township 32, range 8, and ten acres joining this on the northeast and fifteen acres of section 33, on the southeast, and the whole was called "The Village of Shelby." But village life, several years before, or soon after 1882, had already commenced, and the "Big House" was built, ice houses were put up on the river, the south adjacent area being then called Water Valley, and a large boarding house was opened by the Fuller family. Slowly for a time, in the last few years more rapidly, improvements were made and new families came in; and now Shelby has a large hotel building, two stores, also the Fuller Hotel, and a good school house with two rooms and two teachers. Hay, gathering mushrooms, milk, putting up tortoisés, ice, have been the paying industries, and now has commenced sugar-beet culture.

9. Le Roy. Population 100.—The railroad station bearing this smooth-sounding name is about six miles southeast from Crown Point. It was started as a

shipping point when the Cincinnati Air Line, now called Pan Handle or Pennsylvania Line went through Lake County in 1865, and a good shipping point it has proved to be. While supporting only three stores and containing about one hundred inhabitants, it has a good brick school house, two good church buildings, one Methodist, one United Presbyterian, maintains two good Sunday schools, has no saloon, and there were shipped from August, 1898 to August, 1899, fully four thousand tons of hay and a large amount of grain. Love Brothers alone ship over three thousand tons of hay. Le Roy has been growing in the last few years and it is surrounded by a growing hay and grain region.

10. Merrillville, population 100, at first called Centerville, was one of the early villages of Lake County. Started as a center of settlement, and so called Centerville, by a few families who settled on and around the old Indian village locality known as Mc-Gwinns, among these the Zuvers, Pierce, Glazier, Saxton and Merrill families, and J. Wiggins without a family, it received its later name from the Merrill families, who soon became prominent in the growth of the village. From Wiggins, who made his claim where the Indian dancing floor and burial ground were, which became soon the home of the family of Ebenezer Saxton, the woodland grove was called Wiggins' Point. This lone man died in the summer of that very sickly season, the year 1838, and his name has not been perpetuated. A few yet living have heard of Wiggins' Point.

The growth of the early Centerville was slow. When the railroads came they passed west of it, and north of it; but at length its citizens determined to make a neat town of it without a railroad. A good two

story brick school house was built, and then a brick church, and some dwelling houses of better style than the first ones, houses of modern style, were erected, a cheese factory was established, and with one store, one hotel, and a food-mill, containing now thirty families, Merrillville has become one of the substantial inland towns of the county. In school, Sunday school, and church life, its citizens take good rank. A macadam road now passes through it from Crown Point, through Ainsworth and Hobart and Lake Station, to the beach of Lake Michigan.

11. Palmer, population 85, is on the Chicago & Erie Railway, one mile from the Porter County line. It received its name from Dennis Palmer, who was a farmer in that locality for many years, now residing in the town. It became a station and so village life began in 1882.

It has a good brick school house, no church building, two stores, and is a place of some business.

12. Woodvale, population 50, became the early home of John Wood and family his own date being 1835, the family a year or two afterward. In 1837, a saw-mill was put in operation and in 1838 the grist-mill commenced its busy work, the only one for very many miles in any direction. This mill did for many years a large custom work. It finally became a large merchant flour mill.

Members of the Wood family have been for these sixty-three years the principal inhabitants of what may be called the family villa. Some of the second and third generations are carrying on the mill and other business interests now. The brick residence of Nathan Wood, the oldest son of John Wood, was considered to be in 1872 "one of the most city-like dwell-

ing houses in the county." The Wood family came from Massachusetts and brought with them New England intelligence and cultivation. Mrs. Wood, a very estimable woman, was a cousin of that Sarah Hall, who became the noted missionary Mrs. Boardman, and afterward the second Mrs. Judson.

The quarter section of land on which was the mill seat, the northeast of section 21, township 35, range 7, was patented as an Indian reservation to Quashma, and cost Mr. Wood one thousand dollars. He refused to lay out and sell any town lots, designing in that way to keep out saloons, and in that he was in his lifetime very successful.

13. Ainsworth, on the Grand Trunk railway, becoming a station in 1880, is quite a shipping point for milk, has some other business interests, with a population now of about fifty, fourteen families. It has a school house but no church.

14. Griffith. Population estimated 100.—This new railroad town had a good start. Founded by Jay Dwiggins & Company, then of Chicago, where the Chicago & Erie, the Grand Trunk, the Joliet Cut Off, and the Elgin Belt Line roads all crossed, the grandest railroad crossing in Lake County, about half-way between Crown Point and Hammond and at the time of a great real estate "boom" as it was called, in the north part of the county, some two years before the Columbus Exposition of 1892 and 1893, it had for two of three years a remarkable growth. Dwelling houses, business houses, factory buildings were erected, and it seemed for a time that it would become a city indeed. Work commenced in some of the factories, furnishing employment for many persons; two church congregations were organized and two Sunday schools, one a

Methodist and one Baptist, a Good Templars' Lodge was started, hundreds of people were there, and the prospect for permanency was promising. But some disappointments began to come; the large works stopped; something evidently clogged the wheels of progress; and soon many of the inhabitants scattered almost as rapidly as they came.

To the staid dwellers at Crown Point, who had seen their town growing for fifty years with the slow growth of a burr oak, a gnarled one even and knotty, it seemed astonishing how, for a time, Griffith did grow; it seemed almost magical how large buildings went up and people came flocking in; but the growth was more like a vine than an oak, more like Jonah's gourd vine "which came up in a night, and perished in a night." It seemed for some years that Griffith was almost deserted, but those connected with work on the railroads remained, a few other families remained, and for the last two years the place has assumed a more cheerful and promising aspect. There are two or three small stores; the school is prosperous; its location is good; and it may yet become quite a town.

15. Ross.—Population 75. As a village Ross dates from 1857. It is a station on the Joliet Cut Off road. An area of land consisting of forty acres on the south side of the railroad was laid out into town lots. For many years it was the residence of Amos Hornor, Esq., one of the noted pioneers of Lake County, whose early claim was in the edge of the West Creek woodland, known for some years as the Amos Hornor Point. At Ross also resided for a number of years, from 1860 until his death at an advanced age, the Rev. George A. Woodbridge, a pioneer minister, one

of the most thoroughly educated that Lake County has ever had, a native of Connecticut, a graduate of Yale College, the possessor of a large library, who first made his Lake County home on Eagle Creek Prairie, near the present village of Palmer, in 1839. One of the Haywood families and also the Holmes family, were residents at Ross for several years, and there a peculiar religious interest was awakened in 1876, which will be elsewhere noticed. Yet while a place of note in the county it has never attained much size. It has one store, a school house, and a church building, and quite a number of dwelling houses, but is not a place of much business. Some descendants of the early families still remain and school and church life prosper.

16. Highland.—Population 50, is on the grand sand ridge extending from Lansing, in Illinois, almost directly east near to Hobart, and on the line of that early stage road that passed from Liverpool westward to Joliet and northward to Chicago. A few residences were in pioneer times along that sand ridge and that road, but no village life commenced until the Erie and Chicago road established a station where the road builders cut through that broad ridge of sand (on the south of which was the Cady marsh and on the north the Calumet bottom lands or broad valley), in 1882. A store and postoffice, a good brick school house and two churches, twelve families, and a factory make the present village of Highland. It is distant from Hammond about five miles. Two miles north is Hessville, and in high water time the flood water of the Little Calumet covers nearly all the ground between. It is one broad sheet of water, like a clear, silvery lake. Highland, and the neighborhood

east of it are now, in 1900, growing with much promise.

17. Passing west from Highland three miles, having crossed the second cut in the sand ridge through which the Hart ditch has worn a deep gorge-like channel, one will find the line of settlement of the Hollander village fully commenced, a village of one street, four miles in length, along which reside sixty-four Hollander families; and from the school house, post-office, and store in the center bearing the name of Munster, the whole line, four miles in length may be called the village of Munster. The founders of this Hollander settlement, Dingernon Jabray, with his family, three sons among his children, Antonie Bonevman, his son-in-law, Eldest Munster, with two sons, Jacob and Antonie Munster, crossed the Atlantic in the summer of 1855, in the ship "Mississippi," landing at New York, and in August reached Lake County. The large Swets family and many others followed, until sixty or more families, with about one hundred and fifty children, now comprise this Hollander-American village of Munster. On the long street there is another store and, as a matter of course, a church. The building was erected about 1876. Value of church property, including parsonage, \$1,500. It is a beautiful walk from Lansing, just over the State line, eastward to the school house, the broad sand ridge on the south, the rich Calumet valley on the north. This land the villagers cultivate, raising large crops of vegetables for the city markets. It is not a manufacturing nor a commercial, but an agricultural village. The passing stranger might well call it a "Happy Valley." Across this village street, one-half mile from the Illinois line, passes the "Monon" rail-

road, making the third cut through this broad ridge of sand (a ridge covered with a growth of wood), and thus giving some railroad facilities without a regular station to these industrious and thrifty Hollanders.

18. Hessville, population 80, on what is often called the Nickle Plate railroad, is on a broad belt and ridge of sand north of the Little Calumet. Joseph Hess, a German, settled on that locality in 1850, just as pioneer life was closing, but before railroad possibilities were imagined; before, long before, any one could have believed Hammond, East Chicago, and Whiting, to become realities before the nineteenth century closed. Its first half was closing then. Joseph Hess kept and raised cattle. He opened a store in 1858, for the Michigan Central railroad had passed one mile north of him. Through deep sand for a mile he "carted" his goods, but not on a cart. Families gathered around him. In about twenty years his village contained twenty families. He was elected township trustee of North township, which then extended to Porter County north of the Little Calumet, and became the head man of that township, his little village its capital, his will controlling affairs almost as though he was a king. The families of the township were mostly German immigrants, late arrivals, and as late as 1872 it was true, as was then written, "the most of North township is as yet sparsely inhabited." His office and his large control, Trustee Hess held for many years, until Hammond became quite a little village, and then the influence and importance of Hessville began to decline. It had a dangerous rival and was in a few years entirely eclipsed. When the young Hammond began to grow Hessville was a center of influence no more. In

1872, in the school at Hessville, a two-story house, there were some seventy pupils. The school declined, but still continues. Hessville still has a store. It is a station on the railroad, and several German families still there reside. The village is Lutheran.

19. Lake Station, population 100, owes its existence to the Michigan Central railroad. It is therefore nearly fifty years old, and while for a time it was one of the great shipping points of the county, when there were only three, after other roads were built it lost its early importance and having no special interests to promote its growth it failed to make much growth. It has a good school house with two teachers, it has two church buildings, one Roman Catholic and the other Protestant, and one store. Some good families reside here.

20. Miller's Station, population 80, on section 6, township 36, range 7, is a station on the Michigan Southern and Baltimore and Ohio roads, near the northeastern corner of Lake County. For many years its growth was very slow, putting up ice in the winter and shipping it in the summer having been its principal industry. It is one mile from Long Lake, a mile and a half from Lake Michigan, with large sand hills on the north. Of late years it has improved very much. A gravel road was made from Hobart through this village to Lake Michigan, a good church has been built and a good school house, and its intelligent and enterprising merchant, C. F. Blank, has a large store and is prospering in his business. The village is mainly Swedish Lutheran. Some Germans, and some are Americans. All are true American citizens. Shipping sand from the large banks nearby is a profitable industry. About a mile and a half south-

west from Miller's Station, on the road to Tolleston, are the Etna Powder Works, on section 12, where several men find employment, and where some sad explosions have taken place.

21. Tolleston, population 500.—This is a German Lutheran town, founded about 1857, on the Michigan Central and Fort Wayne roads, is due north from Crown Point twelve miles, but the distance by a wagon road is about sixteen miles. It has two school houses, one parochial and one public, a large Lutheran church and parsonage, a number of well-built dwelling houses, and some good-sized business houses. In 1872 the number of families of the Tolleston community was eighty, and there was paid out to the workmen there about two thousand dollars each month. The number of families is now ninety-five, by actual count.

22. Clarke in the southwest quarter of section 31, township 37, range 8, on the Grand Calumet, nearly two miles from Lake Michigan, is a station and village on the Fort Wayne railroad, one mile north and two miles west from Tolleston. Its main industry is putting up and shipping ice. From this place some interesting relics of the past were sent to Crown Point for Lake County's semicentennial celebration in 1884, consisting of two pieces of bone, about four inches in length, taken out in 1882, with an entire human skeleton, from about two feet beneath the surface where men commenced digging a well. The Clarke of 1872, dating as a village from 1858, had that year sixteen families, with a population of about sixty. It has made very little growth since. It now has twenty-three families. Population 105.

North of Clarke one mile is a station on the Mich-

igan Southern road called Pine. It was not mentioned among the villages of the county as like Edgemoor, on the lake shore three miles west, the resident families are very few. At Edgemoor there is a small school, but none at Pine.

The stations Lottaville and Winfield have been named as localities that might grow into villages, and another name may be added to these, Hartsdale, on the Joliet Cut Off, a railroad crossing near the private stopping place at the Hart farm, now in the hands of Mrs. Malcolm T. Hart, a resident of Crown Point. There are at Hartsdale three dwelling houses and a hay barn, the land around the station being a part of the large Hart estate.*

There is a new station, and it may be said a village has commenced its growth, at the crossing, or south of the crossing, of the Joliet Cut Off and Nickle Plate road. It is called a Nickle Plate station and is named Glen Park. Its name indicates a Chicago origin, for Lake County people are not inclined to the name of Park. The population of this young town may be placed at 75. It has not, as yet, made much history.

INCORPORATED TOWNS.

Lowell—Population 1,300. History of location. According to the Claim Register, which is authority beyond question in Lake County, Samuel Halsted entered "Timber and Mill-seat," section 23, township

* Malcolm T. Hart, a son of A. N. Hart, one of the wealthiest young men of the county, one of the most gentlemanly and refined in his bearing, died at his home in Crown Point, November 14, 1898. Besides his wife, he left a young daughter, into whose hands there comes large estate.

33, range 9, making his claim in August, 1835, and registering it November 26, 1836. There is added in the Claim Register, "This claim was sold to and registered by J. P. Hoff, October 8, who has not complied with his contract, and therefore forfeits his claim to it." Under date of November 29, 1836, the second is: "Transferred to James M. Whitney and Mark Burroughs for \$212." This mill-seat does not seem to have been purchased by any one at the land sale. In 1848, A. R. Nichols and some others were found by Melvin A. Halsted as holders of the locality, then belonging to a canal company, the land then probably "State Land," and an attempt had been made by A. R. Nichols to build a mill-dam. Haskins and Halsted purchased the mill privilege, and in the winter of 1848 had in operation a saw-mill. In 1849 brick were made and a brick house erected, into which the Halsted family entered in 1850 as occupants and owners, and for fifty years that house has been the family home, when they have been in Lowell, one occupant only, M. A. Halsted himself of his family, being now left. In 1850 he went to California, obtained gold, returned in 1852, bought out the interest of O. E. Haskin, erected a flouring mill, and in 1853 laid out town lots and became the founder of Lowell. A small brick school house had been built in 1852, which was used also as a church. Village life had commenced. In 1856 the Baptist church was built. The structure was of brick, and was the result of the enterprise of M. A. Halsted, who was born in Rensselaer County, New York, who became a member of the Baptist church in Dayton, Ohio, in the winter of 1840 and 1841, who was married to Miss M. C. Foster in 1842, and became a resident of Lake County in

1845. His career has been a remarkable one, in going over the country, making money and laying it out in improvements, and by the citizens of Lowell and of Lake County his name cannot be forgotten. He is an aged man now.

About 1853 J. Thorn built near the grist-mill a small hotel and also started Lowell's first store. About four years afterwards William Sigler opened a store and not long after the Viant store was built. Inhabitants and improvements soon made Lowell a town. In 1869 and 1870 other church bulidings were erected and there are now four buildings, Baptist, Methodist Episcopal, "Christian," and Roman Catholic. In 1872 Lowell had the largest and best school building in the county, a commodious, two-story brick edifice, costing with the furniture, \$8,000. At the same time the largest other building in the county was then to be found in Lowell, an \$8,000 brick building, three stories in height, eighty feet long by fifty feet wide, designed for a factory. M. A. Halsted, then township trustee, superintended the construction of both these buildings. There were then in Lowell one hundred and six families. There are now about three hundred. There are of school children three hundred and seventy-two.

There was a Good Templars' lodge with one hundred and sixty members, and a Grange of Patrons of Husbandry, with eighty members. For some years Lowell was the strongest temperance town in the county. It is located in the heart of the best farming region in the county.

A few years ago a fire consumed a number of the older business houses, but the work of rebuilding commenced, and there are now solid business blocks,

halls for different societies, and on new streets, many fine dwelling houses. It is the principal agricultural business town of Lake County.

Hobart, population 1,500.—This now important town was founded by George Earle, who gave up his town of Liverpool after the final location of the county-seat at Crown Point, and built a dwelling house and erected a grist-mill and soon started village life where Hobart is now. As a town it dates from 1849. House and mill building at Hobart commenced in 1845. The dam was completed and a saw-mill commenced work in 1846. A grist-mill soon was added, and the Earle family removed from Liverpool in 1847. Town lots were laid out in 1848.

The growth for a time was slow. In 1854 the Pittsburg and Fort Wayne railroad came through Hobart and as a railroad town it soon increased in business and population. In 1872 it contained ninety-five families, Lowell having at the same time one hundred and six. It has now a few more families than Lowell. As the growth of Hobart has been promoted largely by the clay industry, and that will be mentioned in another chapter, it need not be inserted here. The churches of the town are: Methodist Episcopal, Congregational, Unitarian, German Lutheran, Swedish Lutheran, Roman Catholic, German Methodist Episcopal, and Swedish Methodist. There is a large school building for a graded school, the yard shaded with trees of native growth. In the north part of the town are many fine forest trees, and a quite retired street of good family residences. Besides the Fort Wayne, the "Nickel Plate" road passes through the town, and along the southern border passes the Elgin Belt Line.

While Hobart is a pleasant and a prosperous town and some of its inhabitants are good, Christian people, it is not noted for any careful observance of the Christian Sabbath. Its record rather is for a non-observance of that day religiously. A fair illustration is the following, taken from a published notice of a game of baseball to be played at Hobart by the Naval Reserves of Chicago at 2:30 p. m., admission rates, 15 cents for men, but the advertisement says: "This will be ladies' day and they will be admitted to the grounds free." The game to be on "Sunday," the word well displayed, "May 20, 1900." It is to be hoped that the ladies, the real ladies of Hobart, did not feel highly complimented by this advertisement. Public notice has this year been given that the owners of Monon Park, which for many summers has been a place for constant Sabbath desecration, have discontinued Sunday excursions. And even in Paris, it has been published, the strictly American part of the Exposition of 1900 is not to be opened on Sunday. By the observance of this day, or by its open desecration, it is readily shown what nations, towns, and families are.

We make our own history. Hobart is not the only one of our towns whose historic record, on the observance of Sunday, in regard to both business and amusement, is not highly creditable; but some of these towns are particular to hold their ball games, to which they also invite the young ladies, on Saturdays and not on Sundays. That Epworth League and Christian Endeavor girls would go out on Sundays to ball games is not to be supposed.

Whiting, population 2,600.—In 1889 some land was bought according to report, for \$1,000 an acre, and some nine hundred men were employed in erecting

what, it was claimed, would be the largest oil refinery in the land, the number of brick to be required in its construction was estimated at 20,000,000. This was the beginning of the work of the Standard Oil Company in Lake County. In 1890 about seventy-five votes were cast in what is now the town of Whiting. In 1900 nearly 1,500 votes are cast. The town was incorporated in 1895.

At Whiting there are five churches, St. John's Lutheran, Epworth Methodist Episcopal, Plymouth Congregational, Sacred Heart Catholic, St. Paul's German Evangelical. There are of lodges eleven varieties, lettered or named thus: Golden Star D. of R., K. and L. of H., A. O. U. W., I. O. O. F., K. of P., A. O. H., K. O. T. M., C. K. of St. John Com. No. 241., Rathbone Sisters, Whiting Lodge No. 613. F. and A. M., and Daughters of Liberty.*

The oil refining business has brought in many inhabitants and the growth of the town has been remarkable. Its location is on quite level land, along the first low ridge of sand that here skirts the beach of Lake Michigan. Westward to South Chicago are no large sand hills; nor any eastward for a number of miles. Southward also the land is quite level to East Chicago and to the Calumet. Southeastward the town touches Berry Lake, which is not large, and southwestward Lake George. The growth is mainly westward, between 119th street of Chicago and Lake Michigan. Some local estimates place the population at 6,000.

Crown Point, population 2,300.—When "Lake

* Whiting News, February 3, 1900.

County," 1872, was written, evidence was found that William Butler, in June or July of 1834, made four claims where is now the town of Crown Point, one for himself, one for his brother, E. P. Butler, one for George Wells, and one for Theodore Wells. Also that he had some logs put up for the bodies of two or more cabins. He made claims but no settlement. On the last day of October, 1834, Solon Robinson, with his family, reached the same locality, made a claim the next day, and had a log cabin ready for occupancy very soon. He was greeted the day after his arrival by Henry Wells and Luman A. Fowler, and they, in two or three days, bought claims, and "two log cabin bodies built by one Huntley," (these are Solon Robinson's own words), on the south half of section 8, paying for these claims \$50. That these were two of William Butler's claims seems to be certain, and he must have employed Huntley to pile up the logs ready for roofing. Soon, on this section 8, was a hamlet; for in mid-winter some other families came from Jennings County, from which Solon Robinson also came, and united with him in founding a town. These hamlet families, on sections 5 and 8, were: The Robinson family, seven in number, three of them young men, members of the family for the winter; the Clark family, also seven in number; and the two Holton families, also numbering seven. Thus there were twenty-one in all, forming a community by themselves, three married men and four married women, one a widow, five young men and two young ladies, four boys and three girls, manhood and womanhood, young men, maidens, and little children, the proper variety for a colony or a young city. Additional families soon came in 1835 and 1836, and in 1837 was

erected a log building for a court house and the place, now called Lake Court House, was becoming a village. Its history is lengthy, and a few points only can be given. It had a new store, a hotel, a postoffice, and in 1840 it became the county-seat. Its name was now changed to Crown Point. Slowly but steadily one improvement followed another. Brick were made in 1841, and the stick and clay chimneys began to disappear. A physician, a lawyer, and a minister came; new stores were opened; and schools and churches were organized and buildings for their use erected. By the year 1850 Crown Point had become a town, but an inland town, where quite a large trade in some lines was carried on, it continued to be, for fifteen more years, increasing slowly in population, feeling something of the influence of the railroad life that was crowding growth elsewhere, but enjoying not much of its advantages. At length, in 1865, a railroad came, and lines of iron rails and of telegraphic wires connected it with the busy, outside world. A new stage of growth commenced. New schools were opened, additional business houses started up, in June, 1868, the town was incorporated, in 1869 a fire company was organized, and large business blocks of brick and stone and mortar soon appeared. In one of these, erected in 1873, was Cheshire Hall, now called Music Hall. Of this Mrs. Belle Wheeler, wife of the editor of the Lake County Star, a granddaughter of Solon Robinson, wrote, as part of a semi-centennial paper for 1884: "It has been the scene of many happy gatherings, and its audiences have listened to some of the finest lectures of these times, the most notable of which were those given under the auspices of the Lecture Club, of which Mrs. J.

W. Youche was secretary, and from whose books we glean the following: There were given lectures by Prof. Swing, Rev. Dr. Thomas, Will Carleton, Phoebe Cousins, Fanny McCartney, Rev. Mercer, Gen. Kilpatrick, Mrs. Livermore, Mrs. Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Susan B. Anthony, Dr. Brook Herford, Benj. F. Taylor, Mrs. Dunn, a series of five lectures by James K. Applebee, reading by Laura K. Dainty, entertainments by the Hutchinson family, and others." "From its platform we have also often heard our own home talent, Rev. Mr. Ball, Judge Field, and many others."

After the brick blocks and society halls came banks, and electric lights, and telephones, and water-works, and paved streets, and a street-sweeper, and the different indications of having reached city life. In Crown Point the first Masonic lodge, Lake Lodge, No. 157, commenced with six members, dispensation dated November 11, 1853, charter May 24, 1854. Now there are lodges of Odd Fellows, of Independent Order of Foresters of America, Modern Woodmen of America, Knights of Pythias, Knights of Tented Macabees, Catholic Order of Foresters, Daughters of Rebecca, Eastern Star, National Union; also John Wheeler Post of G. A. R., and a Womans' Relief Corps. Also not secret a Womans' Study Club, a Pleasure Club, a Housekeepers' Club a Girls' Club a Musical Club, a Commercial Club, a Shooting Club, two or three missionary societies, a W. C. T. U., an Epworth League Chapter, and a Christian Endeavor Society. The life of Crown Point as a railroad town began in the spring of 1865, when freight and passenger trains passed through to Chicago. One of the new sights then on the streets was a dray, Crown

Point's first dray. This was a regular, two-wheel, one-horse, city dray, such as were common then and had been for many years in the cities. It was owned and driven by Robert Wood, who had lately returned from the army, and was looking out for business. He was kind, accommodating, and reliable; his vehicle could be seen somewhere on the street during business hours, and for convenience in moving many articles of freight that one-horse dray has not since been equaled. After a time it gave place to the large dray wagons drawn by two horses. In the spring of 1869 another new sight appeared. Velocipedes, the forerunners of the bicycles, began to be seen on the streets of Crown Point. After them the bicycles came, such strange vehicles as at first they seemed to be, of which hundreds have probably been used in these latter years by men and women, by girls and boys. Postmasters at Crown Point since 1836, from the Lake Count Star: Solon Robinson, Henry D. Palmer, H. S. Pelton, J. P. Smith, D. K. Pettibone, Major Allman, Charles E. Allman, J. H. Luther, Joseph Jackson, Henry Wells, W. G. McGlashon, George Willey, Z. P. Farley, H. J. Shoulters, W. T. Horine, J. P. Merrill, J. J. Wheeler, A. A. Maynard, F. E. Farley. Nineteen incumbents in sixty-three years. The father of the present postmaster and his grandfather, Joseph Jackson, both held the office before him. The churches of Crown Point are: Presbyterian, Methodist Episcopal, "Reformed" or Evangelical, Roman Catholic, Lutheran, Free Methodist, German Methodist Episcopal, and German Evangelical. Also a society of "Believers" occupying a hall. Commencing town life about the same time as did the county-seat of Jasper, only thirty-six miles away as a crow

flies, but separated for many years by an impassable river and marsh, Crown Point and Rensselaer have kept along in growth quite well together, Crown Point enjoying railroad facilities several years before Rensselaer and so having now a more city-like appearance, and this year, according to the figures given by the school superintendent of Jasper, Crown Point has a few more children of school age, yet one hundred more of inhabitants has been assigned to Rensselaer. It is claimed that Crown Point has more miles of paved streets than any other town of its size in Indiana. Like Rensselaer Crown Point has some quite wealthy citizens, and like its southern sister county-seat, many talented lawyers, and citizens who have gained honors in political life; among these, two former State senators, Hon. J. W. Youche and Hon. J. Kopelke, and a former congressman, Hon. Thomas J. Wood.

Hammond, population 12,000.—This growing young city was known in 1872 as the State Line Slaughter House. The sand ridges and marshes of that part of Lake County did not attract pioneer families. In 1851 the Hohman family settled on the north side of the Calumet where is now North Hammond, and on the south side, probably soon after, the Sohl family, consisting then of William Sohl, his wife, Mrs. Louisa T. Sohl, and some children. The third settler was J. Drecker, about 1858. Then came the Dutcher, Clayman, Booth, Miller, Goodman, Olendorf, and Wolf families, and some short time before 1872, about 1869, a company of men from the East opened there a slaughter house. Of this company George H. Hammond of Detroit was the capitalist, and when the place became a village, in 1873, his name was given to

it. In 1872 there was one store, and also there was a boarding house for workmen. Eighteen men were at that time employed, and three or four car loads of beef were sent off each day for the Boston market. What a city Hammond would in a few years become was not then foreseen, and, as being then almost out of the civilized world, there was no effort made to set an exemplary example, and for quite a little time the slaughter house work went on, seven days in the week, no Sunday being observed, no Sabbath being kept. But as growth soon began, a village started, and then a town grew up, and schools, and Sunday schools, and churches came rapidly into existence, and customs and manners changed. In 1879, Porter B. Towle, from Massachusetts, came to the new town of Hammond, and he re-organized the village Sunday school that was commenced as early as 1872, he gave literary and moral lectures, and in connection with a few others, especially one of his brothers, started cottage prayer meetings, and gave a new tone to the Hammond society. Hammond grew and kept growing, at first slowly, afterward rapidly; Sunday schools, churches, and societies were organized, and now, counting it thirty years of age, it takes good rank with the two large places of northwestern Indiana, Michigan City and La Porte, which have had nearly seventy years in which to grow.

Hammond now has fifteen churches, counting a Jewish or Hebrew congregation as one, and a church is not necessarily Christian. These are: Methodist Episcopal, Congregational, three Roman Catholic, one of these German, one Irish, and one Polander, German Methodist, German Reformed, two Baptist, "Christian," Presbyterian, Episcopalian, two Luth-

eran, and one Hebrew, called "Anshey Agudos Achim." Of social organizations, lodges and associations, there are in Hammond thirty-one making with the churches and Sunday schools sixty or more different gatherings of various kinds for Hammond's increasing thousands. Of these thousands, as will be seen in the chapter on industries, more than three thousand are persons employed in the five leading manufacturing and business interests of Hammond. In the city are some good business blocks, some substantial church buildings of brick and stone, some well-constructed school buildings. It has two banks, paved streets as a matter of course for a city joining Chicago, water works, an artesian well and also water from Lake Michigan, and two electric railways, one leading to East Chicago and Whiting, the other to Roby and South Chicago. Its industries will be mentioned in another chapter. It is still the home of M. M. Towle, one of the principal founders of the town, a man of large enterprise, of Porter B. Towle, editor of a daily paper, and in it resides Hon. C. F. Griffin, formerly secretary of state of Indiana. Just outside of Hammond, that is, lying north of Wolf Lake, is Roby, the noted, or perhaps, notorious, race course. The following extracts from a Chicago paper, connecting Chicago and Roby history together, will be all that is needful to give of a portion of history not creditable to either Hammond or Lake County. The date of the extract is August, 1896:

Time was when Chicago was a haven for race "fiends," as they are called. There is something suggestive in this word. Four years ago two race tracks, Harlem and Hawthorne, were playing the game alternately and making it continuous. In addition there

were pool-rooms down town. Then came the fight against the tracks and the pool-rooms. Finally followed the establishment of the Roby track, over the Indiana border. Here it was intended to race all the year around by a system of subordination, which gave employment to many persons in the vicinity of the track at extraordinary wages. The enmity of the Lake County (Ind.) officials was met and conquered, and for three years the Roby track and its later mates enjoyed immunity from local interference. At the Indiana tracks the foreign book-making, which was really a pool-room, was the profitable part of the business. It is only a few weeks since the Indiana courts after a prolonged litigation on the part of Gov. Matthews against the tracks, practically declared all the rights of the tracks forfeited, and they were closed.

East Chicago. Population 2,700.—This young city like the original Chicago, has had a rapid growth. The Penman family, the first resident family, established a home here in 1888, and now the estimated population around them is 3,000. Very literally in 1888 the place was "in the woods," marshes, underbrush, sand ridges, the characteristics of quite a part of North township, were then the natural features of the locality. Now there are various industries elsewhere named, long streets lined with city-like buildings, a large graded school building, and a bank, and many stores and business houses. It has water works and electric lights. Its churches are: Congregational, Methodist Episcopal, German Catholic, the St. Michael's Polish Catholic, and a Swedish Lutheran church. It has quite a number of social organizations, lodges and clubs, in accordance with modern

city life. Outside of the city limits and on the Calumet are the large Grasselli Chemical Works.

GROWTH OF LAKE COUNTY.

Owing no doubt to its position, its proximity to Chicago, and, slightly, to some natural advantages, Lake County from 1880 to 1890, according to the Census reports, made more rapid growth than any other county in all Indiana. In 1880 Lake County as to population was the seventy-first in the State, only twenty-one counties having a less number of inhabitants. In 1890 it was the thirty-fifth in population, fifty-seven having less. Its increase in population was 8,795. Its per cent of increase was 58.28. The next largest per cent was 43.76. Porter County, in the same ten years, gained in population only 825, and La Porte only 3,460, or 11.17 per cent. These two counties are next nearest to Chicago. These are some stages of progress: In Lake County in 1840, there was no church building. There were a few log school houses. There were two or three Sunday schools. There was a Baptist church organization and perhaps three Methodist organizations. The population was 1,468. In 1870, there were twenty church buildings, ten resident pastors, forty places for religious meetings, thirty Sunday schools, and the population was 12,339. In 1890, there were fifty-six church buildings, thirty-nine resident ministers, forty-five Sunday schools, sixty places for Sabbath meetings, and the population was 23,838. In respect to growth, as it is a question of fact and not of opinion, Lake may be called the "banner county" of Indiana.

The following figures will show the growth of the six towns of Lake County, the population for 1880 and 1890 having been taken from the Census reports,

and for 1900, being estimated from the public school enumeration, making allowances for the different varieties of population in the different towns:

	1880.	1890.	1900.
Lowell	458	761	1,300
Hobart	600	1,010	1,500
Crown PointI,	708	1,907	2,300
Whiting	115	1,408	2,600
East Chicago 00	1,255	3,000	
Hammond 699	5,428	12,600	

The number of children, on which the estimate is based, is the following: Lowell, 372; Hobart, 439; Crown Point, 700; Whiting, 640; East Chicago, 876; Hammond, 3,621. To Whiting is assigned a population of more than four times its school enumeration. To the others about three and a half times the school enumeration. And that ratio is generally too large rather than too small.

CHAPTER XX.

VILLAGES AND TOWNS OF PORTER.

Baillytown is not the name of a locality where American pioneers settled, as is Waverly, and as is Tassinong, but is the name given, probably by the earliest settlers, to a French and Indian trading post. It is claimed that in 1822, Joseph Bailly, a French fur buyer, who was in connection with Alexander Robinson in 1809 in the fur trade, opened a store and established a trading post on the Calumet River, four or five miles from the mouth of Fort Creek. His wife was an Ottawa Indian woman. They had four daughters and one son. The son died in 1827 when ten years of age, and at this time it is thought that the bereaved father erected a Roman Catholic chapel. At this locality Indians gathered to sell fur and purchase goods.

In 1837 there was here quite a cluster of cabins, a building then understood to be a chapel, store rooms and out rooms for the family, and also for the Indians who staid for days, perhaps sometimes for weeks. Considerable parties of them, on their ponies, would leave this place in the summer of 1837, pass through City West, go somewhere, the children of City West could only guess where, and return.

Joseph Bailly made money, and it is said that in

1834 he had some lots laid out in due city form so as to build up a town. But no American inhabitants came, the Indians that were there could not make a city, and in a few years the trader himself died. Some of the daughters married, but members of the family continued to reside there and the name yet remains.

CITY WEST.

Note.—This sketch was read some years ago at one of the anniversary meetings of the Lake County Old Settlers' Association, by T. H. Ball, the title then being "My First Home in the West, or Old City West." As written for that occasion it is quite different in form from what it would be if written now for this work. But the author hopes that no apology is really needed for inserting it here in its full form as it was then written and read.

The village, for it was more than a hamlet, that bore this significant name, among the earliest of those commenced in the county of Porter, is recognized as having had a very short existence.

Before proceeding to give what may now be rescued from oblivion of its actual history, I may be allowed to notice this question which some might ask, Why try to preserve any history of a place that was so short-lived? As planned for a large Lake Michigan city, it proved to be a failure and not a success. Let then, the oblivion which it merits cover all its history. Or the question may be stated thus: Of what use so far as the objects of history are concerned can the records of this short-lived village be? The first question or the first form of the inquiry, may be answered by another question. Why do wealthy families, and sometimes families not abounding in wealth, often

place in their burial grounds a costly slab or marble monument on which is engraved the name, perhaps the date also of the birth and of the death, of some little infant? An answer to this question will suggest an answer to the other. The "little cottage girl" whom the poet Wordsworth met, herself but "eight years old," immortalized in his beautiful little poem, held as firmly to her relationship to her dead brother and sister as to her living ones. And surely no local history can be complete which treats of white man's occupancy; that does not give some account of attempted colonies and settlements and villages and towns and cities, as well as of those that succeeded and are in existence now. The pupils in our schools who have learned of Plymouth and of Boston Bay colonies in New England history, but who know nothing of Weston's Colony, commenced "in the summer when nature laughed and the hillsides were gay with flowers, and the air sweet with the songs of birds," as a chronicler has said, giving the contrast between it and old Plymouth,—these have missed one of the grandest lessons taught by those old colonial settlements.

And those who have had no means of examining the records of the Spanish attempt to found a colony in Virginia, on the Rappahannock called the first European settlement in Virginia, made in the fall and winter of 1570, have missed one grand mental picture, which would have shown them Melendez, "the founder of Saint Augustine, the butcher of Ribault, the chosen commander of the Invincible Armada, as he stood surrounded by his grim warriors, planting the standard of Spain on the banks of the Potomac."

But the question in its other form suggests the in-

quiry, What are the real objects, the purposes, for which human history is, or ought to be written? Is it not largely to teach lessons, to impart instruction, to furnish warnings, to offer encouragements, to stimulate to new and praiseworthy undertakings, and to furnish some guide that may secure others against failure? And, if so, the history of failures as well as of successes may be equally valuable. Chicago, Indiana City, City West, Michigan City, all started some fifty years ago (when this was written) with the hope of becoming large, lake shore cities, great marts of trade, with fine harbors, abundance of shipping, large warehouses, centers of commerce where would be bought and sold large amounts of costly merchandise. One succeeded, beyond, doubtless, the most sanguine hopes of its founders. Two failed entirely and are not. The fourth succeeded, slowly for a time, but at length reasonably well.

I trust that I need no further apology for placing in this form the following particulars in regard to a "city" that was but is not. "Troja fuit," was written of an ancient town.

In the year 1836 four men,—Morse,—Hobart,—Bigelow, and L. Bradley, adventurers in the better sense of that word, having some means at their command, selected the mouth of Fort Creek in Porter County on the shore of Lake Michigan, about ten miles west from Michigan City, and about the same distance from Indiana City in Lake County, as an inviting place for founding a city that might compete with the then young Chicago and the still younger Michigan City in securing the yet undeveloped commerce of Lake Michigan. Of loaded freight trains on railroads they seem to have scarcely dreamed.

The selection was not badly made. The sand bluffs along that portion of the beach were large and grand. Fort Creek entered the lake along a bed nearly parallel for a little way with the lake shore. It was not a large stream of water, but it was not far southward to the Calumet River which it was designed to connect with Fort Creek by means of a canal. Actual surveys and soundings made in 1837 indicated that the natural advantages for a harbor were superior there to the locality chosen for Michigan City. In the fall of 1836 and the winter following quite a portion of land was laid out in city lots, Hervey Ball from Massachusetts looking for a location in the West, acting as surveyor and civil engineer. A saw-mill was erected by one of the company, probably Morse, a dam having been placed across the creek, buildings were erected, the large pine trees that grew on the bluffs, and other varieties of timber growing on the level and lowland, furnishing an abundance of good lumber, and village life in that winter commenced.

When the spring of 1837 opened the place began to grow rapidly as a new western town. Commodious and quite costly houses were erected; a large building was put up for a store and warehouse; hotels were built ready for being opened to accommodate the travelling public; a survey for a harbor was made, and an appropriation from Congress was expected to enable the proprietors to perform the needful work; and everything for a time promised an abundant success. The saw-mill furnished a good supply of lumber and the carpenters were busy putting the lumber into the form of houses.

There came from Massachusetts in the spring the two families of Hervey Ball and Amsi L. Ainsworth,

other families came in, and quite a little community was formed. How many families there were in all cannot now be ascertained; but the following names are preserved in memory: Ainsworth, Bigelow, Bradley, Ball, Chisleu, Ellis, Hobart, Morse, Muzzall, Sweet, Wheeler, and four other families at least are remembered whose names cannot be recalled. There were several unmarried young men, and in all there must have been some sixteen, possibly twenty, families.*

It is astonishing through how much one may live in a short period of time. The writer of this spent here some seven months of the year 1837, visiting occasionally the beautiful wilds around the Red Cedar Lake where was afterwards his western home; but here he took his first and ever to be remembered lessons in hunting; here he learned the grandeur of Lake Michigan in its native wildness and its varied moods; here he first learned the meaning of the solitudes of nature; here he learned something of Indian life, seeing the travelling parties almost every week on their ponies, going to and from the neighboring Baillytown, and visiting at their wigwams the hunting parties that came from Green Bay in their large, birch-bark canoes, and camped for weeks near the growing village; here he and others formed acquaintances destined to exert an influence through life; here he first saw an Indian burial place and saw Indians mourning over their buried dead; here he learned the

* Of that family bearing the name of Muzzall, having come from England through Canada, descendants are now living in Crown Point and Merrillville; and of those young men one is now living in Hammond, L. W. Thompson, born in 1814, and at the date of this note, November, 1899, eighty-five years of age.

intense sadness and loneliness of death in a pioneer settlement and the loneliness of a pioneer burial in the wilderness; and here he learned how colonies were planted in American wilds. Those months seem now like years of ordinary life.

Some incidents besides those named may also be mentioned. Gardens were made in May and some of the families obtained their supply of potatoes from the lake shore, at the mouth of the creek. Some lake sloop had evidently been storm-tossed, perhaps, for a time, stranded. And there was deposited for the benefit of the inhabitants a part of the cargo in the form of sound and good Irish potatoes.

No formal school was opened in 1837, but some of the children carried on their studies in their homes. No Sabbath meetings were held, and when the little community assembled to bury their few dead, in a lone spot, selected for that purpose, there was no minister in attendance to speak of the great hopes of the future. Yet some were there who knew those great hopes and who were accustomed to pray. They were not heathen burials. On a sand knoll, between the village and the lake, on the bank of the creek, there was an Indian burial ground of some size, the marks or inscriptions on the head-boards seeming to have been painted with Indian puccoon root. Here the villagers did not bury; this sacred spot they did not disturb. Near this, in the summer and fall, some Indian encampments were held; the Indians being quiet, peaceable hunting parties, one party at least having come down Lake Michigan from Green Bay, if the information imparted to the villagers was correct.

One day there came from Michigan City along the

beach of the lake a party of boys, white boys, on their ponies, who rode around City West in quite gallant style, showing off themselves and their ponies, appearing to be members of the wealthier families of that lake town. Where they dined that day cannot be recorded, but in the afternoon they returned to their own city and the streets of City West were again quiet. A ride of twenty miles along the beautiful sandy beach must have been an enjoyable experience for stylish boys well mounted on ponies. There was quite a number of these city boys, and some of them may yet be living. Frequently the Indian parties came on good ponies from Bailly-town, men, women and children, passing along the west street of the village, then going by their burial place to the lake shore, sometimes going eastward to the city, sometimes westward. In a few days they would return. To the white women and children the squaws and papposes on the ponies were always objects of much interest.

The young society of City West was not large in numbers, but very select. Of young ladies proper there were not more than five or six. Of young misses there were, of the "first set," five. Three of these are now living,* having been very active and influential women in their spheres of life, one in Illinois, one in Indiana, and one in Alabama, all now about sixty years of age.

The most lovely one of these, probably the youngest, beautiful as well as lovely, bore the given name of Mary. All five were quite polished, cultivated, good-looking, dressed well, were accustomed to the refine-

* "Now" means when this sketch was read at the Old Settlers' Association.

ments of life, and formed a very small, but a truly city-like group of girls. There were several boys and other children in the village, but only a few boys connected with this small group of girls.

One morning the usual quiet life of the community was broken by the announcement that Daniel Webster was about to enter City West in a two-horse carriage, having turned aside from the stage road to visit our little growing city. Of course the Whig portion of the community was quite excited. A good breakfast was prepared at the Morse residence; and after breakfast, as the citizens, men and boys, had gathered near the house—girls did not go out in those days as they do now—the great “ex-pounder of the Constitution” came out to be introduced to the inhabitants of City West. There he stood before us, the great lawyer, statesman, and orator, tall in form, massive in intellect, the man of whom we had heard and read, but whom we had not expected to see standing upon our sandy soil. He soon took his seat again in the coach and passed out from us on to Michigan City. A few more reminiscences.

Three varieties of wild fruit were found that year at City West. These were, winter green berries, so abundant in May, so fragrant, so delicious; huckleberries, blue and black, low bush and high bush, growing on the flats and on the high sand hills, that overlooked so many miles of that blue lake, ripening from the 1st of July till frost came, ready to be gathered by the quart or by the bushel; and the sand-hill cherries, as we named them, ripening in August, not so abundant, but a good, edible fruit. Gathering berries for their own use formed a healthful and pleasant occupation for the women and children in that ever

memorable summer. Toward the cool of the evening, as the sun would be, apparently going down into the lake, these women and children found a delightful walk on the hard, smooth, clean sand of the wave-washed beach, from the mouth of the creek westward. And the little children and the young misses took delight in running barefooted in the very edge of the dancing waves, avoiding the large ones, letting the ripples flow over their white feet and ankles. (Little girls' dresses came to their ankles then. They did not stop as now, at the knees). At other times they would visit the great "blow-outs," climbing up and running down in that which was so soft and yielding, in which they could play, on which they could recline, and have on hands and face and clothes no stain. What could be cleaner, except the water, than that white and black Lake Michigan sand! Some, who loved the magnificence of nature, would climb to the very top of some of those high bluffs and look out upon the broad expanse of water, sometimes seeing the white sail of a distant vessel, and enjoying the grandeur of that wide sweep of lake and shore line, that satisfied the range of the keenest vision.

But this pleasantly situated little town never became a city only in name. It was two or three years too late in starting. The financial crash of 1837, that swept over the country, did not spare even this little place. Congress made no appropriation for a harbor, although Daniel Webster had taken breakfast there. It would take money to stock the large store house with goods, money to dig the contemplated canal from the Calumet to the lake, money to make a city. And the proprietors were not millionaires. They had built fine dwelling houses, they had spent thousands

of dollars, they had secured nothing that would bring in an income. They must give up their enterprise. The crash had come. They began to scatter. Before 1837 had ended some sought new beginnings elsewhere. Others followed the same example in 1838. Some went further west, some found homes in La Porte County, some in Lake, engaging in various pursuits, some went further from the lake into Porter County; and in 1839 few if any were left in the once promising and pleasant little city.

In 1840, in company with a young friend, I visited the place, mainly to obtain wild fruit. We went from the Red Cedar Lake. Toward nightfall we drove into the village. The houses were there but no inhabitants. We called at the large Exchange hotel, but no one came to welcome us or attend to our wants. We had come prepared for that. We had our choice not only of rooms but of houses for that night. We chose a house, prepared our supper, and arranged our lodging place. We had no fear of being disturbed that night. The next day we gathered our fruit, bathed in Lake Michigan, and went out from that solitude, and returned to our homes.

The next that we heard about the unfortunate City West was a report that a fire had swept over it and that all the houses had gone into ashes. It failed to become a city for the lack of men and means, mainly for the want of money. But for the needs of those years it was too near to Michigan City. There was then no need for a harbor between Chicago and Michigan City. Now there is one between, and there will probably yet be two. But for a new City West there seems to be no hope. The early City West has gone. Its years were few; its life was brief and bright, for

some very bright; its decline and its end soon came; and from it we may learn to be careful how and where we expend, in founding cities, any large amount of means. Had the amounts expended in 1836 and 1837 been laid out where is Chicago now, some of those that were children in the young City West might have been millionaires in Chicago before now. Circumstances combine to make some rich and to leave others stranded on the sands of poverty. And those circumstances cannot by the most sagacious always be foreseen.

Young city on the lake shore;
Thou art gone forever more;
Yet thy homes were fair and bright,
Seen in childhood's rosy light.

WAVERLY. In the year 1834, John I. Foster, an early settler in the north part of Porter County, laid out a tract of land into town lots and gave to the town which he hoped to see, the name of Waverly. A few families, connected by the ties of blood and marriage, built log cabins on some of these lots and soon there was a little cluster of six houses. These were the families of Jacob Beck, John I. Foster, and William Gossett, whose wives were sisters, also of William Frame, and the families of Sparks, Warnick, and McCoy, two of these sons-in-law. Six connected families, founded the young town.

It was on the Calumet, about one mile and a half above Baillytown, a name to which the earliest settlers gave, as near as might be, the French pronunciation. It was nearly four miles from the mouth of Fort Creek on the lake shore. Thomas' saw-mill was near, at about the present Chesterton; but the authority is

good for stating that the houses of Waverly were all of logs. No business appeared in prospect; the inhabitants did not hear the whistles of the coming age of steam; they must get food from the earth; and so the families went further south into the county, opened farms, built mills, and Waverly ceased to be. In 1837 it had the appearance of an old, almost of a deserted village. According to records concerning an election ordered to be held in what became Porter County, the order issuing from the La Porte County commissioners, this was already quite a noted place early in 1835, for in March of that year the election was to be held "at the town of Waverly."

Note. Most of the above statements in regard to Waverly are from the clear memory of Mrs. Sarah J. Stonex, of Le Roy, in Lake County, who was a daughter of that pioneer, Jacob Beck, and who remembers well that village home of her childhood. She says that after City West was abandoned she, with some others, enterprising children probably and adventurous like herself, went over to City West and examined the houses, and they found one, counting closets and all, which was divided off into twenty-two rooms. This must have been the "Exchange" or the Bigelow hotel. She also says that she was at City West at the time of the burial of the young child that died there. This information, with other items of interest recorded in other places, was obtained in an interview with Mrs. Stonex November 7, 1899. Strange that a City West child and a Waverly child should have witnessed that frontier burial service, and find out that they both were there, after the passing away of sixty-two years! It surely made a durable impression on the memory of each. Those two early towns of the county of

Porter died young, as infants die ; but the recollections concerning each live, as Christians believe that infant spirits live.

Note 2. When Joseph Bailly died, the French trader and settler at Baillytown, his wife and daughters were in Chicago, spending, according to their custom, much of the winter season there. His death was quite unexpected. An Indian runner was sent at once as messenger to Chicago, but, swift of foot as he was, before he could reach there and the women return, it seemed needful that the body must be buried. There was no embalmer to take charge of it. One of the settlers at Waverly, therefore, Jacob Beck, the father of Mrs. Stonex, prepared the body for burial, and the brief funeral services were held before the return of the wife and the daughters.

Note 3. All those who travelled on that early stage road that went by the Holmes' tavern and the "Old Maid's Hotel," knew the "pole bridge" across the Calumet. How many rods long it really was is not probably known by any one now, but to a child, a boy who had been accustomed to cross the long covered bridge that spanned the Connecticut river at Springfield, it seemed long, and surely not very secure. The most rapid and dangerous ride across it was probably made by a woman with a young child. the woman was driving a pair of horses, and shortly before reaching the bridge the horses had struck a hornet's nest, were frightened or stung, and began to run. The woman placed the child on the bottom of the wagon, put her feet on its clothing to keep it from being thrown out by the jolting of the wagon, and those horses ran the entire length of the bridge before she could check them. It seemed sufficiently danger-

ous to have horses walk over that bridge, and passengers liked to walk also rather than to ride across; but to cross it with horses on the full run was a fearful risk. Providential protection seems often to be over children.

TASSINONG.

Although not in the same part of Porter County as the three early localities that have been noticed, Tassinong, already once named, seems properly among early pioneer settlements to stand on these pages next in order to Waverly. At some time and by some one, when and by whom no record has been found, some woodland in what became Morgan township was named Tassinong Grove. The early settlers in 1834 seem to have found the name already there, the Indians claiming that it was old then. It has been conjectured that the French once had there a trading post, but no real evidence seems to have been found. The name for us is prehistoric, as it was found there by the pioneers. But old as is the name for the locality, the village that the white settlers established was not among the earliest business centers. No record of a store is found till about 1846. The earlier merchants were Harper, Stoddard, their buildings made of logs, Unmgh, Eaton, McCarthy, and Rinker & Wright. In 1852 there were two stores, two blacksmith shops, a carpenter's shop, a tavern, and some shoe-makers' shops. About 1855 a church building was erected. The organization was Prebyterian. The postoffice dates from 1840. After the railroad life commenced and Kouts as a station and town was established, Tassinong as a village declined. It can scarcely be called a village now, al-

though its life has been quite different from its early sisters, Waverly and City West.

The living and growing towns of the present now claim attention.

At the crossing of the Chicago and Erie and Pan-Handle railroads, about five miles east from the county line and two and a half south from Tassinong is Kouts, a railroad station and so a growing town. It has a large school house, two churches, one Roman Catholic, one "Christian" congregation, but the house built by the people and undenominational, and a number of stores and dwelling houses, some of these quite fine buildings. Population unknown, probably 250.

Hebron. Population 800.—The old Indian village near the southwest corner of Porter County, where the Bryant and Dinwiddie families and others were early settlers, has been named as Indian Town. Here was quite a community of pioneers but no actual town life commenced. About two miles north of the Indian village, in 1844, some lots were laid out where is now the town of Hebron, and in 1846 the first store was opened by S. Alyea, and the second by William Sigler, which soon became the store of his two brothers, Eli and D. T. Sigler, known for many years as the Sigler store, and the building, on the corner of Sigler and Main streets, at the original "Corners" where north and south and east and west highways cross, is, in the year 1899, being repaired and rebuilt to be the drug store of Miss Hattie Palmer, who for some years has been keeping a large drug store in Hebron. The town grew slowly. The railroad in 1865 gave it some onward impulses. In 1867 D. T. Sigler erected the first brick dwelling, and in 1875 the first brick busi-

ness block was put up by "Sweeney & Son." Hebron has now a two-story brick school house. Cost, \$8,000. It has several brick business houses. The churches are four: Methodist Episcopal, Presbyterian, United Presbyterian, and "Christian." A church called "Union Mission" was organized in 1877 with eighty members. This organization, although in 1878 erecting a building at a cost, it is said, of about two thousand dollars, did not long continue; and in 1882, April 26, a Congregational church was organized, with about forty members, these having been for the most part members of the Union Mission church. This organization also had quite a short life. So Hebron has five church buildings and only four congregations. Estimated population eight or nine hundred. Hebron has some good dwelling houses, and, having been located in a grove, many of the dooryards have shade trees of native growth, mainly oaks, which add to the beauty of this town.

In Hebron is residing Mr. John Skelton, born in 1821, becoming a resident of Hebron in 1865, when there were six houses on each side of the main street, counting the country tavern as one, who has one recollection which probably no man in Northwestern Indiana can share with him, few probably in the entire State. He remembers distinctly, although only about four years of age, seeing General La Fayette at Trenton, N. J., when he was on his way to Boston to lay the corner-stone of the Bunker Hill monument. He was placed, as a little child eager to see, upon a slight elevation, and that noble and noted man was carefully pointed out to him. That he then and there saw La Fayette Mr. Skelton is sure there can be no mistake. Of places for holding large open air assemblages

Hebron has an excellent one. It is a grove of native growth, having the shade of old oak trees, the open square adjoining the Methodist church being large enough to accommodate some thousands of people. A permanent stand has been there for some years and seats, fastened securely, and compactly arranged, sufficient to seat eight hundred. With a little addition to the seating capacity, when needful, a thousand persons can be grouped very conveniently in hearing of a good voice. This is the annual meeting place of the Old Peoples' Association of Hebron, and sometimes of the Dinwiddie Clan. It is also a place for other public gatherings. It is fortunate for a town to have such a roomy and convenient place almost in the heart of the religious and school life, for open air assemblages.

Boone Grove is the name of a station on the Erie road which has become a very pleasant village. As its name indicates it is in a grove, and the homes have the benefit of shade trees of native growth. It has one church, known as Disciple, or "Christian," and there is a neighborhood around the village of good Christian families where Sunday school life has long been maintained and church-going habits have been cultivated. The entire Boone Grove community is intelligent and prosperous..

Wheeler. Population 180.—Village life commenced quite early near the present railroad station and town called Wheeler. A church house was erected and the Baptists and Methodists both had church organizations. It was on the edge of Twenty Mile Prairie and also close to Twenty Mile Grove. The Harris, Peak, and other families lived near. When the Fort Wayne railroad gave a station here, it added quite an element

of life, and yet but little growth followed. The larger business here is shipping milk. The town has a school and one church.

North from Valparaiso about ten miles, on the Michigan Southern and Michigan Central railroads, are three places near together, Chesterton, Hageman, and Porter; and a few miles west and south from these towns are the railroad stations of Crisman and McCool. A few miles northeast from Hageman, on the Michigan Central is Furnessville. A station on the Baltimore and Ohio and the Wabash is called Willow Creek, and one is on the Wabash, thirteen miles northward from Westville, called Crocker. These are the principal towns, villages, and stations of Porter County in 1900. One, Valparaiso, is a city; two, Hebron and Chesterton, are quite vigorous, substantial towns; Hageman, Kouts, and Wheeler, are, in size and business, probably next; and the others are small as yet, with the elements of business and town life. Porter is not a county of many towns, twelve, including stations, have been named, and there are some quite large country neighborhoods with social centers, a school house, a postoffice, or a church.

Chesterton, is, next to the county seat, the largest place in the county. Village life commenced about 1852. It is said that its population in two years numbered 300, "most of whom were Irish." Its growth afterward was slow. In 1882 its population was said to be 600. In 1880 there was established at Chesterton the Hillstrom Organ Factory. Proprietor, C. O. Hillstrom. This has been quite an industry. The first brick building in the town was erected in 1874. Since then many substantial buildings have been put up. As will be seen in the chapter on industries brick

abound in this part of the country. The churches of Chesterton now are Methodist Episcopal, Swedish Methodist, Swedish Lutheran, German Lutheran, Congregational, and a Roman Catholic. The first Catholic church building was erected in 1857. A brick church was built in 1876, and a few years later a parsonage was added, making the value of the church property about sixteen thousand dollars. The Swedish Lutheran brick church of 1880 cost about five thousand dollars. The Swedish Methodist built in 1880. The German Lutheran house, 1881, cost about two thousand dollars. The Methodist church of 1863 cost about the same amount. Present population about 1,200.

The town called Hageman was commenced in 1872 by Henry Hageman; the town lots were laid out by Surveyor William De Courcey in 1880. Its industry is brick-making. Population about 600.

Furnessville, called at first Murray's Side Track, and then Morgan's Side Track, has not made much town growth. The first frame building was put up in 1853 by Morgan, and the second was erected in 1855 by E. L. Furness, who opened a store in his basement in 1856.

VALPARAISO.

In 1834 J. P. Ballard built the first house where is now the city of Valparaiso. This is one of the traditional records. Others say that when the original town was laid out there was no building on that, and that building commenced by different persons in 1836. The first store was opened in December, 1836, by Jeremiah Hamel, the second by John Bishop, and the third by Dr. Seneca Ball. First postmaster, Ben-

jamin McCarty. It was quite appropriate that he, as principal proprietor of the new county seat should be the first to hold this office, although he had not earned it in any way by residence there as had Solon Robinson, first postmaster at Crown Point. As it was with the other county seats, the business interests, the courts, the county officers, all required and produced some growth, but in those early years advance was not rapid. In 1850 it was incorporated as a village. In 1865 it became a city. It had at one time some manufacturing establishments, but these closed up, one after another, and the great financial support of the city is now the large Normal college. In Valparaiso are nine churches, and the buildings of most of them are massive brick structures. These are: The Roman Catholic, the Lutheran, the "Christian," the Methodist Episcopal, the Presbyterian, the Baptist, the Mennomite, and the German "Reformed," and the Believers. In 1898 there were enumerated 1,595 school children, indicating at the most a population of about six thousand. The thousands of students at the Normal College each year are not a part of the real population. What the census enumerator will do with them this year remains to be seen. The more full detailed history of this town, extending over sixty-four years, can be found, up to 1882, in the county history of Porter. Since that work was written some new factories have started, additional school buildings have been erected, much building has been done on College Hill, new family residences have been built, and a massive court house has been constructed. The location of Valparaiso is among some hills, on some heights, and in some valleys, while all our other towns

are on quite level ground. Some enjoy hills and valleys and town lots that can be terraced up, height above height, and others like to build on a table-land or a plain or in a valley. The hills of Valparaiso give much variety to the town. The north part of the city is on level land. It is almost needless to mention, in such a college town, and one with such large and well-conducted public and parochial schools, in a town so old and with so many wealthy families, water-works and telephones and electric lights. Without these in this day such a city would not be. The water supply is from Flint Lake, north of the city about three miles. The Grand Trunk road passes along the level land on the north edge of town; the Fort Wayne and Nickle Plate, having crossed the Salt Creek Valley, pass along the south of the town.

CHAPTER XXI.

VILLAGES, TOWNS, AND CITIES OF LA PORTE COUNTY.

1. Westville, as at first laid out into town lots was on the northwest quarter of section 29, in township 36, range 4. Additions were afterwards made. The first permanent residence was built by Henly Clyburn in 1836. The first store was in 1848, proprietors, John and William Catron, D. M. Closser in 1849, opening a dry goods and grocery store. In 1850 there was established a blacksmith shop. In 1853 the Louisville, New Albany and Salem railroad was completed. A depot was built and Westville became a railroad town. For a time it had quite a rapid growth, mills and factories were started. It was incorporated September 9, 1864. In these later years it has declined rather than advanced. The churches are two: Methodist Episcopal and "Christian." It has had an excellent public school ranking, at least for a time, with the schools at La Porte and Michigan City. Said General Packard in 1876: "Several years ago it was brought up to a high standard by Prof. J. G. Laird, and has successfully maintained it ever since." He also said that it "is recognized as one of the best not only in the county, but in all northern Indiana." Professor Laird was no ordinary teacher; but the schools

of the two cities of the county have made great advance since his day, and the Westville school, excellent as it is, has hardly kept up with them. The population of Westville is now about 700.

2. Otis, north of Westville four miles, was first called by the Michigan Southern railroad people New Salem, or Salem Crossing. The Louisville, New Albany, and Chicago road named it La Croix, and this name the first proprietor of the place, Solomon Tucker, adopted. Its settlement commenced in 1851. Its location is on the northwest quarter of section 5, township 36, range 4. After the number of inhabitants was sufficient to entitle them to give a name to their village, they discarded both the railroad names and called it Packard, in honor of their representative in Congress. But he suggested a change of name, and in 1872, it was named Otis. That name it still bears. Its first settler, in 1851, was Matthias Seberger, who became station agent. The first store was opened in 1854 by George R. Selkirk, supposed to be of the Selkirk family, one of whose members gave the foundation for the story of Robinson Crusoe. Otis is now quite a little town, having a good school, a Polander Roman Catholic church built in 1872, and a Lutheran church erected in 1876.

3. Holmesville, east of Otis, on the southeast quarter of section 4, township 36, range 4, "northeast corner," dates, as a settled place, from 1833, when Jacob Bryant built a dwelling house and a saw-mill. After the location of the railroad in 1850, a small store building was erected, and in 1853 a warehouse. Some houses were built in 1856 and 1857, but it has not become much of a town.

4. But the oldest place in New Durham Town-

ship to be called at any time a town, is New Durham, on or near section 14, about three miles northeast of Westville.

The first building was a log cabin in 1834 built by Leonard Woods. In 1835 there was a store. In 1837 a hotel was started, and in 1838 a wagon factory and a blacksmith shop. So the village continued to grow. In 1839 there was added a tailor's shop; in 1843 a boot and shoe factory; in 1846 a physician; and in 1847 was built a Methodist church, Rev. J. J. Cooper first pastor. In 1852, W. B. Webster made a "hundred and fourteen wagons and buggies and mounted three hundred steel plows."* In 1854 was built a frame school house, and still later one of brick. But in 1854 the postoffice was removed.

"This was an indication of the decline of New Durham, and the railroad having reached Westville, the pioneer town of the township ceased to be a place of any importance. Many of its buildings have been moved away. Some of them have gone to Westville, and some are used for farmhouses.

"Though the town is gone, the rich lands of the prairie remain, a constant source of wealth."

5. Callao, or Morgan Station, is on the Pittsburg, Fort Wayne & Chicago Railroad, described as "situated in the southwest quarter of the southeast quarter of section" 2, township 34, range 4, laid out for a town in 1859 by W. A. Taylor. Village life commenced, but much growth did not follow.

6. Rozelle was laid out for a town at about the same time, or in 1858, by Joseph Unruh, on the New Albany road about a mile south of Wanatah, and on

* General Packard.

the northeast quarter of section 8, township 34, range 4. It was too near Wanatah which soon took away all its village life.

7. Wanatah, as a railroad station and town began to grow in 1857, just before the completion of the Fort Wayne road. Being on the crossing of two roads, it had the advantage of its two little sister villages and soon grew away from them. Joseph L. Unruh removed his store there from Rozelle, and in 1867, built a flour mill, putting in "three run of stones," and in 1876 it was considered "one of the best flouring mills in the county."

The McCurdy Hotel was built in 1865 by Frank McCurdy, was burned in January, 1875, was immediately rebuilt and called the Wanatah House. The "Enterprise" school house was built by a stock company in 1870. The stream that runs through the town was named, for some reason, Hog Creek, and south of Wanatah, in Dewey Township, in the Kankakee marsh, is Hog Island, on which was built the first school house of Dewey Township, in 1858.

The church buildings now in Wanatah are German Lutheran, Catholic, German Evangelical, Methodist Episcopal, and "Christian."

Population about six hundred.

8. Hanna, population 300, like Wanatah, is on two railroads, and is, "geographically," that is, according to the land descriptions of Indiana, on section 8, township 34, range 3 west of the second principal meridian, which meridian corresponds to longitude 86 degrees 28 minutes west from Greenwich

As a town the growth of Hanna commenced in 1858. In 1865 George L. Dennison opened a store and became a grain buyer. For some years the

Methodists and Free Methodists held their meetings in the village school house, but now the town has church sittings.

9. 10. Waterford and Beatty's Corners, are the names of localities that gave some promise of becoming towns in the earlier years of settlement, but like many others, not on railroad lines, they soon failed to grow. Ordinarily that which does not grow dies. These were in Coolspring Township, which abounded in small streams and mill-seats and mills. This township lying south from Michigan City was one of the wildest in the county, having a good supply, not only of deer and wild turkeys, but also bears.

11. As early as 1833, the growth began of a village called at first Lakeport, but afterward Hudson, that "was once the rival of La Porte," and "a formidable one," says General Packard, "for the trade of the north part of the county." A school, a store, a blacksmith's shop, a cooper's shop, and tavern started at once.

In 1834 a steam saw-mill was built which immediately commenced work, and in 1835, it seemed to be rapidly growing into a young city. There were two hotels, stages passed through the town, farmers came to sell produce and buy goods, and everything promised commercial prosperity.

In 1836 there was promise of a canal from Toledo in Ohio, to New Buffalo on Lake Michigan. "Hudson was wild with excitement." The financial crash came, the bubble burst; Hudson as a town went down, as did many others in the early years.

12. Door Village is the name of a once quite prosperous little town on Door Prairie, near the "Door," on the locality of which a cabin was built in 1830,

and a second in 1832, and where in 1833 was erected a small frame Methodist church building. A store was opened the same year and a frame dwelling house built, a wagon shop also and a small hotel. In 1834 a blacksmith shop was added, and in 1836 the town was formally laid out under the supervision of the County Commissioners. Various kinds of business started in this new town, even to establishments for manufacturing fanning mills and spinning wheels and threshing machines. It was for a time quite a rival of La Porte. Two good church buildings were erected, one Methodist one Baptist, where for some years large congregations gathered. But the railroads passed through La Porte, they did not touch Door Village. Business left and it declined. There is little trace there now of its former life.

13, 14, 15. In Wills Township three villages were commenced in the pioneer times, before the railroad lines had indicated where the towns must finally be.

These were called Boot Jack, Independence, and Puddletown. The last named was the name given to a little lake on the borders of which a settlement was made that became a hamlet but not a village. This lake is on section 9, in Wills Township. The village called Independence, also Sac Town, was on section 28, township 37, range 1, and was laid out for a town in 1837, where it was expected a railroad would cross a canal, the lines of both having then been surveyed. Mills, stores, and shops, commenced business, but no railroad came and no canal, and the town of Independence disappeared as did the "visions of immense wealth" which the early settlers of Independence saw in their dreams.*

* General Packard.

The name Boot Jack was given, for what reason is now uncertain, to a settlement that became a hamlet with a store and a pioneer tavern, where in 1835 George Hunt settled with a family of six sons, and where in that same year, an Indian by the name of Brice opened a little trading post. There is there now no town, no village. This locality, section 6, is said to have been the first spot settled in Wills Township, the settlement having been commenced in 1830 by the Wills family, John Wills and three sons, Charles, Daniel, and John E. Wills.

16. Corymbo is the name of another locality where in 1874 were twelve log and frame buildings, with only three then inhabited. This once little village was in Springfield Township, on section 18, township 38, range 3.

17. Springville, named from a large spring of cold, pure water, was a village in 1834, having then a tavern, a store and a blacksmith shop. A boot and shoe factory, a tannery, a furniture factory, and a mill afterward increased the business of the place.

Judah Learning, the founder, and first settler in the township, built the first cabin in 1831. Other early settlers were Abram Cormack and Daniel Griffin, and in 1832, Joseph Pagin and sons, John Brown, Charles Vail, John Hazleton, and Erastus Quivey. One-fourth of a mile east of this village in 1832 the first school house was built, Miss Emily Learning, teacher, Elder Silas Tucker taking charge of the school in 1834. At this school were held early Methodist and Baptist meetings. This neighborhood and township has been quite noted for mills, as there are many springs and streams. Some of these mills were built by Joseph Pagin, Charles Vail, David Pagin,

Jacob Early, Erastus Quivey, and Abner Fravel. Springfield at present has about 75 inhabitants.

18. On the New Albany railroad, south of Westville, is a station called Haskell, scarcely a town. Population perhaps 50.

19. Bigelow, or Bigelow's Mills, was laid out as a town and a record was made of "twenty-eight blocks" in 1837.

In 1848 "the town of Bigelow's Mills" by act of the Commissioners was "vacated."

20. Union Mills. A house was built at this place in 1832. A grist-mill was built in 1837 and 1838. A record of "the village of Union Mills" was duly filed in December, 1849. In 1838 there were in the village five log cabins. In 1844 was built the Presbyterian church. The town grew, business houses and shops and offices were opened. In 1858 was built the Advent church. In 1872 a railroad reached this growing town, and in 1874 the Baltimore & Ohio road came alongside of it, and a new impulse was thus given to Union Mills. The place is, according to the official record, "situated in the southeast corner of section 8, and the southwest corner of section 9, in township 35," range 3. Present population about 200.

21. About one mile from this town an effort had been made about the year 1836, to start a town to be called Belmont. A beginning was made, but the effort soon ceased.

22. After the railroads went through there was laid out, a mile east of Union Mills, a railroad town called Wellsboro. This has been a growing place. The Chicago & Western Michigan crosses the Grand Trunk here, and makes quite a point for the exchange of passengers.

23. Kingsbury. Population 250.—Four miles east of Wellsboro on the Grand Trunk is one of the old towns of La Porte County. It was laid out in 1835. Jacob Early and Polaski King were two of the early merchants. In 1834 was built the first school house in the township, now Union, and on the same spot was afterwards built the Baptist church, probably in 1852. About 1860 was built a Methodist church, and in 1876 a German Lutheran.

In 1873 a railroad touched the town and added to its business life. Before this time a grist-mill contributed to the life of the place. The Wabash road has recently passed near the town, but has added little to its growth.

24. Stillwell. Population estimated at 250.—The early Stillwell was about one mile northwest from the present station bearing this name, the name of an early settler given to the prairie here on which he settled. This station is at the crossing of the Grand Trunk and Lake Erie roads, on section 23, township 36, range 2, near the center of the center. It has one church building known as the "Friends" or Quaker church. No industries, but quite a little railroad business.

25. Mill Creek. Population estimated at 100.—No church buildings in the village, but the school house is used for church purposes on Sunday. This place is four and a half miles east of Stillwell and the pastor of the Friends' church there supplies here.

Across the Kankakee River, southeastward from Mill Creek, a bridge was built by John Dunn in 1831 or 1832. About 1846 it was rebuilt by Major John M. Lemon, who kept it as a toll bridge for some years. It was known as Lemon's bridge. Mill Creek is the name of a stream, formerly called Spring Run,

on which was built an early saw-mill. A postoffice was established in 1876 near the creek and railroad crossing and named from the creek. Twenty-four years of village life, starting with a postoffice, has not produced much growth.

26. In Kankakee township a village was laid out on the lands of Stephen G. Hunt and Hiram Onem and named Byron. It was on the northeast quarter of section 15, township 37, range 2. In 1835 a store building was commenced, a postoffice located, and a school house and then a hotel and a ware house in the following years were erected. Byron became a town of much trade. It was on the highway from La Porte to South Bend. Says General Packard: "Before the Northern Indiana railroad was built, Byron was a town of much importance. Its trade was large. The travel through it was great, the merchants prospered. * * * The railroad killed it. Its streets are deserted. There is neither store, blacksmith's shop, or tavern within its limits." That was not the first place which a railroad has killed.

27. Rolling Prairie.—The land on which this town is located was purchased in 1832 by W. J. Walker, some pioneers or "squatters" having homes then upon it. In 1852 the Northern Indiana railroad reached that locality in January. A station was established and so a town sprang up. It was one mile north from Byron. The name, given by the owner of the land to this town was Portland, but the postoffice and station name is Rolling Prairie.

28. A station called La Crosse, sixty-eight miles southeast from Chicago has been in existence now thirty-five years. Commenced in 1865, dating from the completion of the Pan Handle road as it now

runs, its beginning was thirty-five years from 1830, so that its existence thus far measures one-half the period of white occupancy. Located within the upper portion of the Kankakee marsh, where what was the "Air Line," crossed the New Albany and Salem road, its outlook is still upon the broad, open marsh. But the ground around it is much drier now than it was thirty-five years ago. One more road also crosses here now, the Chicago and West Michigan, the crossing being twenty-two miles southwest from La Porte. As a station village there are ten families, but about twenty-five families are within three-quarters of a mile from the crossings. Of these ten families one is Roman Catholic, attending church two and a half miles north. Of the others, some are Lutheran, their church being distant about four miles. Some years ago a religious Protestant family, living a half mile west, Elias Osborn and wife and children, carried on a Sunday school and secured occasional preaching at their home, and the other families quite generally attended the services at this family church house. But the family removed and the school and the preaching ceased. Church privileges for Protestants now are at Wanatah, eight miles north, or at Kouts, seven miles west. A large area of open marsh land, where cattle graze, and on which much grass is cut for hay, extends on the south, eastward and westward, to the Kankakee River, and the view over this wide, level sweep of green verdure is in mid-summer beautiful, the eyes resting at last on the line of far distant trees in their full leaf, which marks the course of the river. One opening only through these trees is visible, where in the south the New Albany road crosses the river. La Crosse is a

shipping point for hay, and a corn crib some eighty feet in length indicates that corn is also brought here for shipment. One small store, "Hyatte & Marquardt, dealers in dry goods, groceries, and notions," supplies some of the family needs.

Two or three miles south of La Crosse is Wilders, a station on the Chicago and Erie road, where the New Albany and Chicago and West Michigan roads cross, and south of which three or four families reside. Wilders is not far from the river, on the south bank of which, along the Erie road and where the oil pipe lines cross the river, is a cluster of oil tanks, with a few families to look after the interests of the Standard Oil Company, as the oil is on its way to Whiting. Wilders is in La Porte County, near its southwest corner.

La Porte County, wealthy and populous as it has been in comparison with the other counties, has about fourteen living towns and villages, and these are not large nor are most of them very thriving. But it has two good, substantial cities, where railroads cross and manufactories flourish. Outside of these the county is largely agricultural with a wealthy farming intelligent community. The county is not probably much in advance of Lake now in population.

LA PORTE.

The city which bears this name, considered to be, for its location, one of the most beautiful in Indiana, consisted of two cabin homes in 1830. One was the home of Richard Harris, the other of George Thomas, Colonel W. A. Place assisting in building this cabin, and Wilson Malone lodging in it the first night (as it is claimed) that a white man slept where is now La

Porte. The families of these three men, R. Harris, G. Thomas, and W. Malone, constituted the hamlet, if such it might be called, at the close of 1832, Colonel Place having settled in October not far away. But, as 1833 closed and 1834 opened, fifteen families, or at least fifteen houses were in the new county seat.

The following is a record that may well be repeated here:

"John Walker, Walter Wilson, Hiram Todd, James Andrew, and Abram Andrew, Jr., bought at the land sales at Logansport, Indiana, in the month of October, 1831, 400 acres of land, known as the 'Michigan Road Lands,' with a view of laying out a town and making the county seat of La Porte County." Town lots were laid out in 1833 and it did become the county seat. Among the families, making the fifteen in 1834, were, in 1831, Joseph Pagin, on the east side of Deer Creek, Charles Fravel in 1832, and in 1832 and 1833, engaged in business, were John Allison, William Allison, Dr. Ball, Nelson Sandon, John B. Fravel, and Hiram Wheeler. In 1833 the United States government located a land office at La Porte, John M. Lemon Receiver, Major Robb, Register.

The first hotels were kept by Blake and Lily. Early merchants were J. T. & W. Allison, and William Clement and Dr. Seneca Ball. A log school house was built in 1833. Improvements of various kinds went forward and other school buildings were erected. In 1835 La Porte was incorporated as a town with five districts or wards and five trustees were elected. The election certificate bearing date November 14, 1835 was signed by William Dinwiddie, President, Wm. Allen, Clerk. In 1852 a population of five thousand being found in the town limits, a city charter was

granted and La Porte became a city. First Mayor, William J. Walker; second, Benjamin Kress; third, Frederick Mc Cullum; fourth, W. H. H. Whitehead; and fifth, in 1861, Daniel Noyes.

In 1856 a school building was erected in each ward of the city, four of these being built of brick, two stories each. There were in those schools seven teachers: "R. M. Johnson, A. T. Bliss, Jasper Packard, Miss O. M. Tibbits, Miss Emma Chandler, Miss M. A. Kent, and Mrs. Steele." Also Mrs. Packard.

A high school department was soon organized with Jasper Packard as first teacher.

The first Board of Trustees were, Gilbert Hathaway, Amzi Clark, B. P. Walker, and the second were John B. Niles, James Moore, and Ferdinand Roberts.

In 1864 was erected a large brick building for the city high school, and another very large one was added in 1894, and with such men as they have had for trustees and with such teachers as have been placed in the schools, it is no wonder that it has been said that "the educational advantages of La Porte are of the highest order." It has been also said, but he may have been partial who said it, that "taken altogether, La Porte is unquestionably the handsomest city in Indiana." Its streets are wide and well shaded—unfortunately sometimes for a stranger they do not run in the direction of the cardinal points of the compass—beautiful lakes, such as Clear Lake, Pine Lake, Stone Lake, are around it; and its prairie and grove surroundings are among some of nature's choicest beauties. Yet truth to say, as its most partial inhabitants cannot fail to see, the beauty here in 1900 is not what once it was. Clear Lake is no longer clear and beautiful, and between the railroad tracks and the

lake no beauty is left. But on the eastward or south-eastward side of Main street, the city is still worthy of its fame.

Some manufacturing firms are: M. Rumely Company, established in 1853, incorporated in 1887, manufacturers of threshing machines and engines, with branch offices in Chicago, in Wisconsin, in Ohio, in Missouri, in Iowa, and in Nebraska; The Munson Company, a new establishment, manufacturing horseless vehicles and electric apparatus of all kinds; a large carriage factory; a wheel factory, dating from 1870; two woolen mills or factories; and some other establishments.

These furnish employment for many workmen. In 1852 or 1853 the machine shops of the Michigan Southern road were located in La Porte, but were removed to Elkhart in 1870.

Among those citizens of La Porte who have achieved fame, belongs the name of Mrs. Emma F. Malloy. Hers was for a time a brilliant but not happy life. She accomplished much as a "temperance missionary," but she undertook at length a task morally impossible. She failed. Woman as well as man needs, in going forth to the battles of life, to conflicts against terrible wrongs, to have the Christian armor bound most perfectly on. If one piece of that invincible armor is missing she may be lost. And she needs, too, that bright armor in the most retired positions of a wife and mother.

Another name here, of one who labored in a different line and achieved, it may be, more enduring success, is that of Mrs. Maria B. Early, wife of J. P. Early, of La Porte, who, in 1876 was elected Conference Secretary of the Woman's Foreign Missionary

Society of the Methodist Episcopal Church. She was one of those five girls mentioned as having, in 1837, a home in City West, and in 1840 she was a member of the family boarding school of Mrs. J. A. H. Ball, at Red Cedar Lake. As Conference Secretary she gave addresses in various churches, and became well and favorably known as an active, earnest Christian woman.

Of men who have become widely known it is sufficient to mention the names of Judge John B. Niles, lawyer, scholar, Christian; of Judge Osborn; General Joseph Orr; of Colonel Gilbert Hathaway, General Jasper Packard; Dr. Abraham Teegarden; and to name yet others would make it difficult to find a limit. Outside of the city probably the most widely known was Hon. C. W. Cathcart.

Churches in La Porte: two Lutheran; two Roman Catholic; Methodist Episcopal; German M. E.; German Evangelical; Presbyterian; two Baptist; Episcopal; "Christian"; Unitarian; Quaker; Swedenborgian or "New Church." This last church organized in 1859.

The church buildings are mostly substantial city-like structures of brick or stone.

The court house is a grand building of brown or reddish brown stone from Lake Superior.

In the line of benevolent institutions La Porte has an undenominational Old Ladies' Home. In a La Porte publication for June, 1900, under the heading "Society Directory," appear the names of forty-one different organizations, including lodges, clubs, and societies of various kinds. Among them a Hebrew Ladies' Aid Society, and a Scandinavian Relief and Aid Society, also a Charity Circle, show that this city

differs in some respects from the other towns and cities that have been noticed.

La Porte has several miles of well-paved streets, it has telephones and electric lights, and has had free mail delivery since 1891. This has reduced the number of boxes in the postoffice from more than one thousand to about five hundred. The city population is about ten thousand. The census returns when published may give more. For a water supply the lakes around the city have been the dependence, but these are proving not sufficient, and a different source of supply is sought. It is hoped, when this is found, that the lakes may again fill up and assume their earlier beauty; but besides what the city uses, a large amount of water is taken away from these lakes each year in the form of ice. They will not probably be again what they were in 1830.

A record not in its proper place will close this notice. In 1835 the postmaster was A. W. Harrison. In 1837 Dr. T. D. Lemon became postmaster and so continued till March 4, 1861.

MICHIGAN CITY.

There was a sale of government lands at Logansport in October, 1831, and at this sale Major Isaac C. Elston, of Crawfordsville, is said to have purchased the lands on which is now Michigan City, and to have laid out town lots in October of 1832. Trail Creek, passing into the great lake here, not far from that immense pile of sand known as Hoosier Slide, and a little west of another immense, wooded sand bluff, suggested an appropriate place for a harbor and therefore, for a lake city.

Pine and a few sugar maple trees were then grow-

ing where the city is now. Near Lake Michigan were sand hills, and to the first settlers, who came in 1833 the view was not inviting; no beautiful prairie landscape appearing like that around La Porte; but, says General Packard, "across the creek that passed through the woods, and which was still the abode of wild beasts, a low, wet, swampy tract of country occupied all the locality." But these settlers came, not to open farms, but rather to found a city. And a city at length was built.

The first log cabin, so far as known, was erected in August, 1833, by Jacob Furman and B. F. Bryant; and in October Samuel Flint with his family arrived; and Samuel B. Webster is the next name on the record of settlers in 1833. To him is attributed the erection of the first frame building, and the second was a dwelling house for the Flint family. The name of George W. Selkirk is found for October, 1833; and early in 1834 are the names of Thompson W. Francis, Joseph C. Orr, and Samuel Miller. In the same year came George Ames and Leonard Woods, and Sprague and Teall who purchased the stage line from Michigan City to Chicago, and many others. Town lots had been laid out by a surveyor and the town plat of Michigan City had been recorded in 1833. In 1834 hotels were built, and the growth in that and in the next two years was perfectly astonishing. Stores were opened, warehouses built, piers constructed, schooners and even little steamers, landed cargoes, and business was brisk. A school house had been built in 1834, which was used also as a church, and in 1836 there was a Protestant Episcopal church building, the first in the young city.

In 1836 harbor improvements began for which

Congress appropriated twenty thousand dollars. The next year thirty thousand dollars was appropriated. One after another appropriations were made until 1852 amounting in all to \$160,733, and year after year the money was expended and no real good accomplished. The government abandoned the undertaking, and for fourteen years nothing more was done. William H. Goodhue said, "‘Hope for a season’ bade Michigan City farewell." At length, in 1866, the citizens determined to build a harbor themselves, and organized the ‘Michigan City Harbor Company.’ They raised money and worked, and again Congress began to help them. In 1867 an appropriation was made of \$75,000; in 1868, of \$25,000; in 1869, of \$32,500; and year after year appropriations were made until Michigan City had a harbor. In the meantime, through all these years, business and growth were not standing and waiting.

“From 1837 to 1844, Michigan City was the principal grain market for Northern Indiana, wheat being received from as far south as the central portion of the State. Huge caravans of ox teams, with two and three yoke of oxen to a wagon, would come in, sometimes thirty or forty such teams together. The supplies for all this large extent of country were purchased here. The same teams which conveyed the wheat to market, would return laden with goods for the home merchants. It was not uncommon for three hundred teams to arrive in one day.”

The railroad era came and things were changed. The Michigan Central road reached Michigan City in 1850, and in 1851 machine shops were built. The Louisville, New Albany & Chicago road reached Michigan City in 1853. Other roads soon were built.

In 1857 was located the Northern Penitentiary. Manufacturing firms soon began to employ prison labor. The first was for cooperage, firm, Hayward & De Wolfe. The next was for wagons and carriages, different men controlling the business from time to time, employing in 1876 one hundred and fifty of the prisoners, and making carriages, buggies, and sleighs, besides adding, to this business, cooperage, their sales at this time amounting to one hundred and fifty thousand dollars. Ford & Johnson, in 1870, commenced chair making, soon employing also one hundred and fifty men, their chairs going out even as far as Japan.

The Michigan City car factory has done a large business, cars being made for the government during the Civil War, four hundred men at times having been employed.

Fisheries have in some years been very profitable at Michigan City. Lyman Blair, it is said, has packed in one year white fish worth forty thousand dollars. 1856 and 1857 were years noted for a great catch of white fish and trout.

Churches in Michigan City: Congregational, Presbyterian, Methodist Episcopal, Episcopalian, two Lutheran, both large brick buildings, two Roman Catholic, German M. E., Swedish Lutheran, and two Congregational mission churches. Also one Baptist. In all, thirteen.

Manufacturing firms: Ford & Johnson, chairs.

Haskell & Barker, Car Co.

Tecumseh Knitting Factory.

Lakeside Knitting Factory.

Free delivery of mail matter since 1892. Formerly in the postoffice 1,300 boxes. Now only 420. Michi-

gan City is built on beds of sand, deep, heavy sand, that sometimes blows and drifts like snow, for there are very light particles in what is called heavy sand. Immense quantities of sand from the Hoosier Slide are taken away in carloads to Chicago, but it is a huge mass yet. Foundations have been laid in this great bed of sand that underlies the city for many grand structures.

In 1871 a large public school building was erected on a sightly spot, and the grounds "have been kept in their present beautiful condition" through the care and benevolence of a pioneer of 1834, Mr. George Ames, who, having no children of his own, cared for the welfare of the children of others. For the school grounds it seemed as though "he could never do enough." He was accustomed, for many years, to present each graduate of the school with a likeness of himself and also with one of the school building and the grounds, and, dying about 1892, he left a sum of money the interest of which is to be expended in keeping up and adorning the school grounds.*

This school building, considered for the size of the city, "one of the finest in the State,"* was destroyed by fire in January, 1896, and was replaced by another grand building ready for use in January, 1897.

Besides electric lights and paved streets this city has electric railways. Its population is about 15,000.

It has a full share of the various social orders of the day, and has been noted in all its years of growth for quite a number of wealthy citizens. It has been

* Authority, Miss Minnie E. Barron, a graduate of the school and a teacher in the year 1900.

* General Packard.

first and still is first in its manifestations of the refinement and even of the aristocratic tendency of cities. It has some noble Christian men and women, cultivated and refined. It has a good many citizens now of foreign birth. It contains probably alone of all our towns, a Soldiers' Monument.

CHAPTER XXII.

EARLY TRAVELS.

In a little book of seventy-two pages, called "Journal of Travels, Adventures, and Remarks, of Jerry Church," printed at Harrisburg, 1845, belonging to E. W. Dinwiddie, of Plum Grove, some interesting statements concerning a few of our localities are found. The writer, Jeremiah Church, born in Brainbridge, New York, evidently very eccentric and an adventurer, as he himself allows, spent many years, apparently between 1820 and 1835 or 1840 in various adventures and speculations in the then West and in the South.

He appears to have been honest in his dealings and truthful in his narratives. A little confusion exists in his dates where he gives 1830 after he has given as the year 1831. Considering the latter the correct date, some extracts from the journal are now quoted. In company with his brother he had been speculating in lands at Ottawa, in Illinois, laying out town lots on government land, and he says: "We then prepared to leave, and hired a man with a yoke of black oxen and a wagon, to take us to Chicago, distant eighty miles, which we travelled in two days and a half—two nights camped out. At last we arrived in front of a hotel, in the City of Chicago (which at that time contained about half a dozen houses, and the balance

Indian wigwams), with our ox stage. We stayed there a week or two with the French and Indians, and enjoyed ourselves very well. We then took passage in a wagon that was going to Michigan through the Indian country, without any road. We followed round the beach of the lake; camped out the first night and slept on a bed of sand. The next morning we came to an old Frenchman's house, who had a squaw for a wife. They had three daughters, and beautiful girls they were, and entertained us very well. My brother almost fell in love with one of the fellow's girls, and I had hard work to persuade him along any farther. He told me that he thought he felt a good deal like 'an Ingen,' and if he had an 'Ingen gal' for his wife, he thought he could be one. However, I persuaded him to travel on."

This place seems evidently to have been Baillytown, although the Porter County annalist assigns to this family "four beautiful and accomplished daughters" named Eleanor, Frances, Rose, Hortense.

The journal continues: "We went on through the Pottawatomie nation until we came to a place called the door-prairie. There we stopped and tried to buy a piece of land for the purpose of laying out a town at that place. We could not get any title but an Indian one, and we concluded that would not do, so we travelled on." They reached Detroit at length, "a very beautiful place."

This singular traveller and adventurer went back from Detroit after a little time with a man who had a horse and wagon, and he says: "We travelled the same road that my brother and I had travelled * * * so that in our route we came to the old Frenchman's house where the Indian girls were, and

as my brother was not with me, I concluded that I would play 'Ingen' awhile myself."

They staid three days, by permission of the family, rested, hunted, and then made a new start for Chicago. According to the journal "It was fifty miles from the old Frenchman's house to the Callamink where the first white man lived on the road. He had a half-breed Indian wife and kept the ferry across the Callamink River at its mouth." They expected to reach his house the first day, but their horse was tired out. They camped, sleeping in a broken canoe, and reached the ferry at ten the next day. Jerry Church was almost famished. No food was to be had till a wagon returned from the town. He shot a blackbird. The woman cooked it and made him some coffee. He made out a breakfast. The man would take no pay, but he gave the woman a dollar, and they went on to Chicago.

Business soon again took him back to the door-prairie, and on his return to Chicago he took a slightly different route. He says, "I was then about twelve miles from the Dismaugh Creek, which empties into the Michigan lake where Michigan City now stands. That was in the year 1830." This narrative is evidently trustworthy, but this date should surely be 1831. He now had a horse and peddler's wagon or carriage, and a young man and the young man's sister wished to go through with him to Chicago. The sister was on horseback, the two men in the wagon or carriage. "The first day we cleared a road and got down near to the lake and encamped." So the journal reads. To the young lady the carriage was given for a "bed room," and the two men slept under it. The next day they went on. "We struck the lake

where Michigan City now stands, ours being the first carriage of any kind that had been there; and there was not a white man living within twelve miles of the place at that time. We then took the beach and followed it to Chicago. We had to camp out three nights." So this time he avoided or missed Baillytown.

Yet once more this peculiar man, Jerry Church, peddler, trader, speculator, showman, town and city founder, crossed this strip of then new country. He and his brother were now at Indianapolis. There they traded for three town lots. Then they bought a "cream-colored horse and a small red, square box wagon * * * and took the national road for Michigan lake, the mud about two feet deep, and as black as tar."

"We travelled through a pleasant part of the State of Indiana, so far as land is concerned, until we arrived at Michigan City, situate on the lake shore, where three years before I had slept under the wagon, and the young lady who was with us slept in it. There were no inhabitants within nine miles of it at that time, and now it was a considerable town, and called a city." As in August, 1833, the first log cabin, so far as known, was built in Michigan City, this visit must have been in 1834 rather than in 1833, and so the conjecture that 1830, as the date of the first carriage track made there, should be 1831 is confirmed.

Misprints in dates are by no means uncommon. One more extract, as again Michigan City is a starting point. "We there took the beach of the Michigan lake and followed it to Chicago, and there we found a large town built up in three years; for it was only three years since we were there with the black oxen

and wagon, and at that time (1831) there were but half a dozen houses in the place." And here, in 1834, we will leave this singular man, Jeremiah Church, and his interesting journal.

Having found a peculiar traveller crossing, in 1831, the strip of land bordering on Lake Michigan from Chicago to Detroit, and from Detroit back to Chicago; then again, from Chicago to Door Prairie and back once more to Chicago and then, in 1834, from Michigan City to Chicago: next in the order of time come, "Travels of James H. Luther in 1834, 1835, and 1836."

He is writing for "Lake County, 1884," and he says, "The northern extremity of Lake County had a history before the central and southern portions were hardly known." He refers to travel "along the beach of Lake Michigan" from Detroit to Fort Dearborn before 1834, and then, in 1834, his own narrative begins. It is so graphic and so illustrative of pioneer life that it does not seem suitable to condense it.

He says: "I, in company with the Cutler boys of La Porte County, travelled with ox teams upon the beach from near where Indiana City was afterwards built to Chicago, and Fox River, Illinois, which was then called the Indian country, was unsurveyed, and occupied by Aborigines. Our object was to make claims and secure farms. I was then nineteen years old."

This must have been sometime in 1834. "We returned in the spring of 1835 for teams and supplies. After the grass had grown so that our cattle could subsist upon it, we, with an elderly gentleman from Virginia, by the name of Gillilan, who had a large

family of girls, three horses, a 'schooner wagon' filled full, started west, and this time struck the beach at Michigan City. Our first camp was on the beach where, back of the sand ridge, were extensive marsh lands with abundant grass, upon which we turned our cattle consisting of eight yoke of oxen and one cow." In the morning, when hunting up their oxen, one was missing. They found him mired in the marsh and "almost out of sight." They succeeded in getting his legs out of the mire and then rolled him about five rods to ground upon which he could stand.

The narrative proceeds. "We only made about three miles on our way that day. We finally reached the Calumet, now South Chicago, without further accident * * * and went into camp. That region was then all a common with plenty of feed. A small ferry was then used there by the single inhabitant living on the north side of the river in a log cabin. After considering the matter well and consulting with the ferryman, we concluded to drive into the lake below and go round the river on the sand bar. After studying and getting our bearings we hitched our friend's lead horse before the ox teams and I, as pilot, led the way, and succeeded in getting the ox teams nicely over. Our Virginia friend and family came next. They had never seen so large a body of water before, and were very timid in spite of all. The only danger was in getting too near the river, not in getting too far into the lake. I hitched on to them and started in. They were scared and screamed, and begged me to get nearer land, which I presume I did, and the wheels began to sink in the softer sand near the river and we were stalled. The boys on the other side hastened to us. I dismounted into the cold

liquid to my armpits; could hardly keep the precious freight aboard our wagon. But the oxen came, were hitched on, and my horse to lead, and we pulled out all safe and well pleased. This was exciting, but we boys feared nothing, but it was awful to our Virginia friends. But they soon cooled off, settled on a claim near ours, and were happy * * * I drove teams between Chicago and La Porte up to the fall of 1836 and did not know of any other way but via the beach."

"I have not travelled along that beach since 1836, but in the spring of 1837, I started from Valparaiso for Milwaukee * * * intending to take the usual beach route, but missed it, and came upon what my friend, Bartlett Woods, speaks of as the 'ever-to-be-remembered-by-those-who-crossed-it,' Long Bridge over the Calumet River, at the mouth of Salt Creek, built of logs and covered with poles * * * I had far more fear in crossing this than I had in getting around the mouth of the Calumet River."

This rather remarkable bridge he thinks was built by Porter and Lake counties in 1836. His father, James Luther, he says, was the commissioner of Porter County for building it. Constructed, he says, of logs and covered with poles, it was commonly called the Long Pole Bridge, and many probably, supposed that nothing but poles entered into its construction. G. A. Garard says it was sixty-four rods long.

In the same spring of 1837, James H. Luther returned from Chicago to Porter County by stage, and the line of travel which he gives as the stage route at that time was, "along the lake banks" "to the Calumet, which we ferried, thence to the Calumet again where Hammond now is, * * * thence the road

ran on between the Grand and Little Calumet rivers via Baillytown * * * to Michigan City."

Besides the beach route which was evidently the earliest between Michigan City and Chicago, the traces yet remain of the two other routes of travel in the days of those early stages; the one passing not far from the present Hessville; the other, south of the Little Calumet, by way of the Pole Bridge and the early Liverpool, along that grand sand ridge where now are Highland and Munster. Old roadways, unless plowed over and over, leave their traces for many long years.

The next interesting record of travel along one of these lines is of a trip made by James Adams in 1837.

"In the year 1835 James Adams passed through Liverpool on his way to Chicago or Fort Dearborn. He returned in the winter to Michigan. In January, 1837, during the Patriot's War in Canada, he was sent by Governor Mason and General Brady, from Detroit to Chicago, as messenger extraordinary to obtain soldiers from Fort Dearborn to aid in the defense of Detroit. There was, it may be remembered, a stage route then between these two places. The sleighing was at this time good. Warmly clad, furnished by General Brady with a pair of good fur gloves, receiving instructions to make the distance in twenty-four hours, if possible, he left Detroit at 4 p. m., in a sleigh drawn by a good stage horse. At each stopping place, the distance between being about twelve or fifteen miles, he gave the attending hostler a few moments for changing his horse, requiring the best horse in the stable, and dashed on. At 8 p. m., of the next day he entered Chicago; thus making the distance in twenty-eight hours, probably the shortest

time in which a man ever passed over that route drawn by horse power. He delivered his instructions to Captain Jamison, who chartered the stagecoaches and sent the soldiers immediately to Detroit. J. Adams was allowed to remain off duty for four weeks."

He was at this time a regular stage driver on the line from Detroit to Chicago, and well did he know the road. Distance, 284 miles.

Note: Both James H. Luther and James Adams were for many years well known citizens of Lake County, the former having been county auditor from 1861 to 1869.

In 1837 I crossed that long pole bridge as many as five times, passing from City West into Lake County and returning to City West. T. H. B.

CHAPTER XXIII.

OUR PUBLIC SCHOOLS.

Said Dr. Lyman Beecher, many years ago, as a man of "the East" speaking of what was then called "the West:"

"We must educate! we must educate! or we must perish by our own prosperity. If we do not, short will be our race from the cradle to the grave." While some of our pioneers were men quite ignorant of books, untrained in schools, true men of the frontiers, understanding well the use of the axe and the rifle, others of them, and many of them, came from the older centers of cultivation and intelligence, from New England, New York, Pennsylvania, and other Eastern States; and these very soon after providing for the two great necessities of life, shelter and food, began to lay the foundations for schools and churches. Learning and religion, with them went hand in hand with material prosperity. They understood the meaning of those other words of Dr. Beecher, "If, in our haste to be rich and mighty, we outrun our literary and religious institutions, they will never overtake us;" and "what will become of the West, if her prosperity rushes up to such a majesty of power, while those great institutions linger which are necessary to form the mind, and the conscience and the heart

of the vast world? It must not be permitted." And they were here, these intelligent and virtue-loving pioneers, before the Indian mission schools had fully ceased, to see under the Providence of God, that it was not permitted.

Little log school houses were erected by these men, all the pioneers manifesting a praiseworthy interest in having school life commence. The authority for some statements, now, is the "History of La Porte County" elsewhere mentioned.

"The first school house which was built in the county was on Lake Du Chemin * * * in the year 1829. This was, however, a mission school, intended for the Indians; but it subsequently served for both Indian and white alike."

The second school house was built in 1832, the first pioneer building, erected at a place called then or afterward, Springville. Miss Emily Learning was the first teacher. And in 1833 Miss Clara Holmes taught in a log school house near what became Door Village. In 1833 also was built the first school house in what became the village and town and city of La Porte. In this year the pioneers erected a building for a school near Hudson Lake, which seems to have taken the place of the building of 1829. The teacher here was ————— Edwards.

In 1834 other log buildings were erected for schools, one in the new Michigan City; and in this same year "Elder Silas Tucker, a Baptist minister," succeeded Miss Learning at Springville. In the next three years a few other buildings for schools were erected, and teachers were: Joel Butler, Miss Amanda Armitage in 1836, John B. McDonald, Miss Elisabeth Vickory, Ebenezer Palmer, and, in 1837 or 1838,

William C. Takcott, "then a Universalist preacher," and since then a judge, an editor, a writer.

Before looking for other pioneer schools, the truth of history will surely not suffer from the following statements:

The first school, of which any mention has been found, was an Indian mission school on Hudson or Du Chemin Lake in 1829. It is difficult now to obtain all the facts, but no little time has been spent in making research. It is evident that, by some means, the writer of the La Porte County history must have been misled in regard to the "Carey," or as he writes it, the "Cary Mission." On page 400 of his large, interesting, and valuable work, he states that "Joseph W. Lykins, connected with the 'Cary Mission,' whose headquarters were then at Niles, in Michigan, established a mission among the Indians on the bank of the Du Chemin Lake, now in Hudson township." He gives 1829 as the year. On page 402 he says, writing of events in the year 1830, "As stated elsewhere, the Cary Mission, a Roman Catholic enterprise, had established a branch mission at this place among the Indians." The place he names is "Lake Du Chemin." He continues: "This year we find this mission school taught by an Indian named Robert Simmerwell, assisted by his wife, a white woman. At this school white and Indian children come together." "Some of the Indians at this place, under the training and influence of this mission and school, no doubt became most devout Catholics."

The last statement is evidently guess-work.

He once more, on page 431, treating of "Indian advancement in knowledge," refers to this Hudson

Lake school and to Robert Simmerwell, an Indian, as being in charge of it in 1830, and adds: "It may be further remarked that many of these Indians became devout Catholics under his training." This is very naturally assumed from the supposed facts. But the reader has seen in the second chapter of this book, page 25, that the Rev. Isaac McCoy, a Protestant and a Baptist, established the "Carey Mission" in Michigan, and that Mr. Lykins was his assistant. Now it is not probable that there was at that time a "Cary Mission," Catholic, and a "Carey Mission," Baptist; a Mr. Lykins, Catholic, and a Mr. Lykins, Baptist. Abundant proof of the Baptist "Carey Mission" station and school can be found in "The Missionary Jubilee," an official work of 500 pages, published in 1865. (See pages 466 and 467). It is there stated, after giving the facts already named, that "the removal of the Indians to the West was delayed one or two years, during which a small school was maintained by Mr. Simmerwell." This school may have been on Hudson Lake. The report in the "Missionary Jubilee" further says that "Mr. and Mrs. Simmerwell, who labored for the Pottawatomies at Carey Station in Michigan, accompanied them to their new location, west of the Mississippi." It states, officially, that Robert Simmerwell (page 264) was born at Blockley, Penn., and was appointed Baptist missionary to the Indians (see page 265), April 30, 1825, and that he resigned and the mission was discontinued April 8, 1844. There could hardly have been two Robert Simmerwells teaching among these Indians in Michigan in 1830, and this one could not have been an Indian and certainly was a Baptist.

Combining the authorities the unexpected result

is reached, that the first school in northwestern Indiana opened in 1829, in a house "of hewed logs," was a Baptist Indian mission school where white and copper-colored children received instruction from the same teachers. That many of the Indians around this "beautiful lake" became "devout" Baptists as a result of this school is not in the least probable.

Finding that General Packard's excellent and reliable history of La Porte County gives some statements in regard to this school, without, however, suggesting that it was Catholic, the following statements, recapitulating in part the gathered facts, are here inserted:

Rev. Isaac McCoy, a native of Indiana, was appointed a Baptist missionary among the Indians in 1817. He removed from Fort Wayne to Carey in November, 1822. In January, 1823, he opened a school there for the Indians. His labors there closed in 1830. His very full and interesting history, "History of Baptist Indian Missions," was published in 1840.

Speaking of Robert Simmerwell, J. Lykins, and Jotham Meeker, Mr. McCoy says: "For many years we have all labored side by side in our missionary enterprise." The full name of Mr. Lykins is given as Johnston Lykins in the official missionary reports, and he was born in Ohio. According to Mr. McCoy's narrative, Mr. Lykins was sick in the West in November, 1829. On recovering he returned to Michigan, to Carey, and in the early part of 1830, selected fifty-eight reservations of land for young Indians connected with the mission school which land had been allowed at the treaty of 1826. He then, April 29, 1830, started with Dr. Josephus McCoy for Fayette,

in Missouri, arriving there June 24, 1830. He left Mr. Simmerwell at Carey in April, 1830, and he himself returned to Carey, leaving Missouri July 27, 1830. He soon after his arrival at Carey attended to the valuation of the mission property, which had been purchased by the government and was now valued by Charles Noble of Michigan and Mr. Simonson of Indiana at \$5,721.50. The arrangement was made that Mr. Simmerwell should occupy a part of the mission buildings till he could arrange for another temporary residence not far away, as it was considered desirable for him to remain till the Indians were removed. He and his wife remained at Carey for a few months, the school being discontinued except seven or eight Indian children which Mr. and Mrs. Simmerwell kept with them. Mr. McCoy's narrative says that they "then located in another place in the same neighborhood." It must have been now well along in 1831. Mr. Lykins went to Missouri. The Missionary Jubilee, an official report, says: "Mr. Lykins, the associate of Mr. McCoy at Carey, appointed to labor among the Shawanees in Missouri, arrived on his field on July 7, 1831." That official report also says, "Mr. and Mrs. Simmerwell, who labored for the Pottawatomies at Carey Station in Michigan, accompanied them to their new location west of the Mississippi." That report further says, in regard to Carey, that by a treaty provision "the station was substantially relinquished in 1831." "The removal of the Indians to the West was delayed one or two years, during which a small school was maintained by Mr. Simmerwell. Again the report says: "Mr. Simmerwell removed to Shawanee, Ind. Ter., arriving November 14, 1833." These reports and the

narrative of Mr. McCoy leave no time for Mr. Johnston Lykins, a native of Ohio, one of the missionaries at Carey Station, to be a resident at Hudson Lake in 1829 or 1830, and the Joseph W. Lykins, a Welshman, could not have been "connected with the 'Carey Mission,' " that Lykins who was, according to General Packard's authorities, a resident at Hudson Lake in the fall of 1829. That Mr. Robert Simmerwell, a missionary and not an Indian, of whom Mr. McCoy says, "At Albany I found Mr. Robert Simmerwell, with whom I had formed an acquaintance in Philadelphia," and of whom he further says, "We found in Mr. Simmerwell a persevering missionary brother,"—that he, with his wife, did have a school at Hudson Lake, between the spring of 1831 and the fall of 1833, may readily be accepted as a fact. One statement more. In "Catholic Missions Among the Indian Tribes," by Shea (see pages 393 and 394), where the Pottawatomies are mentioned and the St. Joseph River, and "the Baptist ministers stationed there," no mention is made of a Joseph W. Lykins, a Welshman, as a Catholic missionary. One missionary is mentioned as coming among these Indians in 1830, but his name was Reze, and he soon went elsewhere.

Note. July 25, 1899, I conversed with an aged Baptist man, at Morocco, A. B. Jenkins of Goodland, born in 1822, who stated that his father's family was one of seven families who settled, about 1825, between Fort Wayne and Fort Dearborn, and that five of them settled near the present city of Niles. The Carey Mission, he said, was not far from their home, a mile or two west of Niles. It is described as being "on

the river of St. Joseph, in Michigan territory, among the Pottawatomies.”

T. H. B.

Returning now to the real pioneer schools in the little log buildings. Miss Mary Hammond is found as the first teacher in Porter County, and the year given is 1835. In 1837, ——— Masters was teacher in the village of Valparaiso, and the first woman who taught there, it is said, was Miss Eldred, a sister of Mrs. Ruel Starr. Log buildings went up and many neighborhood schools were commenced. In what became Lake County the first school was taught in the winter of 1835 and 1836 by Mrs. Harriet Holton, in some respects the most remarkable woman ever residing in Lake County. She was the daughter of General Warner, was born in Hardwick, Mass., January 15, 1783, was married to Alexander Holton, a young lawyer, about 1804, with him left New England, having been a successful teacher in Westminster, and settled at Vevay, Ind., in March, 1817. In 1820, the family removed to Vernon, Ind., where Mrs. Holton became again a teacher, and in February, 1835, then a widow, having two sons and a daughter, she, with others, in wagons drawn by oxen, journeyed toward the Northwest, crossed with their ox teams the Kankakee marsh region in fearfully cold weather, and became a resident in the hamlet which afterward, as a village and county seat, was called Crown Point. She had seven sisters, and when their mother died, about 1840, about ninety-four years of age, the eight sisters met at Enfield, in New England. One was the wife of the wealthy governor of Vermont; one was Mrs. Stuart, wife of Judge Stuart of Vermont, a man of wealth as well as of social position; another

was Mrs. Bradley, wife of a Vermont lawyer; another was Mrs. Brown, wife of a Massachusetts lawyer, and yet another, a Mrs. Hitchcock, also wife of a Massachusetts lawyer; and Mrs. Harriet Warner Holton, an Indiana pioneer woman, Lake County's first teacher, worthy of her place as a sister of those wealthy and cultivated women of New England. "These eight sisters were all members of the Presbyterian church, and all died of old age, two of them while sitting in their chairs." Mrs. Holton died October 17, 1879, nearly ninety-seven years of age, and as the body was borne toward the Crown Point cemetery the court house bell was tolled, which was the first and last time till now (1900), that its deep tones have been heard at the time of a burial procession. "Honor to whom honor is due."

In 1835 there was no school house in Lake County. All the earliest ones were of logs, and which one, among three or four, was first is not now quite certain. The most noted of these, probably the largest, the walls still standing, was erected in the summer of 1838, on the west side of Red Cedar Lake. Here the school was taught by Mrs. J. H. Ball. She, like Mrs. Holton, was by no means an uncultivated woman. Born in Agawam (West Springfield), Mass., in 1804, educated in the best schools of Hartford, Conn., a proficient in penmanship, in drawing and painting and map-making, probably the best practical botanist ever residing in the county, and the only woman in the county in those early days who had studied the Hebrew language, she passed at Crown Point the brief examination required for teachers that her pupils might receive their due share of the public school money, William A. W. Holton, school exam-

iner, and commenced her work as a teacher in 1839, a work which in another form continued for some sixteen years, and in an informal way until her death, in 1880. For about ten years that large log school house was a center and a meeting place for schools, for literary societies, for Sunday school and church work, and then was appropriated for private uses.

Other early teachers, in a house on the east side of this same lake were: Albert Taylor, Lorin Hall, Norman Warriner, probably in the winter of 1838 and 1839, in 1840 or 1841 Miss H. Caroline Warriner, and in the winter of 1843 and 1844 T. H. Ball. Yet others were: Miss Eliza Kinyon, at South East Grove in 1843, Miss Rhoda Wallace in 1844, and Miss Ruby Wallace and her sister, now Mrs. William Brown, in 1845. No record of a school building in Starke County has been found until the year 1852, although "Wagner's little building in Oregon township had been used before this for a school."

In Jasper County the first school building, twelve feet by fourteen as to its dimensions, was erected in 1838. Its location was known as "The Fork." The first teacher was William A. Webster. The second school house was built soon after the first in the Blue Grass settlement northeast of Rensselaer. No record of date has been found for the first school building in the area that became Newton County, but an early teacher there was Byron Kenoyer.

In Pulaski County, organized in 1839, about ten years after the first white family entered its borders, there were pioneer schools; as also there were in White County; but records in regard to them have not been found, and there are few living now whose memories reach back distinctly over a period of sev-

enty or even of sixty years. Rude as were the buildings in those early years it need not be supposed that the teachers were unlearned, undisciplined, uncultivated. Some of them were men and women of mature years, who had been well trained in Eastern schools and colleges, and only for a short time were such found teaching in pioneer schools. The undisciplined teachers came in after years, and from families where there was little home training. One of the accomplishments needful for a pioneer teacher, which may be called a "lost art" now, was how to make pens of goose quills, and also how to mend them. For this purpose a sharp pen-knife was always needful and some degree of skill, for it was not a very easy thing to make a good pen. It was quite a tax upon one's time, and sometimes a trial of the teacher's and pupil's patience. One young teacher in Lake County, while not lacking in skill, had a little, ingenious instrument called a penmaker, which usually made a good pen in a moment and so saved much time. How early public funds were used to sustain or help to sustain these earlier schools, treated here as public schools, is not quite certain; but evidently very soon after the schools were commenced. The first constitution of the State, adopted at Corydon in 1816, laid the foundation for public education. The early acts of the general assembly provided for the election of trustees, of school commissioners, and for the distribution among school districts, to be marked out in the congressional townships, of public school money. As early as 1843, perhaps some years earlier, public money was paid to teachers, and also distributed in districts where the schools were largely private. Children attending any school were entitled to their share of the

school money for the year. School examiners were appointed by the circuit courts. These officers examined teachers and gave certificates. The first school examiner in White County was James Kerr, in 1836. Money was not to be paid to teachers who had no certificates, nor until legal reports were made. Year after year changes in laws were made. According to an "Act to increase the benefits of common schools," approved January 17, 1849, certain taxes were to be assessed for school purposes, but only upon "free white persons." This act was not to be in force till adopted by vote in each county. By this act the treasurer of state was constituted State superintendent of common schools. In 1852, another school law, under the new constitution of the State, was adopted and a State superintendent was soon elected. By an act approved in March, 1855, each civil township was made a school township, and the trustees were constituted school trustees, but in the enumeration of children between five and twenty-one years of age, the trustee was still required to specify the congressional township in which the children resided, and the law said: "The number of children in each congressional township shall be set out." Incorporated towns and cities were now authorized to establish public and graded schools. Provision was made for township libraries. Negroes and mulattoes were still excluded from taxation, and their children from enumeration and school privileges. The children could attend the schools on payment of tuition if no white persons objected. By the act approved March 4, 1853, the school examiners were to be appointed annually by the county commissioners. These were to examine teachers in orthography, read-

ing, writing, arithmetic, geography, and English grammar. Some time after physiology and United States history were added. New laws continued to be framed. In 1873 county examiners became county superintendents, appointed by the school trustees of the townships, and the public school system of Indiana has become quite mature. The school fund is large. Along with all these changes, improvements, and complications, our schools, teachers, and officers have gone. Some of our schools are among the best of their kind in the State.

In 1889 a law was passed requiring uniformity in text-books in the public schools throughout the State. The law-makers in the earlier years of our public schools do not seem to have had an exalted opinion of the moral character of the teachers, for they required them not only to present full reports of their schools, but the accuracy of their reports had to be confirmed by an oath. Here is one illustration:

"State of Indiana, County of Lake, ss:

I, Uriah McCay, being duly sworn, do depose and say that the foregoing statement * * * is true."

"Subscribed and sworn before me this 26th day of February, 1854.

"JABEZ CLARK, TRUSTEE."

The teacher named above, like Elder Silas Tucker in La Porte County and Elder Bly in Porter, was a Baptist minister, devoting, as they did, and as ministers of other denominations in those years did, part of the time to preaching, and a part to teaching to obtain an adequate support. Elder Uriah McCay was a student for some years at Franklin College taught in the central part of the State, settled at length at

Des Moines, in Iowa, where, so far as known, he yet lives, an aged, excellent man. Fifty-four pupils were reported for that school of 1854. They are arranged into four classes, thus: Males over thirteen and under twenty-one." Names in this section or division are: James Vinnedge, Harrison Young, N. Carle, George Carle, Frederick Davis, George B. Davis, Allis Gale, Benjamin Gale. Not one of these is reported as studying English grammar, but reading, writing, spelling, arithmetic, and one ventured to take hold of geography. "Females over thirteen and under twenty-one." Names: Elisabeth Vinnedge, Susan Davis, Mary H. Young, Nancy Scritchfield, Electa Prentice, Nancy Beck, Elisabeth Beck, Elisabeth Carle. Some of these girls study English grammar, besides the other four needful studies. "Males over five and under thirteen." Names: George W. Edgerton, Henry L. McCarty, Joseph Vinnedge, Francis M. Vinnedge, Louis F. Edgerton, Sampson Carle, Goliah Carle, Orrin Thompson, Amos Thompson, W. C. Thompson, William Hill, Jesse Hill, Jackson Scritchfield, Orlando Prentice, Israel Beck, Edwin Stokes, Emanuel Beck, S. Scritchfield, Cassius M. Taylor, Marion King. "Females over five and under thirteen." Names: Catherine Taylor, Mary E. Hill, Amy Mann, Mary A. Davis, Esther S. Davis, Mary E. Vinnedge, Delila A. Vinnedge, Sabra M. Taylor, Mary A. Taylor, Arvilla Carle, Martha Scritchfield, Ethlinda Gale, Sarah Young, Sabra Vinnedge, Martha Thompson, Harriet Beck, Louisa Hill, Frances Scritchfield.

Accompanying this report is another of the same year and township, Cedar Creek township, signed by Maria Bryant, teacher, reporting forty-six pupils,

"subscribed and sworn to" before Timothy Cleveland, township clerk, March 28, 1854. The same branches taught, "orthography, reading, writing, arithmetic, geography, English grammar."

The following extract, from a long report of school visitations made by James H. Ball, school examiner, shows the capture of a deer by dogs and school boys as late as 1869: No. 3, Temple school, Miss E. Kenney, teacher. Most of the boys absent. Adventure in the chase attracted them out. A wounded deer chased by the hounds sought for protection at the school house, and as it "doubled" on its track to evade its pursuers what school boy could resist the temptation of joining in the chase while the "wild bay was sounding?" What girl could watch or look upon a scene like this without emotion? Captured and the spoils divided, sparingly to go round, and but few returned to study.

The reports, of which the above is one, were published in the Crown Point Register, and were probably the first regular and formal visitations of schools in Lake County by a county officer. A few names of teachers of the year 1869 are here given, taken from these reports: Miss Miriam McWilliams, T. S. Fancher, Miss Mena Groman, C. D. Farwell, Miss H. F. Ritcher, C. C. Dittmers, Miss Ann Sheehan, J. M. Blayney, G. F. Sutton, R C Wood, Ralph Bacon, Miss Sarah J Turner, Miss Jennie Death, Leonhart Wagner, Adam Gerlach, Edwin Mair, Paul Lehman, Nicholas Niefing, Anton Miller, J. Evans, Jas. Dowd, Miss Jeannette Pearce, Miss F. A. Williams, William Hill, J. W. Hoel, Miss Sophia Westerman, Putnam Pratt, W. F. Purington, Miss H. A. Dickerson, Miss Josephine Einslie, and Miss Emily Vanhouten. These

were teachers in Hanover, West Creek, Cedar Creek, and St. Johns townships. These reports were published thirty years ago. At that time, 1869, some of the schools in German neighborhoods were just working into English. One of these reports says: German taught half a day twice a week, and catechism after four o'clock each day. Arithmetics used combine the German and English on opposite pages. Writing in German and English equal." Of another school the report says: "Recitations in German and English interspersed freely. This district is apparently satisfied with the mother tongue." Of another, "Class in German botany." Of another, "German seems to preponderate." "This is a hard working teacher and in German, excellent, but pronunciation of English poor." Changes have taken place in thirty years. For some years the Scripture was read in the morning in the American public schools and prayer was often offered. And, as mentioned above, "Catechism" was freely taught in several of the schools. Now the Bible is excluded from the public schools almost entirely and the voice of prayer, except in the German schools, is seldom heard. The Catechism, too, has nearly gone out from the public schools.

The following statements are taken from the Nineteenth Biennial Report of the State Superintendent (department of public instruction), and "transmitted to the General Assembly January 15, 1899:"

A. Number of school houses:

	Stone.	Brick.	Frame.	Total.
Lake		26	95	121
Porter		53	50	103
La Porte	1	53	82	136
Starke		7	59	66
Pulaski ..		4	97	101
White ..		5	118	123
Jasper		5	103	108
Newton ..		3	73	76

Total 834

B. Number of teachers:

	In town- ships.	In towns.	In cities.	Total.	In high schools.
Lake	135	17	49	201	21
Porter	113	5	28	146	15
La Porte	137	4	77	218	47
Starke ..	66	15		81	3
Pulaski	105	16		121	11
White ..	123	39		162	15
Jasper	108	11	17	136	
Newton ..	75	24		99	8

Total 1,164

C. Number of graded township or county schools:

Lake, 13; Porter, 6; La Porte, —; Starke, 3; Pulaski, 2; White, 4; Jasper, 5; Newton, 3.

D. Of township graded high schools: Lake, 7; Porter, 1; La Porte, 10; Starke, 0; Pulaski, 3; White, 2; Jasper, 0; Newton, 1. Among the seven graded township high schools in the State called "Commissioned," Lake County has one. Marion County alone

has two. Four other counties, Hamilton, Hancock, Lagrange, and Miami, have one each.

Enumeration of school children, between the ages of six years and twenty-one, for 1898:

	No. in townships.	In towns.	In cities.	Total.
Lake	5,438	1,073	3,758	10,233
Porter	4,071	211	1,595	5,877
La Porte	5,172	155	7,813	13,140
Starke	2,590	928		3,518
Pulaski	3,951	862		4,813
White	4,119	1,796		5,915
Jasper	3,414	944	763	4,621
Newton	2,249	1,078		3,327

Grand totals 31,004 7,011 13,929 51,444

E. Compensation of teachers: Average per day for each teacher in dollars and cents: Lake, \$2.30; Porter, \$2.08; La Porte, \$2.11; Starke, \$1.98; Pulaski, \$2.01; White, \$2.29; Jasper, \$2; Newton, \$2.27. Average per day of high school teachers: Lake, \$3.62; Porter, \$4.05; La Porte, \$3.44; Starke, \$3.50; Pulaski, \$3.32; White, \$3.40; Jasper, \$3.41; Newton, \$3.35; Average of teachers in district schools: Lake, \$2; Porter, \$1.89; La Porte, \$1.78; Starke, \$1.98; Pulaski, \$1.84; White, \$2.05; Jasper, \$1.89; Newton, \$2.06.

F. Amount paid teachers in each county, in dollars, omitting odd cents: Lake, \$84,247; Porter, 52,435; La Porte, \$86,151; Starke, \$20,995; Pulaski, \$29,377; White, \$46,518; Jasper, 37,412; Newton, \$31,693.

G. Total estimated value of school property in dollars: Lake, \$353,635; Porter, \$219,200; La Porte, \$360,319; Starke, \$73,420; Pulaski, \$89,670; White,

\$145,925; Jasper, \$140,055; Newton, \$85,025. Total, \$1,467,249.

H. Total amount paid in one year, to our 1,164 teachers, \$388,828, being an average to each teacher of \$334. To the teachers in Lake an average of \$419, omitting the cents; in Porter, \$359; La Porte, \$395; Starke, \$259; Pulaski, \$242; White, \$287; Jasper, \$267; Newton, \$318. These items under H not in the "Report," but are derived from it.

I. Average length of terms in days: Lake, 179; Porter, 173; La Porte, 167; Starke, 123; Pulaski, 128; White, 136; Jasper, 136; Newton, 145.

J. Number of volumes in township libraries: Lake, 4,405; Porter, 6,573; La Porte, —; Starke, 3,288; Pulaski, —; White, 510; Jasper, —; Newton, —.

K. Number of books in Young People's Reading Circle libraries: Lake, 1,832; Porter, —; La Porte, 9,842; Starke, 1,695; Pulaski, 393; White, 1,716; Jasper, —; Newton, —.

L. County diplomas issued for the year 1898: Lake, —; Porter, 81; La Porte, 145; Starke, 115; Pulaski, 119; White, —; Jasper, —; Newton, 56.

M. Membership in Young People's Reading Circle for the year 1897-1898: Lake, 3,460; Porter, 789; La Porte, 1,132; Starke, 3,000; Pulaski, —; White, 2,117; Jasper, 517; Newton, 350.

N. Membership in Teachers' Reading Circle, same year: Lake, 202; Porter, 146; La Porte, 145; Starke, —; Pulaski, 83; White, 208; Jasper, 132; Newton, 95.

These reading circles of the State of Indiana were organized by the State Teachers' Association, the one for teachers in 1883, the one for young people in 1887. The State Teachers' Association was organized in

1854. Southern Indiana Teachers' Association 1877, Northern 1883.

One more statement may be added here.

O. Amounts paid trustees in a year for managing educational matters. Amounts in dollars: Lake, \$2,052; Porter, \$1,380; La Porte, \$1,663; Starke, \$479; Pulaski, \$1,002; White, \$878; Jasper, —; Newton, \$695.

Some names have been given of teachers in Lake County thirty years ago, which are of interest to many in Lake County now. The following list of names of the teachers of Newton County in 1899, furnished by the county superintendent, W. L. Kellenberger, will be of interest to some in Newton County thirty years hence, and so a place is given to them here. In Kentland seven: E. H. Drake, E. A. Turner, Frances Jessen, Ethel Darroch, M. Blanche Ellis, Myrtle Hays, and Ruth T. Chase.

In Goodland nine: J. C. Dickerson, Edna Watson, Chauncy Kemper, Sophia Getting, Anna Dershall, H. C. Deist, Fred Perry, Etha Massena, and Nellie Harper. In Brook, four: W. L. Kellenberger, Laura Esson, Bruce Pumphry, Flora Pfrimmer. In Morocco, five: E. E. Giltner, S. R. Sizelove, Anna Tullis, George Royster, and Essie Kendall. In Jefferson township, eleven: Lillie Kenoyer, Ethel Rider, W. O. Carrothers, J. B. Lowe, Della Light, Sarah Duffy, Kathrina Pfrimmer, Mabel Pfrimmer, Edmona Pfrimmer, Laura Harris, and Maggie Spaulding. In Grant township, seven: Gertrude Ellis, Myrtle Rice, Roy Shepard, Frank Burns, William Tice, Grace D. Clark, and James Gilmore. In Washington township, thirteen: E. E. Hussy, Charles Buswell, L. A. Loving, John Pratt, Lloyd Hesshman, Anna Hiel-

man, Mildred M. Groves, Nannie B. Buswell, Pearl Pendergrass, Emma Doty, Cora Dear-durff, Chloh Merchant, and Belle Odle. In Iroquois township, seven: Roy Hesshman, Mary Duffy, L. C. Lyons, C. E. Sage, J. Thomas, Maud Hess, and Mittie Dewerse. In Bower township, eight: Lolo Graves, Daisy Thompson, Claud Roberts, W. O. Schaudlaub, Joyce Smith, Maggie Tracy, D. E. Corbin, and Nellie Hatch. In Jackson township, ten; C. G. Hammond, Nora Kuney, Leotha Seward, Eva Hess, Flora Parks, Jesse Marion, L. B. Haskell, Saloma Pfrimmer, Hayes Young, and Mamie Tracy. In McClellan township, four: Elva Skinner, Jesse Hunter, Libbie Bolley, and Lillie Mahin. In Colfax township, four: Fannie Kasel, Will Jenkins, N. W. Parks, and Hattie Boston. In Lake township, five: R. Hess, Guy Myers, F. A. Tyler, E. Ainsworth, and Perry Heath. In Lincoln township, eight: George E. Rogers, Emma Brady, Tavia Gibson, Mae Laughlin, Mary Howminski, Ernest Lamson, Maurice Sterner, and Lucy Ball. In all 102 teachers in Newton County for the school year of 1898 and 1899. As near as can be determined from the names, about 56 young ladies and 46 men.

Some interesting particulars in regard to the schools of Pulaski County are presented here, as taken from the annual report of these schools for 1898. The names are given of 125 as the teachers of the county. Of common school graduates the names of 116 are given, with the subjects or title of their graduating papers and orations. Some of these subjects are weighty for common school graduates to handle, but they show the advance in education in our day. Such are, "Our Duty to Posterity," "Centralization,"

"Newspapers of the United States," "Civil Service Reform," and "Christianity and Civilization." Some indicate very interesting papers, as "Indiana," "Pulaski County," "The Tippecanoe," and "Water Fowls of Pulaski County." One is specially suggestive, "Humble Origin of Man." The author is a girl, perhaps a young evolutionist coming on to take part in the conflict of opinions.

It seems from the Report that a county contest of young orators is held each year, one from each township contending for the "honors," the first being a gold medal and the second a silver medal. The grading is on the following points: Thought in the oration 30 per cent, originality 30, memory 20, force in delivery 10, and gesture 10, making in all, for perfection 100 per cent. Some might question, on this grading whether gestures were really as valuable as force in delivery of orations, and whether originality was three times as valuable as force. That originality is very rare in school orations is quite well known. In reporting the county teachers' institute this Report sets surely a good example, in publishing all the receipts and expenditures, item by item, so that all may know from what sources the money comes and how each dollar is applied. Some regulations adopted by the county board of education are, perhaps, peculiar to this advanced county, and are worthy of record. One is, that all schools of the county shall open on the same day. Another is, that all schools shall close for one week during the holidays. A third is, that the daily session shall be commenced not later than 8:45 a. m., and not be closed before 4 o'clock p. m., with one hour's intermission at noon. In the time table 15 minutes are assigned to the "opening exercises."

It would be interesting to know in what these exercises consist. The most time assigned to any one study is seventy-five minutes, the time given for reading and also arithmetic. Among "suggestions" these school officials say, and no doubt well say: "The three great difficulties in the way of our public schools are, the youth of many of the teachers, the lack of training on the part of a large majority of teachers, the use of too many text-books."

It is not supposed in these records of schools to institute any comparison in the particulars brought out in this Report, between Pulaski County and the seven other counties; but some material is furnished that readers may compare for themselves.

While the early schools were in rooms that would not be considered comfortable now, it is not wise to infer that no good teaching was done, for among these pioneer teachers were such men as Judge William C. Talcott, Judge Hervey Ball, a graduate of Middlebury College, Rev. Norman Warriner, Rev. afterwards Dr. Silas Tucker, Alexander Hamilton, who taught in Porter County, who afterwards became a leading lawyer of Chicago, "a man of high family and fine education," and others, men and women whose names need not be repeated here. Yet the shrewd Miss Rachel B. Carter, Miss Ursula Jackson, and especially Mrs. Harriet Holton may be named, and there were yet other women of no mere backwood's training. Largely the teacher makes the school, whatever are the appliances or surroundings; and with all the modern improvements there are yet in our public schools some rather inferior teachers. It is not wise nor altogether generous to decry the past.

Some have done this to the injury of their own interests.

“Say not our age is wiser, if it be
It is the wisdom which the past has given
That makes it so.”

Nor yet is it well to magnify unreasonably the things of the past. Well does Dr. Horatius Bonar ask:

“Did the long gleam upon the ancient Nile
Blaze in a richer radiance to the noon,
When History’s old father gazed upon it?
Or was the sunshine on the hills of Greece
Purer when Homer sang and Sappho wept?
Or was the brow of Lebanon more fair
With whiter snow wreaths when the kings of Tyre
Built their marble palaces beneath
The mighty shadows of its haughty peaks?

* * * * *

I know not; yet I love to wander back
To this earth’s younger days and earlier scenes,
In which there seems to meet both age and youth,
The blossom and the fruit, the joy of dawn,
And the grave quiet of the solemn eve.”

That some of the most noted teachers of the world lived in the long ago past every scholar knows; and that we had some good, very good teachers in our pioneer days, which are not many years back, surely no well-informed person will question, although the walls of the houses were of logs and the window glass only oiled paper. And there were those trained, at least for a time, in those schools, who have done good work in these later years.

Said Senator Miller of New York some years ago, addressing the public school teachers of that Empire

State: "The future of all legislatures, judiciaries, and executives, is in the keeping of the educational department; whether they shall wisely provide for the public good, honestly interpret the laws, and faithfully execute them, depends upon the honesty of the work done by our teachers." "The three hundred thousand teachers, with more than two millions of pupils under their charge, reaching into and taking hold of the heart strings of every family in the land, constitute a power which, when directed toward the achievement of any reform in society or government, cannot be successfully resisted by any opposition or combination of opposing forces."

In these things our children ought to be more thoroughly instructed, obedience to lawful authority, regard for truth, regard for the rights of others.

CHAPTER XXIV.

PRIVATE AND PAROCHIAL SCHOOLS.

Before the public schools had made much advance out of the early pioneer period, several private schools and academies were commenced and carried on for a few years, furnishing as these did, a more extensive course of study and better substitutes for collegiate education, than could be found in the public schools.

An early academy was founded at La Porte, called the Lancasterian Academy, Rev. F. P. Cummins, Principal. This academy was opened before 1843, the precise date not found. This school had one evening a grand exhibition, perhaps the most attractive, in its literary exercises that had been given in any of these counties. Two young members of the Cedar Lake Lyceum, E. J. Farwell and T. H. Ball rode in one day about fifty miles on horseback, in order to attend it. And their expectations were realized. The academy was not kept up many years, and about 1843 it was merged in the literary department of the La Porte University for which a charter had been obtained in the winter of 1840 and 1841. The law department of this university was organized in 1841, the medical in 1842, and the literary in 1843. None of these departments flourished very long. Medical lectures were suspended in 1851, and the building was occu-

pied afterwards by Prof. Churchman, who started a literary academy for girls which flourished until the building was burned in the winter of 1855. Other and later private schools were kept up for a time by Mrs. Holmes, T. L. Adams, by W. P. Phelon—Technic and Training school,—and some others, but all, except the parochial schools, at length gave place to the public schools.

In Lake County the first academic and boarding school was opened by Mrs. J. A. H. Ball, about 1840. It continued, in some form, for some sixteen years. "It sent six students to colleges and seminaries and fitted many for business and the duties of life." Among the boarders at this school from other counties was Maria Bradley, of La Porte, who became Mrs. J. P. Early; and she and Elisabeth H. Ball, two of the five girls of City West, were educated for a time together; and from this school, an informal graduate, the latter went forth to New York City and to south Alabama and there became a successful teacher in the Grove Hill Academy; and as the wife of Judge Woodward, of Clarke County, accomplished a large and lasting work in Sunday-school, and church, and mission enterprises. In different parts of the land these two City West girls, one a Methodist, one a Baptist, lived not unto themselves.

The next academic and boarding school of the county was commenced by Rev. Wm. Townley about 1848. In this school instrumental music for the first time in the county was taught. This school achieved in its day a good success. It supplied the public schools largely with teachers from the girls of the school. In November, 1852, Mr. Townley stated that he had had nearly five hundred scholars, and that not

five young men had gone out as teachers. This school closed in 1856, Rev. W. Townley leaving Crown Point for the West.

In 1856 Miss Mary E. Parsons, a graduate of Mount Holyoke Seminary, having taught at Oxford, Ohio, commenced a school at Crown Point, hoping to found another Holyoke school. She accomplished much for the cause of Christian education, but her efforts were terminated by her death at Crown Point, November 14, 1860.

A primary school for children was opened, probably not long after 1860, by Mrs. Sarah J. Robinson, a daughter-in-law of Solon Robinson, and a young widow, one of the best teachers of little children ever in Crown Point, "kind, patient, loving, unselfish, and truly Christian." In July of 1864 she went to Nashville in the service of the Christian Commission. She was also at Memphis, Vicksburg, and New Orleans. She returned in September, 1865, to Crown Point, but not to teach. In 1866 she was married to Dr. W. H. Harrison, an army surgeon, and went with him to Mexico.

The next schools of the county to be mentioned here are a girls' school started by Miss Martha Knight and Miss Kate Knight in 1865; the Crown Point Institute, also commenced in 1865, having a preparatory and collegiate course of study, and in one of its years having about sixty boarding pupils, educating a few hundred young men and young ladies, the property being sold to the town of Crown Point August 1, 1871, for \$3,600; and the Tolleston school established by A. Vander Naillen, a French mathematician, about 1866, in which was taught civil en-

gineering, and which was removed to Chicago in December, 1869.

1. In Porter County, at Valparaiso, Rev. J. C. Brown opened a school in the Presbyterian meeting-house, probably in 1843. It was a school of academic grade, and received pupils from outside of the county. How long it continued is not known. In later years the Valparaiso Institute was established which was for some time a flourishing school, having a large, substantial building and good teachers.

The years of its prosperity included probably 1863. As the public schools improved, this, like the schools in La Porte, gave way to the city graded school.

2. The Valparaiso College was opened in the fall of 1859, the Rev. C. N. Sims, A. M., President. His successors were:

"E. H. Stanley, A. M.; B. W. Smith, A. M.; Thomas B. Wood, LL. D.; R. D. Utter, A. M.; and A. Guernsey, D. D." In 1871 the college gave place to the Northern Indiana Normal College, H. B. Brown, founder.

3. The Northern Indiana Normal School and Business College. Valparaiso.

The special announcement for 1900 says: "The school was organized September 16, 1873, with four departments; four instructors, and thirty-five students; now there are nineteen fully equipped departments, fifty-seven instructors, and an average daily attendance of more than 2,000 students, making this the largest Normal School in the United States."

This school has had a remarkable growth. The school year consists of five terms with ten weeks in each term.

The school was opened in the building of the Val-

paraiso College. It now has large, costly and fine looking buildings, massive they may well be called, on what is known as College Hill.

Near Rensselaer is the St. Joseph's Catholic College, a flourishing institution.

Near the college is located the St. Joseph's Indian Normal School, founded in 1888, as a training school for Indian boys.

PAROCHIAL SCHOOLS.

1. Lutheran Schools in La Porte County:—In Michigan City are two large Lutheran schools, the buildings of brick near to the churches. The churches are large brick edifices nearly opposite each other on the main street of the city. One is called St. Paul's and the other St. John's. In St. Paul's school are four rooms and of pupils 287. Quite an area of ground is in front of the school building and adjoining the church, which in the summer time is a beautiful flower garden.

In the school building of the Church of St. John are three rooms with pupils 220. In La Porte are also two schools. The number officially given for the larger school is 332. Number of pupils at Otis 4; at Tracy 13; at Hanna 21; at Westville 15; at Wana-tah 23.

Placing the smaller school in La Porte at 100 and there will be of Lutheran children in the county receiving church teaching—1,015.

In Porter County:—At Valparaiso, pupils 47, at Kouts, 30. Total—77.

In Lake County:—In this county are seven schools. Number of pupils: Whiting, 61; Tolleston, 92; North Hammond, 95; Hammond, 235; Hobart, 44; Crown Point, 56; Winfield, 15.

Total in Lake County,—598.

In Starke County:—At North Judson, 53; at Winona, 18; Total—71.

In Pulaski County:—At Denham, 22; Medaryville, 6.

In Newton County:—At Goodland, 18.

In White County:—At Reynolds, 43.

In Jasper County:—At Fair Oaks, 24, at Kniman,

11.

Total in the eight counties,—1,885.

2. In the Catholic schools of La Porte are now about one hundred pupils.

In Michigan City there are probably five or six hundred. In the county perhaps eight hundred. No way has been found for obtaining the exact number.

In Porter County the school at Valparaiso is large, numbering no doubt several hundred.

In Lake County there is a large school at Hammond and smaller ones at Crown Point, at St. Johns, at Dyer, and at other places, amounting, in 1890, in eight schools, to 726 pupils.

The number in Lake County at present may be placed at 900.

No way has been found for obtaining any exact estimate of the number of schools or of the pupils in the other counties, but wherever, in those counties, there is a large Roman Catholic church, there is quite sure to be a parochial, Catholic school. The children receive much catechetical instruction. Neither Catholic nor Lutheran children are allowed to pass fourteen years of age ignorant of the great doctrines of their churches.

CHAPTER XXV.

LIBRARIES.

Those to be mentioned in this chapter are of four varieties: township libraries, school libraries, circulating libraries, and town or public libraries.

1. A library coming under no one of these varieties will first be noticed.

In the summer of 1838 there was formed at Valparaiso The Porter County Library Association. A library began to be collected which in 1850 contained about 500 books.

It was neither a public nor a circulating library, for the first by-law adopted was that only members should read the books. In 1855 the books were distributed to the different townships of the county, and, so far as appears, the association was dissolved.

2. The McClure libraries, though coming into no one of the four classes named, also need some mention. From a quite full notice of these given by Mr. Niles in the account of the La Porte Public Library, are taken the following statements: William McClure was "the first president of the Philadelphia Academy of Science, a man of large means, had travelled widely, was intimate with many scientific men, and had an extensive knowledge of science. He became associated with Robert Owen" at New Harmony, a village "on the Wabash River in Posey

County." As Mr. Niles refers for his authority to a "pamphlet prepared by J. P. Dunn of Indianapolis, formerly State Librarian," and as Mr. Dunn says, "The name of William McClure is hardly known in Indiana, outside of Posey County;" and as he also says that "not only have these libraries almost vanished, but even the memory of them is well nigh gone;" and as he adds that "in many years of inquiry" no account of the McClure libraries had been found as given to the public until his pamphlet was issued; it seems appropriate that somewhere in Indiana history some of these facts should be preserved, and therefore, considerable space is here given to a somewhat lengthy extract from a historical sketch "prepared by William Niles."

Robert Owen came to this country in 1823, and he and McClure gathered around them at New Harmony many men eminent in science, including Joseph Neef, the disciple of Pestalozzi and Schoolcraft, the student of Indian life. Owen's experiment ended in failure, and in 1827 Owen returned to England. Two of his sons, however, remained here and were well known and influential citizens of this State.

McClure, like many others at New Harmony, had a hobby, which in his case, was the amelioration of the condition of the working classes, especially through the agency of working men's institutes. The "New Harmony Working Men's Institute" was established under his influence in 1838. He donated to it an order on a London bookseller for 200 pounds. Its library was afterwards joined to another which McClure had aided, and later the township library was added to this combined library, which still exists and has 7,650 volumes with an annual circulation of 24,000—which is considered very creditable for a village of 1,000 in the benighted pocket. McClure had a curiously assorted lot of possessions, including some thirty

buildings at New Harmony, and about 10,000 acres of land in the vicinity; also castles in Spain—or, what is better, over a million reals in Spanish securities; a house in Alacante on the Mediterranean coast of Spain; the convent of St. Gines and accompanying estate of 10,000 acres in Valencia; the estate of Carman de Coix in the valley of Murada. He also held mortgages on property in Virginia, England, France and Spain, and large and curious collections of books, minerals, copper plates of engravings, etc., etc. The last codicil of his will was executed in the City of Mexico in 1840. His will provided that his executors should "donate the sum of \$500 out of his other property in the United States of America to any club or society of laborers who may establish, in any part of the United States, a reading and lecture room with a library of at least 100 volumes." The "laborers" were defined in the will as "the working classes who labor with their hands." Under this will 144 associations received donations in 89 of the 92 counties of this State. As a rule they were not long-lived. They were almost always formed for the purpose of getting the donation. In each case the recipients were required to show that they were "laborers" and that they had complied with the provision for collecting a library of 100 volumes, but these preliminary libraries were usually composed of old books of all sorts, hastily gathered together and of little practical value. The Civil War soon took away many of the members—this being one of several causes that were fatal to the entire plan. In most cases the books were finally divided and became the individual property of the members. Only two or three of these libraries are now in existence.

It seems from Mr. Niles' statement that 144 times \$500, or \$72,000 went from Mr. McClure's large estate into 89 of our Indiana counties, and surely the northwestern corner of the State is entitled to preserve the name and memory of one who gave so much

for libraries, if in the end it all amounted to so little. That was not the fault of the generous donor.

The Crown Point McClure Library Association commenced putting out books, according to the librarian's record, in August, 1857, and the last record of books taken out is dated March 2, 1885. To readers in Crown Point and the early settlers in the county, the names of those taking out some of the first books would be of interest, such as D. K. Pettibone, D. Crumbacker, E. Griffin, R. F. Patrick, J. P. Smith, R. B. Young, John Wheeler, I. O. Dibble, Z. F. Summers, E. M. Cramer, J. G. Hoffman, W. G. McGlashen, H. Pettibone, A. D. Foster, A. Allman, Johnson Wheeler, Wm A. W. Holton, D. Turner, S. D. Clark, J. H. Luther, F. S. Bedell, and many other once well known names of those who are seen here no more; but a longer list of these names must be omitted.

There are many valuable books in this library; nearly all were books of solid worth, and it is of interest to those who knew the men to notice the different books which each man selected. The last book taken out, March 2, 1885, was taken by Hon. Bartlett Woods, and no one acquainted with him would be surprised to see that the book was *Democracy in America*, by M. De Tocqueville.

The last record in regard to this library, as found in the Librarian's book, is dated June 1, 1885, and it states that W. A. Clark and G. L. Vorhees on that day removed the McClure Library, then "comprising 148 volumes," to the library of the Public School of Crown Point. The books were to be used as reference books by the school and the library was to be "still open to the members as before." This stipu-

lation has been found to be utterly impracticable. The library is practically shut out or shut in from the use of the members of the association. They cannot well visit it in school hours, and it is locked up after school hours.

The following closes that memorandum: "I do hereby vouch for the receipt and proper care and use of the same and shall hold it in charge under the orders of the McClure Library Association."

(Signed.)

"GEO L. VORHEES,

"Superintendent of Schools."

One of the boys of the high school put the stamp of the school library on the books and seems to have undertaken to remove the McClure stamp. In the latter, which was certainly not honorable, he did not succeed.

The last president of the McClure Association yet resides in Crown Point. If the time should ever come for a town library in Crown Point the 148 McClure books should go to that library.

3. Of the township libraries provided by the State for the benefit of the children of the public schools and for the entire families connected with the schools, but little mention need be made. Some very appropriate and useful books were put into these libraries, and for a few years they served an excellent purpose, furnishing some good reading matter which many of the families could not then have well secured without some such provision by the State. But finally, as changes came, the township library system was given up.

Then, as the cause of education was generally advancing in the State, and in some parts rapidly, the more enterprising individual schools began to pro-

vide libraries for themselves. In different ways funds were raised to procure books, and some of the township trustees, under a wise provision of the law concerning reference books, would furnish some books for these separate school libraries. In the more advanced counties and townships, nearly every school at this date of 1900 has a library for general reading, containing also some reference books. The selection of these books may not always be most wisely made, some of the libraries containing quite an amount of what some would call light fiction; but it seems to be quite a general principle that those who secure funds have the right to say how the money raised shall be appropriated. The State does not furnish the money to any great extent, according to the proper working of our school laws, and the State authorities have, therefore, no right to select the libraries. Quite generally the teachers select. A good library in every school district, when properly used, is one great help for self-improvement. While the school library system is not yet all that it is capable of becoming, it is quite an advance on the opportunities for reading that many of the children had in the pioneer days; when only a few had access to any large libraries.

4. Circulating libraries, like all other libraries, depend, for the good they do, upon the character of the books. But their existence and use mark a stage of advancement. There are not many of these in our towns and cities.

For some years, after November 4, 1882, quite a large library of this variety was kept in Crown Point by James H. Ball. This furnished reading matter for many families, but it was finally consumed

by fire with the building in which it was kept, and efforts since made for such a library have been unsuccessful. The book of record of the Crown Point Circulating Library has just come to hand and contains fifty-nine pages of the names of those reading the books, closing in May, 1886.

5. Town libraries sometimes come early and sometimes later in the growth of a town and city.

From a quite lengthy sketch of the La Porte Library and Natural History Association, prepared by William Niles, Esq., of La Porte, son of Judge J. B. Niles, when the library was "formally transferred to the City of La Porte, April 25, 1897, to become a free public library," the following statements and extracts are taken:

Mr. Niles writes: "In the midst of the absorbing struggle for the Union, a generation ago, Rev. C. Noyes, of the Presbyterian church, of La Porte, sought to establish a library and reading room here." He soon secured for this object five hundred dollars, and an organization was perfected. It was soon proposed to unite with the McClure Working Men's Institute, then possessing a library of about seven hundred, "in the main, well selected books." This union was effected before May 11, 1863. That Institute had been organized with about thirty members, workmen in the railroad shops, August 16, 1865.

After various details in regard to the united library association, Mr. Niles states that in 1868 "the natural history collection was begun" by Dr. Higday and others. After many changes in regard to management and financial matters, in 1882, a farm, which by the will of Aurora Case, had come into the possession of the association, was sold for fifty-five

hundred dollars. The association now owned a building and had fifty-three hundred dollars laid aside for future use. Funds also came from the estate of Mrs. Nancy A. Treat amounting to one thousand dollars, and a dwelling house not then to be converted into money, but valued at four thousand dollars, was also go to the library association. It was proposed in June, 1896, to remodel and enlarge the library building and turn the property over to the city. The historical sketch says: "The proposed changes have now been completed and improvements made at a cost of about \$5,500. The result is an attractive and commodious building. The present value of the property now transferred to the city may be estimated at \$20,000. With this beginning of a fine public library its permanence and great usefulness can not be doubted."

Before closing Mr. Niles says:

For nearly twenty-five years no lecture courses have been given, but before that time many famous lecturers appeared before the association audiences, including Ralph Waldo Emerson, William Lloyd Garrison, Charles Sumner, George Sumner, Wendell Phillips, Bayard Taylor, Benjamin F. Taylor, Horace Greely (who was also here in 1853, making the trip from LaFayette to Otis on a hand-car because of an accident on the New Albany road), Petroleum V. Nasby, (his first lecture) W. H. Milburn, (the blind preacher, chaplain of the U. S. Senate) J. G. Holland, John G. Saxe, Geo. Thompson, M. P., (English Abolitionist) John B. Gough, James B. Belford (the red-headed-rooster-of-the-Rockies) Elizabeth Cady Stanton, Grace Greenwood, Anna E. Dickinson, Mrs.

Mendenhall, Clara Barton, (her first lecture) Olive Logan and Mrs. Scott Siddons.

To these are added as noted persons who have spoken in La Porte, but not in connection with the association: Daniel Webster, in 1837; Henry Ward Beecher, in 1844; General Neal Dow, in 1879, and two Presidents of the United States and four Vice-Presidents.

MICHIGAN CITY LIBRARY.

Note: The following sketch of this library, through the kindness and courtesy of Miss Daisy L. Brown, of Michigan City, has come directly from the Librarian as prepared by her for this book.

To both these young ladies special thanks are returned.

T. H. B.

The Michigan City public library had its origin in a legacy of \$5,000 left by Mr. George Ames, as a fund to be used for the purchase of books for a public library, in case a library organization should exist within a stated time. In 1894 interest in the organization of a library association began to manifest itself. Early in 1895 a literary society known as "the Fortnightly Club" appointed a committee to look into the provisions of Mr. Ames' will, and to report a plan of organization necessary to secure the benefits of the bequest. Through this committee were submitted the names of fifteen men and women, prominent residents of the town, who consented to form a board of incorporators, and to take the necessary legal steps to organize a public library association.

The next development was the offer by Hon. J. H. Barker, of a contribution of one-third the entire cost of a library building to be erected by the subscriptions of the citizens. A soliciting committee was appointed, and so great was the enthusiasm shown that \$30,000 was secured. A beautiful building

of Bedford stone, classic in architecture, and with interior furnishings of marble and of quarter-sawed oak, was erected on a centrally-located corner lot, opposite the city high school. The building was fitted throughout with the best library furniture and appliances and most conveniently arranged for the purposes of a modern library. It contains not only the usual reading, reference, book and delivery rooms, but a finely lighted children's room, a room for the use of students, and one for the use of literary clubs. It is probably one of the best equipped libraries of northern Indiana. Under the law of the State, the library is supported by taxation, and has in addition a small book-fund, endowed by private gifts.

In the summer of 1897, Miss Marilla W. Freeman, a graduate of the University of Chicago, undertook the organization of the new library, and in October the library was thrown open to the public with 3,000 volumes on its shelves. The annual statement of the librarian for May 1st, 1900, reports 5,500 volumes in the library, and a circulation for the year of nearly 40,000 volumes. The library met with immediate popularity and success, and has become one of the most important factors in the educational life of Michigan City. It is in close touch with the work of the public schools, as well as with the literary clubs. Through its collection of technical works, it has made special efforts to attract and hold the interest of the employees of the various factories and other industrial centers of the city. Its gifts have included not only books and money, but a considerable number of fine pictures for the adornment of its walls.

WINAMAC LIBRARY.

At Winamac was organized a few years ago the People's Library Association. The membership fee authorizing the use of the books of the library is one dollar a year. It is not, therefore, a free public library.

CHAPTER XXVI.

OUR INDUSTRIES.

For the first few years northwestern Indiana was a grazing and agricultural region and raising cattle and grain were the main industries. Exports of produce commenced about 1840, grain and pork (pork meaning hogs dressed ready for the meat market) were the first to be sent from the farms, and then cattle. There were, however, exports, and in immense quantities for the number of inhabitants, of quite a different kind. These exports were wild game, "prairie chickens" so called, in great numbers, wild ducks, wild geese, quails, rabbits, and also very much fur. This class of exports, costing nothing but the taking, helped many pioneer families in the way of better living. Soon, added to the grain and cattle and pork, there were sent from the farms butter, eggs and poultry, hay, some wool, some honey, and some sheep. And at length many horses. Grass seed and fruit soon increased the list of exports. As giving some idea of the amount the following records are here inserted: H. C. Beckman of Brunswick, in Lake County, as early as 1872, in the regular course of his trade, bought in a single day thirty-seven hundred eggs and about three hundred pounds of butter. In five months of that year he bought for export 5,600 dozen of eggs and of butter, for the year, 10,000

pounds. About \$50,000 was in that year paid out in Lake County for butter and eggs alone, by the different merchants. Judge David Turner made out a list of the exports of Lake County for the year 1883, when Lake County was becoming a large exporting county, and it will serve as an illustration of what the other counties had also to a great extent become as a large food producing and exporting region. Oats, the figures denote bushels, 1,000,000; potatoes, 150,000; rye, 19,857; clover seed, 2,000; hungarian seed, 9,000; millet seed, 4,500; berries, 4,629; the figures now denote pounds, butter, 544,529; cheese, 220,000; butterine, 3,000,000; wool, 26,553; honey, 26,629; milk, 285 000 gallons; hogs, 16,526 head; cattle, 16,000 head; calves, 1,000; horses, 1,500; chickens, 4,397 dozen; eggs, 200,000 dozen; hay, 65,893 tons; ice, 65,000 tons; sand, 23,000 car loads; brick and tile, 13,000,000; wood, 100 car loads; moss, 50 car loads; cattle slaughtered and shipped, 130,000 head. On ice and sand shipped from Clarke on the Calumet, in business months, the amount paid for freight was \$150 each day, or \$3,000 each month. And these figures given above are for one county and one year.

SOME AGRICULTURAL PRODUCTS.

Number of bushels of corn raised in these counties in 1898. After the name of each county are given the figures denoting the bushels, and the figures denoting the yield in each county by the acre: Starke, 717,535; 35. Lake, 1,365,156; 39. Porter, 1,431,720; 40. La Porte, 1,528,052; 31. Pulaski, 1,707,545; 35. Newton, 2,434,672; 34. Jasper, 2,435,392; 36. White, 2,584,749; 31. It thus appears that either Porter has

the best corn land or the best farmers. The number of acres in Porter County planted with corn was 35,793, and the average yield was exactly forty bushels for an acre. Lake County, with an average of thirty-nine bushels comes next. La Porte and White are alike averaging only thirty-one bushels.

In the production of oats for the year 1897 Newton, Jasper, and White excel, each producing over a million of bushels. Indeed, Newton was the second oat county in the State, Jasper the third, and White the fifth. Benton County alone exceeded Newton, and Tippecanoe was in advance of White.

Our other five counties produced the same year over half a million bushels of oats each. So it is evident that in 1897 northwestern Indiana produced more than six million bushels of oats. For that same year, 1897, the hay crop of these counties, taking no account of the immense quantities of wild or native grass made into hay on the Kankakee marsh lands, was the following (the number of thousands of tons only is given): Pulaski, 12,000; La Porte, 21,000; Porter, 30,000; Lake, 39,000; White, 39,000; Starke, 43,000; Newton, 65,000; Jasper, 97,000. These are not, except La Porte, large producing wheat counties, yet somewhat is raised in each. The following figures give the number of bushels for 1898: La Porte, 867,186; Pulaski, 316,044; White, 258,765; Porter, 197,532; Starke, 69,120; Jasper, 45,862; Lake, 30,582; Newton, 20,736.

A few more figures ought still to be of interest giving the number of horses in each county: Starke, 3,328; Newton, 6,086; Pulaski, 6,386; Porter, 6,950; Lake, 7,609; Jasper, 8,210; La Porte, 9,048; White, 9,442. And the number of cows in these counties

was in 1897, the year for which the horses are given: Starke, 3,344; Newton, 4,204; Jasper, 4,604; Pulaski, 5,247; White, 5,399; Porter, 8,218; La Porte, 9,053; Lake, 9,832.

The difference in the quantity of Irish potatoes raised in these counties in 1897 is somewhat surprising. The number of thousands of bushels only is here given and the figures are, for Jasper, 67; La Porte, 67; Newton, 47; Porter, 63; Pulaski, 31; Starke, 41; White, 11, and Lake, 546,921, or more than half a million of bushels. In 1899 E. W. Dinwiddie of Plum Grove raised a thousand bushels. In accounting for this great difference it should be borne in mind that Lake County touches that great city, Chicago, and extends from it in a southeast direction over the Calumet region, and that the soil (the sand, the marsh, the peat beds), of the Calumet bottom and of the Cady marsh, especially of that valley which is so often covered with water in the spring time, seems peculiarly adapted for vegetables, such as potatoes, cabbage, onions, and parsnips; and then, there is quite a large settlement of Hollanders along that valley, and they and families of other nationalities make it a special business to raise vegetables for the Chicago market. Considering these facts, looking thus over that great garden region of the Calumet, we need not be surprised that in Lake County should be produced a half million bushels of potatoes in a season. How many thousand heads of cabbages go into Hammond and into Chicago in a season, it is not likely any one has reckoned up. It may be further added here that the number of acres in potatoes in Lake for 1897 was more than eight thousand and in White only four hundred and forty-nine.

These figures for products, thus far given in this chapter, are from the "Indiana Agricultural Reports" and are supposed to be accurate, as they are from official reports compiled by J. B. Conner, chief of state bureau of statistics for Indiana.

Hogs are raised in all these counties to some extent, White taking the lead. The figures for the thousands are, as reported from the counties for 1897, and from the same authority as above: Starke, 7; Lake, 16; Newton 18; Porter, 20; Pulaski, 22; Jasper, 24; La Porte, 25, and White more than 38 thousand. Not many sheep are now kept in this part of the State. Quite a large flock was brought into Lake County in 1840 by Leonard Cutler, and the Mitchells, and others had some large flocks about 1865, but there was not much encouragement for keeping them. In these later years the largest flocks have probably been those of Hon. Joseph A. Little and of Oscar Dinwiddie of Plum Grove, and of Harvey Bryant. Now, or in 1897, the number of sheep and lambs in Lake County was 2,600, and a few over, in Porter 6,000, in La Porte 12,000, in Starke 1,800, in Pulaski 8,700, in White 5,700, in Jasper 3,200, and in Newton 2,500.

In the great sheep raising county of Indiana, Noble, there were in this same year more than forty thousand, while at the same time there were in Noble but six thousand and two cows, and Lake and La Porte had more than nine thousand each. The industries in different counties differ sometimes very much.

Prices of agricultural products have varied very much as the years have passed along. A sudden rise in the price of grain took place in the spring of 1835 which gave an opportunity for the first grain specu-

lation, so far as is known, among the pioneers. Two of the early settlers of Crown Point, William Clark, afterward known as Judge Clark, having been elected associate judge, and William Holton, one of the sterling men of Lake County, who died a few years ago at an advanced age in California, bought oats in La Porte County at fifty cents a bushel. They intended to sow the oats; but after reaching home and delaying a little time, they concluded it was too late in the season to sow oats. They hauled the grain back to La Porte and sold it for one dollar and fifty cents a bushel. While the purchase was small in amount the percentage of profit was more than the board of trade men in Chicago generally make. Corn, oats, wheat, at that time brought the same price.

For the encouragement that farmers received in endeavoring to settle up the wild lands, one example is the following: "George Parkinson, of South East Grove, in the winter of 1839 and 1840, sold pork in Michigan City for \$1.50 a hundredweight, hauling it some forty miles. He sent a load of grain. The proceeds returned, the man who did the hauling received his pay, and about fifty cents were left."

For several years, including 1844, the average price for wheat in the Chicago market was about 60 cents a bushel. In 1861 corn sold for 17 cents a bushel. In 1864 the price paid for corn at Dyer Station was 90 cents. When potatoes could be sold in the spring for 25 cents per bushel farmers thought it was a good price. That was before the days of potato bugs in this longitude. For several years now they have often sold for a dollar. The following is for the year 1899: "Winamac Markets." Wheat, per bushel, 73 cents; oats, 28; rye, 48; butter, per pound,

11 cents; lard, 8; eggs, per dozen, 11; flour, \$12.10; chickens, 6 cents per pound; turkeys, 7; ducks, 5; hams, 10; shoulders, 8; potatoes, per bushel, 60; hogs, per hundred, \$3.40.

The dairy business is a large branch of industry. Six trains take milk to Chicago each day, and the milk stands on these roads, besides the regular stations, are many. It is not easy to ascertain the amount of milk shipped in a year nor its value to the farmers, but some idea may be obtained from the following figures: On the Monon line, in the summer, 180 cars, in October 130 each day, daily average 120. On the Pan Handle, summer of 1899, 140 cars, in October 110; for the year, daily average 120. On the Erie road, summer 600, for the year, daily 500. On the Grand Trunk, daily, 400. On the Fort Wayne, daily, 130. Number of cars shipped daily for the entire year, 1,290. This milk is shipped mostly from Porter and Lake counties.

The creameries send off large amounts of butter beside the dairy-made butter sent from the homes. At Dyer, in Lake County, a creamery was started in 1893. The average of butter made there is four thousand pounds each month. Average price for 1899, 20 cents a pound. One thousand dollars, or more, each month is paid to the farmers for the milk.

At St. John, four and a half miles below, on the same road, the line called the Monon, is a still larger creamery. It may be safely said that twelve thousand dollars in a year is there paid out to the farmers. On the State line, six miles south of Dyer, is a third, much larger, where, to the farmers in Lake County is paid about a thousand dollars each month, and some four miles further south a fourth, where a like

amount is paid out. This gives to the farmers on a strip of land along the west edge of Lake County, twelve miles long, and, perhaps, some three or four in width, an income for milk of about \$50,000 in a year. It is quite an industry.

At Hebron, in Porter County, there has been for some years a creamery which now uses about 9,000 pounds of milk daily and pays to the dairymen about \$1,000 each month. At Merrillville, in Lake County, is a cheese factory which has been doing a good business for several years. Active leaders in the milk industry are, in Lake County, S. B. Woods, J. N. Beckman, and C. B. Benjamin; and in Porter, Messrs. Wahl and Merrifield.

HERDS OF CATTLE.

For several years the finest herd of improved cattle in Lake County was kept by Thomas Hughes. He took a large interest in the county fairs. In 1895 he removed to Kansas and died there July 29, of that year, when about 59 years of age. H. C. Beckman and John N. Beckman, his son, had the next best herd, probably, in the county. The largest number of cattle in Lake County, 1,500 head, were kept by John Brown and his son, Neal Brown, in the winter of 1899 and 1900. Large herds of cattle have been kept in the north part of Newton and Jasper counties, raised and kept mainly by men interested in the Chicago cattle market, and not as improved animals for milk and butter. In the south parts of Porter and La Porte counties, along the marsh, many cattle are kept, and in the north of Starke some are kept for milk and butter and for beef.

Near Rensselaer much attention has been given to raising fast horses. In West Creek township of Lake County the Hayden horses have been noted. They have usually been large and strong, drawing heavy loads. Many good horses have been raised in Lake County. For several years there has been held in Crown Point, on one Tuesday of each month, a horse market attended by buyers from Chicago and elsewhere. It has been called the best horse market within quite a distance of Chicago. As raisers of improved breeds of hogs may be named George F. Davis & Co. of Dyer, "originators, breeders, and shippers of the famous Victoria swine, also breeders of cotswoold sheep, shorthorn cattle, fancy land and water fowls." At the world's Columbian Exposition, in 1893, Mr. Davis took twenty-six different premiums on his Victoria swine, class 61, amounting in all to \$550; and in class 178, fat stock, he took seven more premiums, amounting to \$150. He also took premiums on sheep, amounting to \$80, and on poultry and pigeons \$56, making the entire amount of his premiums \$836. It is probable that of sheep and hogs, a few, equal to any in the United States, have been owned at Dyer.

Another noted raiser of improved hogs is John Pearce of Eagle Creek township. The variety which he keeps is known as Poland-China. In color these are black. The first improved hogs in Lake County were Berkshires.

ICE AND SAND.

The ice industry is for a short time an immense business. The great shipping counties are La Porte and Lake.

The lakes of La Porte County have furnished large

amounts. No full estimate can be made. In Lake County besides the lakes, the Calumet and Kankakee rivers have furnished very many thousand tons. A little idea may be obtained, yet a faint one, from a record of work at Red Cedar Lake, southwest from Crown Point. Armour has there a large ice house, and there are other large ones. In January, 1892, about three weeks of good ice gathering was well improved. At Armour's were working about two hundred men, and at the south end of the lake one hundred. Work goes on at night at Armour's, as they use at his ice house electric light. The record is, that about sixty car loads a day were shipped from Armour's while the men were engaged filling as rapidly as they could the very large house.

It is no wonder the water in that once beautiful lake is not as deep as it once was since such immense quantities of water in a solid form are shipped away every good ice year. The rains and melting snow do not furnish a supply sufficient to fill it up in the spring.

The quantity of frozen water that is stored in the many large ice houses and sent to the cities in the summer time can by no ordinary means be estimated. It is a business which the early pioneers had not considered, and one which, in its magnitude, only the railroads make possible.

Another very large industry is shipping sand, although that furnishes employment for the railroad working men and train men rather than for the citizens who own the sand-banks.

Besides sand shipped from ridges and banks nearer to Chicago, for the last few years trains of cars have been busy endeavoring to remove from Michigan City that immense sand hill known as Hoosier Slide.

At North Judson, in Starke County, is a singular industry, known as a "frog and turtle industry." According to a writer in the North Judson News, "there is a great and growing demand for frogs," and from this place they are shipped "into the leading markets of the country." On the day when the "News" writer visited this establishment, he says that in one hour one hundred and fifty dollars was paid out for frogs, brought in sacks and in wagon loads. For several days they can be kept in barrels until they are shipped and the big pond near by now contains, the "News" writer says, "over three million frogs." He says little about the turtles or tortoises, but they also are bought and shipped.

Quite a little business in this same line is done at Shelby, although there is as yet no large establishment there. From Shelby also, in some seasons, many mushrooms are shipped to Chicago.

A much more attractive industry is the fruit business. In Pulaski County in 1880 there were in cultivation in strawberries fifty-five acres.

Quite a little fruit is raised in Starke County, not far from Round Lake.

Apples and small fruits are raised quite extensively in Lake County, and fruit in Newton and in Jasper Counties.

Around La Porte are fruit and berry farms from which large amounts are sent to market.

In Pine township in Porter County cranberries still grow for market. In September, 1899, the following item of news was written, which will give some idea of this industry.

"The harvesting of the cranberry crop has begun and one hundred persons have been engaged for a

week on the five Blair marshes in Pine township, *

* picking the berries, and there remains about a week's work for them. The cranberries this year are of an unusually good quality and the crop is a large one." In Porter County is quite a fruit raiser, who is called an up-to-date farmer, Milton Phiel, who has ten acres of land in fruit, having on this land one thousand pear trees, five hundred winter apple trees, and five thousand strawberry plants. He has, besides fruit, thirty cows, and had in 1899 a thousand chickens.

In Lake County the large berry raiser is H. H. Meeker of Crown Point. He has, near the town, ten acres in small fruit and in nursery grounds. He picked in 1899 of small fruit for market 10,310 baskets. In 1900 he has picked 13,000. He sends off quite an amount of nursery stock.

There is quite a nursery in Jasper County near Rensselaer.

MANUFACTURING.

Of course opening farms furnished the first occupation for the pioneers after some shelter was provided for the families and for the less hardy domestic animals.

After shelter there was needed a food supply. And then some of the pioneers gave their attention, and almost from the very first, to putting up mills, first saw-mills, then grist-mills. This work as an industry prevailed largely in La Porte County, where were so many good mill-seats found, and in Porter County in the northern and central parts, in both which counties, for a time, they had a supply of white pine from the Lake Michigan sand hills, out of which to make lumber. In Lake County the earlier mills were south of

the Calumet, and the pine trees of Lake were taken for the buildings of the young Chicago. Mills also were constructed on the Tippecanoe and Iroquois rivers, and in White, Pulaski and Jasper Counties, saw-mills were, in early days, quite a leading industry.

In the line of manufactures factories of various kinds followed. But of these the larger establishments are now mostly not many miles from Lake Michigan, where are the largest towns and cities.

The manufacturing towns are mainly: La Porte, Michigan City, Chesterton, Hobart, East Chicago, Whiting, and Hammond.

At Valparaiso, which is a college town, there is now a mica factory employing ninety girls and twenty-seven men. "Two other concerns are enclosing factory buildings which promise to employ about four hundred men." At Crocker, in Porter County, is a canning factory employing some forty or fifty persons. Tomatoes are put up here in large quantities. Crocker is on the Wabash railroad not far from the Lake County line.

Among our large industries may be named the manufacture of brick, of tile, and of what is called terra cotta. Some of the pioneers made brick as early as 1840, and probably, in some neighborhoods, much earlier, but only for home use. In these later years it has become a large, and in some localities, a leading industry.

In La Porte County two miles east of Michigan City is quite a large establishment where were made in 1897 four and one half millions of brick.

The special factories and large industries of La Porte and Michigan City are given in the notices of those cities.

In Newton County some brick are made at Morocco and at Beaver City, also at Mt. Ayr; but the large factories are at Goodland, where also tile is made, and at Brook where terra cotta lumber is made "for the Chicago market." This terra cotta lumber, so called, is not what is generally called lumber. It is made of three parts clay and one of sawdust. But the sawdust is afterwards burned out leaving a porous kind of brick which may be cut with tools and will hold nails and screws.

In Jasper County brick for home use are made, also drain tile, near Rensselaer, at Remington, and near Pleasant Grove postoffice; but in this county the clay industry is not large.

Clay products are shipped into Starke County instead of being sent out.

In Lake County at Lowell and at Crown Point brick have been made for many years and also some drain tile, for the home market. Brick making commenced near Crown Point, in 1841, when C. M. Mason burned the first kiln. He made in the course of years several millions by the old and slow hand process. At Hobart is located the great brick shipping interest of the county, where "in April, 1887, W. B. Owen began the making of terra cotta lumber and fire proof products," which with the Kulage Brick and Tile Works, forms the principal manufacturing interest of Hobart. Of the terra cotta the State Geologist says: "Sixty car loads a month are shipped to all parts of the United States, the value of the annual output being from \$60,000 to \$75,000." He further says that there is only one other factory of the kind in Indiana, which is at Brook in Newton County, and only one in all the State of Illinois. The State Geolo-

gist says of the five large downdraft kilns, each one hundred feet long, of the Kulage Company, that they "are probably the largest kilns of the downdraft type in existence," each being capable of holding 260,000 brick.

In Porter County brick are made at Hebron and Valparaiso and Porter, also at Garden City and Chesterton.

The State Geologist, W. S. Blatchley, to whose report in "Clays and Clay Industries," indebtedness is acknowledged for special information, says: "Near the junction of the Michigan Central and Lake Shore railways, at Porter, Indiana, is located the largest pressed front brick factory in the State." It "has been in operation since July, 1890." Amount of capital invested in this factory is about \$300,000. An immense supply "of front brick of many colors" is furnished by this factory, and special shape bricks of a hundred different forms, several millions in all being kept constantly on hand.*

One half mile east of this large factory is another establishment conducted by the Chicago Brick Company, where "soft mud brick" are made for Chicago and for other markets at the rate of 35,000 a day for six months of the year.

Near Chesterton not only brick but tile are made as also at Valparaiso and Hebron.

The whole clay industry of Porter County requires the labor of many persons and secures the taking in and paying out of large sums of money. Like the frozen water, which we call ice, and the sand, the clay

* For a more full account see Reports.

of Northwestern Indiana, brings in a large amount of money.

Handling sand and clay and ice makes for us three great industries. At Whiting is one of the great oil refining establishments of the world, owned by the Standard Oil Company. The crude oil is conveyed in two pipe lines running along the track of the Erie railway. One of these pipes burst in some way near Crown Point a few years ago, and quite a river of oil ran out before the break was mended. Some of the town inhabitants gathered up in barrels and vessels what oil they could store, and when the flow was entirely stopped the oil men set fire to the river. Then there was a grand sight. Such peculiar, black, and even beautiful, columns of smoke had never been seen in Crown Point before. Photographic views were taken which were highly prized.

The number of oil tanks at Whiting cannot readily be counted. Many hundreds of persons are employed in the oil works, and quite a city has grown up through this industry.

At East Chicago hundreds are employed in carrying on these factories: "Inland Iron and Forge Co.; Grasselli Chemical Works; The East Chicago Foundry Co.; Famous Manufacturing Co.; Lesh, Proutt & Abbott Lumber Co.; Treat Car Wheel Works; Chicago Horseshoe Works; Groves Tank Works; Seymour Manufacturing Co.; and East Chicago Tank and Boiler Works." These names have been taken from the East Chicago Globe, of "manufactories already located" there.

Hammond has five quite large industries.

1. The G. H. Hammond Company Slaughter House.

This, as the State Line Slaughter House, was commenced about 1869. In 1872 about eighteen men were employed and three or four car loads of beef were shipped each day.

In 1884 about three thousand head of cattle were butchered each week and the beef was sent to New England and to Europe.

Now, in 1900, from five thousand to six thousand head of cattle and an equal number of hogs are put into shape for shipment each week.

Number of persons employed fourteen hundred. It is not so easy to get information now but the numbers given above came directly from the present superintendent.

2. The Pittsburg Spring Company. Number of men employed sixty-six.

3. The Simplex Railway Supply Company. Number of persons employed three hundred.

4. The Canning Steel Plant. Number employed four hundred.

5. Last and grandest of all, the W. B. Conkey Printing and Publishing Establishment.

It is claimed that there is not another equal to it in the United States or in Europe; and one who goes through the different rooms, sees the machinery at work, and looks at what is accomplished by human skill, may quite readily accept the statement.

Hammond was just the place for such an immense industry, where room for buildings was abundant and where there would be no need for a second or third story, not suggesting a fourteenth.

The rooms, as implied, are all on the ground and cover an area of eighteen or twenty acres. Some of

them are hundreds of feet in their dimensions. In the main printing room are running forty-two presses.

The folding and binding room is long and wide and high, with plenty of light from the sun-light without, and while the well-trained and nimble fingers of the girls who fold by hand accomplish rapid work, and show what trained human hands and eyes can do in acquiring a peculiar tact of manipulation, the amazing if not fascinating features in the room are fixtures, the great folding machines, working as by clock work, folding up, hour after hour, the great sheets of sixteen pages, with the regularity of the movement of a finished chronometer. The invention of a self-binder for farming work was a great triumph of human ingenuity, but one may well stand amazed in looking upon the movements of a great folding machine.

In the composing room appears also another wonder of human invention, the type setter. In the binding room the processes of gilding and of putting on the modern marble edges are interesting. *

The great driving wheel that furnishes the motion for so many machines and presses gives one a grand idea of power. And the mighty heater that keeps all these spacious rooms comfortable in zero weather is another grand illustration of concentrated and diffused force.

This Conkey Company commenced work in Hammond in 1898. The number of persons now employed is eleven hundred. The amount of work turned out in a year amounts to three million dollars.

* I visited this truly magnificent establishment March 27, 1900, and was shown through the different rooms, having an opportunity to see these different processes, receiving all the courtesies and readily obtaining all the information that I could reasonably request.

T. H. B.

A natural question would be, Where can sufficient "copy" be found to keep the type setters busy, so as to keep forty presses running in one room, and to keep all those girls and folding machines and gilders and binders busy month after month in the binding room? And the answer is, it comes from all quarters, comes from everywhere.

Books of various kinds are printed and published among them the American Encyclopaedia, Dictionaries, Story books for children, Catalogues, and many varieties of printed matter.

A periodical is sent out each month called

CONKEY'S HOME JOURNAL.

Northwestern Indiana, in the line of clay products, of oil, of meat for shipment, and of "the art preservative," certainly has some large establishments not to be surpassed, surely, by any others in Indiana.

ADDENDA.

The main industries of Crown Point, omitted in their proper place, are these: 1. Making brick at the Wise brickyard; 2. Sash and blind factory, L. Henderlong & Co.; 3. Making water tanks and cistern tubs, George Gosch; 4. Keilman factory, formerly Letz; 5. Cigar factories, four; 6. Crown Brewing Company, making lager beer. Also, 6. Raising poultry, Mrs. Underwood, T. A. Muzzall, Neil Coffin, I. Howland, and some others; and 7. Hack carriage factory.

CHAPTER XXVII.

SOCIAL ORGANIZATIONS.

It is probable that quite early in the history of the world men learned the benefits of uniting, for better self-protection and for improving their condition, in organizations or compacts which bore various names and had various purposes. Whether from the first age of civilization, before the time of what is known as Noah's flood, living through that period of destruction, any traces of man's earliest organizations have come down to us is not easily proved; nor yet can it be entirely disproved. In well-chosen words Professor John Russell in 1852, before a "large and highly intellectual audience" declared: "Long before the period of written history, there existed an order of men, known only to the initiated." "It is the oldest human society in existence. The dim twilight of the early ages rested upon its broad Arch, yet through every period of its existence has it been the agent of onward progress." While some may question these statements, it is true that some forms of organization, some societies, are sufficiently old, while others are distinctly modern, very, very new.

The pioneers in these beautiful wilds retained their recollections of the old homes and of the associations and of the ties which had been pleasant to them there; and so, along with civil society and the new formed

ties of social life, along with schools and Sunday schools and churches, they soon began to organize literary societies and to form lodges, Masonic and Odd Fellows, to organize library associations, agricultural societies, temperance societies, and then Sons of Temperance Divisions and Good Templar Lodges; and in later years study clubs and reading circles and the new orders of the present day came into existence in all our larger towns. No full account of all these need be here expected, but some mention of these organizations belongs very certainly to our history.

One of the earliest, so far as appears, the earliest organization, was formed before we had much civil government. It has been incidentally mentioned in an early chapter.

- It was called the "Squatters' Union of Lake County;" was organized July 4, 1836; and the original record says, "At a meeting of a majority of the citizens of Lake County, held at the house of Solon Robinson." The constitution adopted consists of a preamble and fourteen articles, is quite lengthy, is well written, and speaks well for the moral sentiments of these squatters. "Attached to it are 476 signatures." *

No evidence has been found that any other of our counties had a similar organization.

Literary societies and temperance organizations were among the earliest in these counties; although in 1838 was organized the Porter County Library Association, elsewhere mentioned.

In June, 1841, by the efforts of Solon Robinson, Rev. Norman Warriner, and Hervey Ball, was organ-

*The Claim Register, the oldest document of Lake County, containing the constitution of that Union and the names attached, is in my possession. T. H. B.

ized the Lake County Temperance Society. It continued in existence about nine years, was for its day a grand organization, and gave place to a Division of Sons of Temperance.

That this organization succeeded well financially is evident, for over the door of the Court Street school house, a brick structure, on a memorial stone, may now be read: "In memory of Crown Point Division, No. 133, Sons of Temperance, who donated \$1,000 to the erection of this building, 1859."

The number of literary societies, organized in the course of these many years, has surely never been counted. In nearly every township of Lake County one or more has had an existence, and probably the same has been true in the other counties; and for many of the young people, they accomplished in former years much good. Other organizations now take their places, or the public schools furnish for the pupils greater means of improvement, and, in some communities, the young people are now without the means of self-cultivation which these societies furnished. These belong largely to the past, and valuable as they were, and dear as their memories are in the hearts of some yet living, useful as they were to many who are now in active life, their names, even, cannot be recorded here. If some names were given, others would of necessity be omitted; and so only this tribute of praise and this record of the sure fact of much enjoyment and much benefit having been derived from our scores and probably hundreds of literary societies, existing in the first thirty or forty years of settlement, are all in regard to them that can be placed on this page. Bright on "memory's walls" some of their scenes will linger long.

One exception to the statement above is here made as a record appears, on a page that is "out of print," of a memorable discussion on Saturday evening, Feb. 5, 1870, considered at the time a grand discussion of a grave and great question. The question was Ought women to exercise the right of suffrage? The Orchard Grove Literary Society met that evening with the South East Grove Society. "Orchard Grove took the affirmative, represented on the floor by Messrs. Blakeman, Curtis, Jones, and Warner. South East Grove supported the negative, and was represented by Messrs. Benjamin, W. Brown, John Brown, and B. Brown. * * The house was densely packed, standing room being scarcely found for the crowds that assembled. Excellent order was observed nevertheless during the entire evening." The judges for that evening decided in favor of the negative.

Many such interesting discussions of important questions may no doubt be recalled to mind by some who are now on the shady side of life's meridian.

SECRET SOCIETIES OR ORDERS.

Of these called "secret," although not with entire propriety, as their places of meeting and members are known or may be known, the Lodges of Free Masons stand first. In Valparaiso the first one was organized about 1840. It was "No. 49." There were ten charter members. Nine charter members, about 1850, united to form Porter Lodge. Of this Rev. Robert Beer of Valparaiso, says, "the order has been verp flourishing and has kept itself very pure." Since 1840, masonic lodges have been organized in all our larger towns; and they have been followed by the lodges of Odd Fellows, of Foresters, Modern Woodmen, Knights

of Pythias, Catholic Foresters, Daughters of Rebecca, Eastern Star, W. C. T. U., and other temperance organizations, Rathbone Sisters, Daughters of Liberty, Maccabees, Imperial Guild, and many others, for men and for women; and then by the various clubs, not altogether what are called secret societies, but organizations that usually have present only their own members. Among these are many ladies' clubs for various purposes. One of these at Michigan City has a name that belonged to an organization in Lake County many years ago, which was, so far as known, the first of its kind in Northwestern Indiana. It was called The Cedar Lake Belles-lettres Society. The one at Michigan City is the Belles-lettres Club. That Society—young people did not form clubs in those days—was organized in 1847. It met only once each month, and the chief attention of its members was given to writing. One of the memorable addresses delivered before these belles-lettres students and their friends was by Solon Robinson, author of "The Will," "The Last of the Buffaloes," and other stories, in which address he paid a high compliment to the culture he found to be among the members, and referred to his having met the Indians for some consultation where they were living then.

The corresponding secretary at that time was noted for her beautiful penmanship.

Thus old names in time come round again as though they were new.

Study Clubs, Reading Clubs, Pleasure Clubs, Music Clubs, Commercial Clubs, and various kinds of clubs, are in our towns and cities now.

COUNTY AGRICULTURAL SOCIETIES.

The Lake County Agricultural Society was organized by the adoption of a constitution, August 30, 1851. The committee reporting constitution were, Hervey Ball, John Church, and David Turner. The first officers were, Hervey Ball, President; William Clark, Vice President; J. W. Dinwiddie, Treasurer; Joseph P. Smith, Secretary. For six years the same President and Secretary were re-elected. The society was strictly agricultural. The first county fair was held Thursday, October 28, 1852. The first directors were: Henry Wells, A. D. Foster, Michael Pearce, H. Keilman, Augustine Humphrey, and William N. Sykes.

The Porter County Agricultural Society was organized, so far as adopting a constitution, June 14, 1851, committee on constitution being, William C. Talcott, David Hughart, W. W. Jones, H. E. Woodruff, Aaron Lytle. In September directors were appointed and probably other officers. The first fair was held on Wednesday, October 29, 1851. About four hundred persons were present. First Directors: W. A. Barnes, William C. Talcott, Azorien Freeman, H. E. Woodruff, H. A. K. Paine, W. M. Jones, A. B. Price, Walker McCool, and Ruel Starr.

The White County Agricultural Society organized December 7, 1857. The first county fair held in 1858.

The Pulaski County Agricultural and Mechanical Society was organized in 1872.

For other Agricultural Societies dates or data have not been found.

GRANGES.

In August, 1867, there was formed in Washington

City an organization called "Patrons of Husbandry." It may quite safely be claimed that this organization came into existence through the efforts and influence of a citizen of Lake County, the founder of Crown Point, Solon Robinson. The following statements are offered in evidence of this claim.

Being interested in agricultural matters he commenced to write articles for the *Cultivator*, a leading agricultural journal, one, perhaps the first, being dated, Lake C. H., July 12, 1837. In 1838 and 1839 other communications followed, in 1840 as many as twelve, and in 1841 fifteen, and still others in other years. He also wrote for other agricultural papers.

"These various articles, by their style and from their locality, secured many readers, gained for their author much celebrity, and made his name familiar to very many farmer homes."

In March, 1838, he proposed to form an "American Society of Agriculture." In April, 1841, he wrote an address "to the farmers of the United States," sending it out through the columns of the *Cultivator*. He proposed to make, that same year of 1841, an extensive agricultural tour, and made it, passing through several states, calling on many agricultural men. In October of 1841 an editorial in the *Cultivator* said: "It gives us great pleasure to state that our friend, Solon Robinson, Esq., the zealous and able promoter of industry, and the original projector of a National Agricultural Society, has safely arrived at Washington, and that on the fourth of September a meeting was held in the hall of the Patent Office, at which the incipient steps for the formation of such a society were taken." Much more the editor adds, not needful in supporting this claim, only the closing words may

be given, "and we cannot doubt his reception among his agricultural friends in the East and North"—Mr. Robinson had made a tour of some extent before reaching Washington—"will be such as to convince him that they will not be behind those of any portion of the Union in a cordial support to his great undertaking." This effort for a National Agricultural Society, the credit for which belongs to Lake County, did not accomplish much. The country was not ready then for a permanent organization; but in other years friends of the farming community took hold of the same idea, and out of their suggestions and plans grew the Patrons of Husbandry and the Grange movement.

The plan includes a National Grange, State Granges, and Subordinate Granges.

In Lake County there were organized, June 28, 1871, Eagle Grange No. 4, members in 1872 eighty; October 12, 1871, Lowell Grange, No. 6, also with eighty members in 1872; Le Roy Grange in 1872 with twenty-six members. And before September, 1873, five others: Winfield, 41 members, Center, 57; Hickory, 40; West Creek, 25, and Ross, 27. Total membership in Lake County, 388. In September, 1873, was held at Crown Point, a Grange celebration. The gathering was large and from nearly all parts of the county. Some probably came from Porter. The procession of teams in close ranks, each Grange by itself with its banner, was reported to have been over two miles in length. This movement extended into the Southern States, where a great interest at first was taken in it, others besides farmers and planters finding a place in its ranks. Some other celebrations were held in Lake County, and a large one at Hebron. Yet

in a few years the organizations ceased to be kept up. About two years ago, about 1898, the interest revived and there is now a flourishing Grange at Crown Point, organized in February, 1899, and also one was organized or reorganized at Plum Grove.

How many are now in these counties has not been ascertained.

TEACHERS' ASSOCIATIONS.

Besides the annual county institutes held by the county superintendents according to the provisions of the Indiana School Law, the teachers in the counties have formed voluntary associations subject only to their own regulations. These were organized: In Pulaski County, in 1876; in Jasper, in 1879; in Lake, in 1883; in Starke, in 1886. The dates of organization in the other counties are not at hand.

According to the Third Annual Report of the Public Schools of Pulaski County, sent out in 1898, J. H. Reddick, County Superintendent, and N. A. Murphy, Secretary. "The twenty-first annual session of the Pulaski County Teachers' Association," was held at Winamac "November 26 and 27, 1897." This would bring the first one back to 1876. According then to one mode of reckoning this association was organized in 1876.

The enrollment for 1897 was 118. The receipts as reported amounted to \$129.67, and the expenditures to the same sum. Among the expenses as reported are, to one instructor \$35.35, and to another \$29.70, and for room rent \$5.00. Of the instructors one was from Purdue University. Devotional exercises were conducted each morning by resident ministers. Secretary of the Association Grace Wharton.

OLD SETTLERS' ASSOCIATIONS.

1. The La Porte County Association was organized November 20, 1869.

2. The White County Association was organized at the court house August 16, 1873. A residence of only twenty-one years required for membership.

3. The Lake County Association was organized at the court house July 24, 1875. A constitution was adopted and the names of members enrolled. The first meeting was held at the Old Fair ground, September 25, 1875.

4. The Jasper County Association was also organized in 1875, the first meeting of the settlers being held in a grove October 9, 1875, which was probably the day of organization. The first president was William K. Parkison, the Secretary was John McCarthy of Newton County. Names of the original members are the following, all settling between 1834 and 1840, the figures following each name denoting the number of years of the residence of each in the county: "David Nowles 41, A. W. Bingham 40, Jackson Phegley 40, Stephen Nowles 39, W. W. Murray 39, S. P. Sparling 39, S. H. Benjamin 38, W. K. Parkison 38, Thomas Robinson 37, Jared Benjamin 37, S. C. Hammond 37, H. A. Barkley 37, Joseph Spalding 36, Thomas R. Barker 35, Nathaniel Wyatt 35, Willis J. Wright 35, William Dougherty 35, Malinda Spitler 40, Jane Nowles 40, Mrs. Augustus Bingham 40, Mary Welsh 39, Julia R. Sparling 39, Amze Martin 38, Rhoda Ermin 38, M. Robinson 38, Phebe Nowles 37, Mary Parkison 37, Sarah Boice 37, Pamela Cockerill 35, Minerva Wright 35, Elizabeth Benjamin 35." Some of the above named persons are citizens of Newton

County, and this seems to have been an organization for the two counties. An examination of the list of signatures shows that the men signed first in the order of their dates of residence, and then the women in the same order.

5. The Porter County Association was planned May 26, 1881, at a gathering of old settlers to celebrate, at the home of George C. Buel of Valparaiso, the seventieth anniversary of his birthday. It was there decided that persons over forty-five years of age, residents for twenty-five years of Porter County, should be considered "old settlers."

The organization was still further perfected by a committee of thirteen citizens who met June 25th, and adopted five articles of association, restricting membership to those who had been residents twenty-five years before July 1, 1881, and that all such who were over forty-five years of age, should by signing the articles of the association be entitled to all its benefits along with their children. September 17th was appointed for the first public meeting. On that day some five hundred met on the public square, where there were large forest trees to give shade, and then completed their organization by the election of officers. The public exercises were opened with prayer by Rev. W. J. Forbes. An address of welcome was given by Hon. J. N. Skinner, and singing and short addresses, eighteen in number, followed.

At the second meeting, September, 1882, the opening prayer was by Rev. Robert Beer, the address of welcome by Mayor T. G. Lytle, many short addresses were made, the list of old settlers who had died was read by H. Hunt, and the officers were re-elected. "A large crowd was present," much interest was mani-

fested; but, for some reason, the organization has not flourished.

6. An Association was organized in Pulaski County, September 15, 1879, but it was not kept up.

7. A separate organization, an Association for Newton County, was organized at Mount Ayr, July 25, 1899. It is likely to prosper and to live.

A more extended notice of the La Porte County Old Settlers' Association, the oldest, the largest, the most complete of all, as a social organization, has been reserved for this page.

A call for a meeting of "old settlers" was issued in 1869, to which fifty-five names were attached, names of well known, reliable, substantial citizens of the county, requesting old settlers to meet November 20, 1869. One hundred and eight met that day in Huntsman Hall, in the city of La Porte, registered their names, place and date of birth, and date of settlement in the county, in a book which had been prepared for that purpose, perfected an organization, and elected officers for the coming year. Thirty-three years residence in the county was required for membership, no restriction as to age being made. Not only was membership restricted to this term of residence in the county, but also attendance at all the annual gatherings, except that husbands might bring their wives, and also wives their husbands, and at length the privilege of attending the annual meetings was extended to ministers and editors and a few invited guests. It was designed and carried on very exclusively by old settlers and for old settlers. General Joseph Orr and Hon. C. W. Cathcart were, among others, very active and earnest in making the association a true success. The latter was the first president and the former the

first treasurer. The organization took place forty years after the first settlement. At the meeting in 1870, which was on the 22d of June, five hundred were present.

Their "second annual re-union," some one knew how to count—was June 22, 1871, about seven hundred were present. Those who arrange for the meetings endeavor usually to meet on the longest day of the year, either June 21st or 22d. Besides singing, prayer, short addresses, and sometimes orations, the list is read by some one, of those who have died during the year. In June, 1875, sixty names were read from the death roll, a few of them, however, not having been reported the year before. In 1876 only thirty were reported. In 1877 the record is: "The Hon. C. W. Cathcart and General Joseph Orr, who had been for so long filling the offices of President and Treasurer, respectively, declined a re-election." In 1874 eight pioneers had appeared upon the platform, all of whom were over eighty years of age. Among these was General Orr. His death was reported in 1878.

The Lake County Old Settlers' Association differs in one respect from all the others. Besides the officers which the others have, President, Secretary, Treasurer, it has another called Historical Secretary, who is expected to keep a record of all events during the year, supposed to be of interest to the members of the association, and these he reports each year. Then, every five years, these reports are printed for the members, and thus Lake County history is recorded as well as made, year by year. It is believed that Lake County now has in print the most complete local history of any county in Indiana.

There is an organization, belonging to Porter and

Lake Counties, that is, perhaps, unique. It is known as the Dinwiddie Clan. It is composed of members of the Dinwiddie families, some of whom were pioneer settlers in La Porte, in Porter, and in Lake Counties, who trace their descent up, through four David Dinwiddies—in some of the lines there are six in succession—to an ancestor known as David Dinwiddie the first. Then through him they trace, but without the historic records, back to John Din of Scotland, who received from his king for a meritorious act one hundred pounds in money and the addition to his name of woodie, so that his name became John Dinwoodie, written afterwards in various forms.* Or, if not surely to him, then they trace to Allen Dinwithie of Scotland, the chief of whose clan, Thomas, was slain in Dinwiddie's tower in 1503 by the Jardins, by whom also it is supposed, the Laird of Dinwiddie was assassinated in Edinburgh in 1512.

Further facts in regard to this organization can be sufficiently obtained from the following published notice, with only this additional statement that the "Clan" in Lake and Porter Counties owes its existence as an organization to efforts and researches of Oscar Dinwiddie of Plum Grove; and that the members of the organization have made arrangements for the preparation of a book giving the Dinwiddie family records.

"THE DINWIDDIE REUNION.

On Saturday, September 4, 1897, the members of the Dinwiddie Clan met at Plum Grove for their

*I have seen a list of forms of this name, one hundred and thirty in number, which list was sent by Thomas Dinwiddy, an architect of Greenwich, London, to Oscar Dinwiddie of Plum Grove.

T. H. B.

fourth annual reunion. The grove in which they met between the home of Mr. E. W. Dinwiddie and the home of Mr. I. Bryant, is a delightful place for such a gathering. The shade is abundant, and yet the grove is quite open and airy, the trees, many of them hickory, are quite tall and thrifty, and the ground was clean and neat in its appearance. There were nice places for hammocks, for swings, and smooth and open places for croquet grounds. The table for the dinner was one hundred and twenty-five feet in length and provided on each side with seats, seating comfortably one hundred and twenty persons. There were present this year one hundred and forty, among them those who may be called the chaplains of the Clan, Rev. J. N. Buchanan, of Hebron, and Rev. T. H. Ball, of Crown Point, with their wives, also, as an invited guest, Mrs. Crawford, of South East Grove. The members had beautiful badges, green and golden, from Newark, New Jersey, furnished with a golden pin and a center piece representing a log cabin in a wood. The weather was delightful, although the roads were quite dusty. The sun shone warm and bright, yet under the shade of the trees the air was cool and comfortable. It was a day for the enjoyment of nature, just as autumn is beginning, and for those who live on farms as well as for those whose homes are in the towns it is well, it is more than well, to go at times into the groves, which "were God's first temples" and "in the darkling wood, amid the cool and silence," to rest, enjoy, commune with nature, and to worship.

In social intercourse, in resting and enjoying, greeting kindred, and in the sports of children, this day was mostly spent. Some business was transacted, officers for the coming year were elected. Mr. L. W. Vilmer was present with his camera and took a fine picture of the assembled group, and as the evening hours drew near the families left the delightful retreat to return to their duties and their homes. It is needless to say how abundant and excellent was the dinner, how delightful the social enjoyment of all."

THE KANKAKEE REGION.

CHAPTER XXVIII.

A paper on the Kankakee River, its marsh lands and islands, was prepared by Mr. John Brown, then Auditor of Lake County for the semi-centennial celebration of 1884. As not many are better acquainted with that region than is he, and not many have a larger interest in it than he has, no better service can be done for the Kankakee history up to 1884 than to reprint that paper here. It is taken from "Lake County, 1884." Pages 185, 186, 187.

The source of the Kankakee River is in St. Joseph County, this State, and from its source to where it crosses the State line at the southwest corner of our county, is about seventy-five miles. It is a slow sluggish stream with a fall of from one to one and one half feet to the mile in this State. It being very crooked and the land on either side being low and marshy, the water moves on very slowly, and these low lands, forming what is familiarly known as the Kankakee Marsh, are for quite a period of time each year covered with from one to three feet of water. About six sections of this marsh land in the southeast corner of our county are covered with timber, composed mostly of ash and elm with some sycamore and gum trees. The balance of these wet lands, running west to the State line, is open marsh, covered with a luxuriant growth of wild grasses, wild rice and flags. It is the home of the water fowl and musk-rat, and a paradise for hunters. The number of acres of this wet land in Kankakee valley in Lake County is about sixty

thousand, and in the seven counties through which the Kankakee river flows in this State is about six hundred thousand. Various projects have been proposed for draining this vast body of rich land, but up to this time but little has been accomplished. Messrs. Cass and Singleton now have two large steam dredges at work in this county on these lands, and it is expected that much good will result from their work. It is only a question of time when these lands will all be drained, as the Kankakee valley has a main elevation of ninety feet above Lake Michigan and one hundred and sixty feet above the waters of the Wabash River, and lying as they do at the very doors of Chicago, the greatest stock and grain market in the world, it would be strange if they long remain in their present almost worthless condition. Some portions of these lands are high dry ground, like an island in the ocean, and as they are often entirely surrounded with water they are called islands. The most prominent of these in Lake county are Beach Ridge, Red Oak, Warner, Fuller, Ridge, Brownell, Lalley, Curve, Skunk, Long White Oak, Round White Oak, South Island, Wheeler Island, and many smaller ones. These islands have all once been covered with a heavy growth of timber; but the farmers living on the prairies north of the marsh have stripped most of them of all that is desirable. This hauling timber from these islands and from the ash swamp further east, a few years ago was the farmers' winter harvest, and was called swamping. I think the lives of many of the early settlers were shortened by exposure and overwork in some of our bitter cold winters on these marshes. Cheap lumber and barbed wire now almost entirely take the place of the swamp timber for fencing, etc., and but little swamping has been done for a number of years. Many of the islands where the timber has been cut off are now excellent grazing land and nearly all of the larger islands have one or more families living on them who keep stock, and some good farms are already under cultivation. Many old landmarks go to show that

these lands bordering on the Kankakee River were, before the white man came, the favorite stamping grounds of the Indians. Many of the islands have their mounds and burying grounds, and on some of them are plats of ground which still hold the name of the Indians' gardens. I have never seen larger or finer grapes grown anywhere than some which I have gathered on these islands and which were planted by the Indians. On Curve Island on the west half of the northeast quarter, section 21, township 32, range 8, is the old Indian Battle Ground (so called). The entrenchments or breastworks cover a space of from three to four acres and are almost a perfect circle, with many deep holes inside the same. All this can be plainly seen to-day; but when it was made or who did the work the oldest settler has not even a tradition.

In a high sand mound a few rods southwest from the Battle Ground can be found by digging a few feet down plenty of human bones, old pottery, clam shells, flints, etc. Could these old mounds and relics of the past speak, they would no doubt tell a story well worth hearing. Fifty years from now, when the citizens of Lake County meet to celebrate our county centennial, these old land marks will be all obliterated, and the Red Man who once was the only human here will be forgotten except in history. And we too, who meet here to-day to celebrate this our semi-centennial, will then have left the shores touched by that mysterious sea that never yet has borne on any wave the image of a returning sail.

CHAPTER XXIX.

DRAINING MARSHES.

In May, 1852, the Legislature of Indiana passed an act to provide for draining "Swamp Lands." In this part of the State it was mainly for draining the Kankakee Valley.

In Pulaski County, not on the the Kankakee, ditching began in 1854, and at about the same time in Lake County.

The work of developing the Kankakee Region has been a very different process from that which was needful in opening farms in the woodlands and on the prairies. Before the large areas of grass land could be made very useful, before the abodes of muskrats and of mink could be made into cornfields a large amount of ditching for drainage was needful. And when this all was done by spades in human hands it was slow work. But when steam dredge boats were put into operation, in Lake County in 1884, the process of ditch-making was vastly different. There are now, north of the river, many large ditches. About 1870 draining quite extensively began in White County. And south of the river are now many large ditches. Of these the big Monon ditch in Jasper and White Counties has a channel, cut through a layer of solid rock for a mile and a quarter, thirty feet wide and said to be from ten to twenty feet in depth. It

was not a light undertaking. In Starke county several enterprising men have had ditches cut leading into Cedar Lake, now called Bass Lake, and into the river, so that now sugar-beet culture is taking the attention largely of the owners of the low lands. For raising beets that land is said to be excellent. One of these ditches in Starke is called Craigmile, and one the Kankakee River ditch.

One of the large owners of Jasper County, of whom quite an extended notice will be given, has himself laid out in improvements of various kinds more than six hundred thousand dollars. He has used his own dredge boat very successfully.

Another large land holder south of the Kankakee river, of that land which was a part of the wild region of the large Jasper County, is Nelson Morris of Chicago. He holds about 23,000 acres; but, as he is a cattle man, he leaves his land for pasturage instead of draining and cultivating and building, and thus producing wealth by means of the dredge boat and locomotive.

Newton County has not received as much attention in respect to internal improvements as some of the other counties, yet in the north part, some ditching has been done, especially in draining Beaver Lake.

In the north part of Newton County are large cattle ranches kept in the interest of cattle men of Chicago.

Mrs. Conrad, an intelligent and enterprising woman, is successfully carrying on a large establishment, a farm or ranche, near Lake Village. Not far from Thayer is what is called the Adams ranch of about five thousand acres.

In Newton vegetables are raised and fruit and stock.

In Lake County there are more than sixty, perhaps seventy miles, of dredge ditches in the Kankakee marsh lands; but these were not made by the individual owners of the land as such. They were paid for by a general assessment of the cost on all the lands supposed to be benefitted by the drainage. The main ditches are known as the Singleton ditch, named from W. F. Singleton, agent of the Lake Agricultural Company, the Ackerman ditch, the Griesel ditch, and the Brown ditch. As a result of this draining large quantities of vegetables and of grain have already been produced.

ROCK AT MOMENCE.

Among other efforts made for draining the Kankakee Valley in Indiana, it was suggested and proposed to remove a ledge of limestone rock at a place in Illinois about seven miles below the State line, a place called by the early settlers the Rapids, afterwards named Momence. The matter was at length brought before the Indiana Legislature and an appropriation of \$40,000 was made in 1889 for the work proposed. Various objections and difficulties were disposed of, James B. Kimball, Franklin Sanders, and John Brown becoming commissioners, who organized as a board November 12, 1891, with W. M. Whitten as Chief Engineer. A contract for performing the required work was entered into by the board of commissioners and David Sisk of Westville, La Porte County, Indiana, for the removal of the stone in the ledge at the rate of "83 cents per cubic yard." A bond was executed by David Sisk with William R. Shelby of

Grand Rapids, Michigan, and the Lake Agricultural Company as securities, the sureties on the bond "being worth," says the report to the Governor made in 1893, "more than a million dollars." It was found that it would be "necessary to remove 68,819 cubic yards of the rock," and that some further appropriation would be needful. An additional appropriation of \$20,000 was made, but by some means a change of contractors took place, and in 1893 J. D. Moran & Co., performed the work of removing the rock.

This outlay of sixty thousand dollars appropriated by the General Assembly of Indiana, although expended in Illinois, has been a large help to the drainage of the Indiana part of the valley.

Many of the citizens of Jasper County, both pioneers and later settlers, have done much in developing the resources of the county and adding value to its once wild lands; but no one, in some lines, has done so much as Mr. B. J. Gifford, a resident at present in Kankakee, Illinois. Before detailing what he has accomplished and designs yet to do, some notice of his earlier life will be of interest.

He was born on a farm in Kendall County, Illinois, in the pioneer days of that part of the state; was left motherless at six years of age; at eleven he arranged to obtain some prairie Government land which he thought was valuable, but "his father thought it worthless," and so he gave up that first land arrangement land which afterward sold for one hundred and twenty-five dollars an acre, as many dollars as the price from the Government would have been in cents; and at the early age of thirteen, "small in stature, without

any money, or clothes beyond what he wore," he started out to make his own way in life. Seeing the necessity of obtaining an education, he set resolutely about that, and at the age of seventeen commenced teaching winters, and attending school summers, but when ready to enter college, designing to go into the sophomore class, the war of 1861 commenced and he enlisted in the Union Army as a private soldier, became captain, improved his leisure time in reading law books, served in the army through the war, was afterward admitted to practice as a lawyer, and settled in Rantoul, Champaign County. Here he organized the Havana, Rantoul, and Eastern railroad Company, built the road, seventy-five miles in length, from Le Roy, Illinois, to West Lebanon, Indiana, sold his stock at a premium to Jay Gould, then became a member of a New York syndicate of which Cyrus W. Field was one, was made President of the company, bought the Cleveland and Marietta road for one million of dollars, July 2, 1881, managed the road for about one year when the syndicate sold out "at a small profit," and he left "the railroad field."

He had gained some experience and made some money and now gave his attention to the draining of wet lands. In 1884 he had secured of such lands, in Champaign County, seven thousand and five hundred acres. This he drained successfully, built dwelling houses for tenants, and went to Vermillion Swamp and purchased there a large tract of wet land which he also drained and upon which he built houses for tenants who cultivated the land on shares, and in 1891 he was nearly out of employment. He learned that in Jasper County there was a marsh that had no value "except to trade to some one who never saw it." As

that, for him, was quite a recommendation, he concluded to look at it. In July, 1891, he purchased, for four and a half dollars per acre, of Thompson Brothers of Rensselaer, 6,700 acres in the Pinkamink marsh, and continued to purchase, as opportunity offered, till he now owns 33,000 acres in Jasper and about 1,000 acres in Lake County. This land extends, with some small breaks, from a point about two miles north of the Kankakee River, "near the southeast corner of Lake County, to a point one mile south and five miles west of Francisville, embracing the bulk of 'Pinkamink Marsh,' 'Stump Slough,' 'Coppens Creek Marsh,' 'Buckhorn Marsh,' 'Mud Creek Marsh,' and a considerable section of the Kankakee Marsh."

In the spring of 1892 a dredge boat was built and a second in October, and, for two years, these were kept at work, by day and by night, when one "was laid off," but the other is still kept at work.

Mr. Gifford has constructed, in these years, about one hundred miles of dredge ditch, besides many smaller ditches.

It is evident that he has had some experience in this line and he says: "The Pinkamink Marsh was, probably, the most difficult marsh to drain, in northern Indiana. It consisted, mainly, of a vast 'muck' bed, probably the largest in the world, and while ditches were easily made" the frequent passage of the dredge boat was needful until the banks settled and to some extent hardened. "The waters of this swamp are now under complete control." This muck land, in a few years, produces large crops of grass and grain, but at once will produce large crops of vegetables and especially of onions, from five hundred to seven and even eight hundred bushels, having been raised on

an acre. The expense of raising a crop of onions is placed at "fifty dollars per acre." Land so well adapted as this is for gardening will be too valuable soon for grain and grass. About one half of these drained marshes are already under cultivation, more than two hundred houses and barns for tenants have been built, the foundations of all the buildings being boulders found on the land; water being obtained from wells which reach the bed rock at a depth of about one hundred feet.

An oil field has lately been discovered in Jasper County.

Says Mr. Gifford: "It is now known to extend over this entire tract of land and doubtless much besides, probably covering an area of 40 miles or more north and south and 20 miles or more east and west."

As these tenant-farm houses were, many of them, from twelve to fifteen miles from a shipping point, "when the present annual crop [1899] made its appearance, now embracing about 300,000 bushels of corn, 200,000 bushels of oats, 150,000 bushels of onions, and 50,000 bushels of potatoes, and the certain prospect of more than doubling in the near future, a railroad became a necessity." And so Mr. Gifford's former experience in railroad construction became valuable. He very quietly planned the "Chicago and Wabash Valley" railroad, "eighteen miles of which are now completed and in operation."

This road, commencing at present at Kersey, which is on the Indiana, Illinois, and Iowa road, about two miles and a half east of De Motte, runs in a southeasterly direction, crossing the Chicago and Indiana Coal road, as laid down on the map of Jasper County, at Zadoc, and then passes "the villiages of Laura, Gif-

ford, Comer, Lewiston, and Pleasant Grove," having turned directly south, and will cross the "Monon" nearly south of Wheatfield and about five miles east from Rensselaer.

"Right of way has practically been secured for the extension of the line, via Wolcott, as far south as Mont Moreney. Ties sufficient for ten miles or more are now made, and racked up along the line of road, which will doubtless be used this summer."

"So much of this road as is now built is entirely out of debt, and it is not likely any indebtedness will be incurred in any future construction. Some grading has been done north of the I. I. I., and most of the right of way secured to Orchard Grove, the intention being to carry the northern terminus to the city of Chicago and to push the southern terminus to the coal fields of Indiana."

The future of this railroad is not certain and of course is not yet history; but it is a grand idea for one man, although a millionaire, to undertake "to make these marshes of Lake, Jasper, and White Counties available to the city of Chicago for garden purposes," and uniting the dredge boat and the locomotive, "the two being," says Mr. Gifford, "the most powerful agents for producing wealth discovered by modern man," "by their means to convert the worthless swamps covering a large area of Northern Indiana into fields the most valuable found within the State, or possibly the United States."

And this work, it is evident, for Jasper County, Mr. Gifford is doing and has already done.

A man who, on the Chicago Board of Trade, makes what they call a "corner" on wheat or oats or corn, may put many thousands of dollars into his own

pocket, but it has come out from the pockets of others. He has produced no wealth. He has produced nothing. He is not a producer. But the man who gets from the dried muck, where a few years ago the water was standing and the musk-rats built their homes, hundreds of thousands of bushels of vegetables and grain, is a true producer. In producing those supplies for the needs of man he produces wealth.

The facts stated above show not only what one man has done for the improvement of Jasper County, but they show for the boys and young men of this generation, what a boy, taking a right course, starting out with no means at thirteen years of age, may accomplish for himself and for his fellows. In draining "swamp" or wet lands, in Illinois and Indiana, Mr. Gifford has provided homes for more than a thousand families, and has furnished employment for many thousand men, "no one of whom" he says, "ever worked one day without his pay," which is what some of the noted city millionaires cannot say; and putting his own accumulations along with the accumulations of the thousand families for whom he has provided homes, there would appear a large amount of wealth produced by brain and hand labor from what some would have called worthless tracts of land.

Such a man as Benjamin J. Gifford will need no marble monument to say that once he lived.

CHAPTER XXX.

ANIMALS AND PLANTS.

OUR NATIVE ANIMALS.

As this is not a scientific work, and as space is quite limited, a short sketch only can be here given of the native, or wild animals, called in the old classification beasts, birds, fishes, insects, and reptiles. And as a good and a full view of the "fauna of Lake County" was prepared by E. W. Dinwiddie of Plum Grove in 1884, and as there are but few varieties in any of the other counties not found in Lake, the salamander, as called in the South and by Webster, "2. A pouched rat (*Geomys pinctis*), found in Georgia and Florida," seeming to be limited to Newton and Jasper, a kind of abstract of the paper carefully prepared by E. W. Dinwiddie and published in Lake County, 1884, pages 150 to 158, will here be given as including nearly all of the animals native in Northwestern Indiana in the times of the first settlers. The first paragraph is quoted entire: "The peculiar position and varied nature of the soil of Lake County probably render it the natural home of more species of animal life than any other region of similar extent in the United States. Lake Michigan, the Kankakee and Calumet

rivers and marshes, numerous small streams and lakes, swamps, prairie, groves, loam, clay, and sand hills, make a variety of soil and condition suited to the wants of hundreds of species of temperate zone animal life." Quadrupeds named are: By supposition bison, elk, deer, beaver, opossums, musk-rats, mink, raccoon, squirrels, four species, gophers, two species, chipmunks, woodchucks, moles, skunks, rabbits, badgers, hedgehogs, weasels, wolves, prairie wolves and large gray timber wolves, foxes, wildcats, and two varieties of mice, the field mouse and a white-throated timber mouse.

Birds named are: As a visitor but not probably a native, the white swan; also as visitors, gulls, but as native, among the swimmers, wild geese, brants, ducks, especially "the mallard, blue wing teal, wid-geon, wood-duck, spoonbill, and spike-tail",—and from different data the estimate is reached that in a single year in the county have been killed of these ducks 250,000, one man having himself shot in one season 2,300,—loons and mud hens; of waders, white and blue sand-hill cranes, other white and bluish cranes, the former sometimes having been seen in flocks of "two or three hundred feeding on the grass or stubble fields," the latter being solitary birds, "or not more than two together," thunder-pumpers, jack-snipe, sand-pipe, plover, and rail, and of "the dry land birds," crow blackbirds, crows, red-wing blackbirds (a white blackbird has been seen), pigeons, meadow larks, mourning doves, robins, blue-jays, cat-birds, wrens, thrushes," two species of martins, three of swallows, four varieties of wood-peckers, and several varieties of wild canaries," also humming birds, kill-

dees, whip-poor-wills, "four species of owls, and two of hawks, grouse, called prairie chickens, quails, pheasants, and eagles. Of fishes some fourteen species have been found, including some excellent varieties for food, but their names are here omitted.

Of insects very many are mentioned, but their names (except moths, butterflies, "many of them very brilliant and beautiful," flies, ten species, gnats, four species, mosquitoes, four, and bees, three varieties, and wasps and hornets), must also be omitted. Of reptiles are named four varieties of lizards, three kinds of frogs, two of turtles or tortoises, toads, tree toads, and then snakes, rattle snakes, black snakes, and green snakes. And then of small animals many are referred to, as beetles, fifteen or twenty species, five species of spiders, crickets, katy-dids, locusts, and "unnumbered hosts of small bugs and insects and a great variety of worms."

Animal life was certainly abundant.

NATIVE PLANTS.

In the same year of 1884, and published in the same work, Lake County, 1884, a paper was prepared by T. H. Ball on the "flora of Lake County." Something of an abstract of that will also be given, as, with the exception of the heavy timber growth of La Porte, the vegetation in these counties will be found the same. Little will be found elsewhere in this region that is not found in Lake.

Five varieties of growth were marked out. 1. The Calumet Region. Here grew white pine, red cedar, and several varieties of oak, and huckleberries, cranberries, and wintergreens; also sassafras, and some twenty or thirty species of shrubs and bushes

that cannot be here named. These made parts of the Calumet bottoms, in earlier years, about as impenetrable as southern jungles, filled with so many tangled, running vines, that to pass through in straight lines was quite impracticable. But cities are growing there now.

2. The clay land or woodlands. The original limits of this woodland were marked out, naming especially forty-seven sections besides the principal groves of the county. The growth as named was oak, of several species, hickory, and bordering the prairies "a dense growth of hazel bushes;" also "in some localities, crab-apples, plum trees, slippery elm, ash, sassafras, huckleberries, wild currants, goose berries, black berries, strawberries, hawthorne, white thorn, ironwood, poplar or quaking aspen, and, as stragglers perhaps, red cedars, black walnut, and hard or rock maple." In these woodlands also grew many species of small flowering plants. "Among these are anemones, spring beauties, butter-cups, sanguinaria or blood-root, several species of blue violets, dog-tooth violets, Indian puccoon, lady-slippers, and very many species" whose names cannot here be given. Producing fruit mandrakes and pawpaws.

3. Plants of the prairies. Next to the true prairie grass are named, as characteristic plants, the polar plant (*Silphium laciniatum*), of which the botanist, Wood, says, "producing columns of smoke in the burning prairies by its copious resin," and from which the children of the prairies obtained pure, nice chewing gum, without paying any pennies, and the prairie dock (*Silphium terebinthenacium*), also resinous, and with broad leaves, from seven to twelve inches, and from one foot to two feet in length. Then there were,

in bloom in June, July, and August, some fifty or more species of prairie plants, among them the beautiful meadow lily, and, growing in immense native beds, what the botanists call Phlox. On the 14th day of October, 1884, the record reads, were gathered from a little portion of Lake Prairie Cemetery, where the plow had not been, "specimens of twenty-five different species of the original prairie plants," and their full number is estimated to be from two to three hundred. It need not be repeated that the prairies in summer were exceedingly beautiful.

Some statements in regard to the grasses of the county are here quoted, grasses strictly so-called. "Probably from fifty to a hundred species were native here. Some varieties made poor, but many kinds made excellent hay. Some varieties grew about one foot high, some were two and three, some five and six feet in height. Some of the woodland grass was only a few inches in height. Some species had a small, almost wiry blade, some a broad blade, some varieties had a reedlike stem with blades like the blades of maize. The stem of one variety was three-sided. Wild pea vines growing with some of the grass aided in making excellent winter provender."

4. The wet land growth. First in beauty among these aquatic plants is named the water lily (*Nymphaea odorata*), of which Wood says: "One of the loveliest of flowers, possessing beauty, delicacy and fragrance in the highest degree." It would not seem that these could grow in greater abundance anywhere. "The yellow pond lily comes next." Then the cat-tail (*Typha latifolia*), the blue flag, Indian hemp, rushes, sedges, and yet many other aquatic plants.

5. The Kankakee timber growth. On the islands proper, the soil generally sandy, grow "red oak, black oak, jack oak, hickory, sycamore, maple, pepperidge or gum tree, beech, and black walnut. Also some elm."

Some of the region is swamp.

"In this grow ash, elm, sycamore, birch, willow, maple, and cotton-wood, with a thick growth of underbrush or puckerbrush. Through this latter growth neither man nor dog can travel rapidly."

To the native animals may be added, for La Porte County black bears and wild turkeys; to the plants, white walnut and bass-wood.

Notes. 1. Mr. H. Seymour of Hebron, who was born February 20, 1808, and who died January 18, 1900, nearly ninety-two years of age, was probably the oldest of the early trappers and hunters, a rather peculiar class of men, who spent many years along the Kankakee marsh. He came, according to his recollection, to the vicinity of the old Indian Town, south of Hebron, in 1833. He was quite active, retaining well his faculties, when he was visited a year or two ago. He said that he thought the white cranes and the swan made nests in the marsh region in those early times, but he was not really certain. In regard to the sand-hill cranes, the wild geese, the ducks, herons, and the smaller water fowls of the region, there was, he was sure, no doubt in regard to their nests.

The wild geese, the brants, most of the different species of ducks, and largely the sand-hill cranes, have gone to places more remote from the foot of man and the noise of steam, to make their nests and rear their young; but in this grand marsh region the nest-

ing places still remain of the blue heron, of the bittern, of the mud-hen, of various species of snipe, of rail, and of plover. On Red Oak Island are still the nesting places of owls, the large horned owls, and other varieties.

The wild geese many years ago made nests upon sections 4 and 5, and 18, in township 32, range 7 west, the name Goose Pond having been given by the early settlers to a portion of water, at the beginning of the present Brown Ditch, on section 4, where the mother geese and their little ones used to swim and get food. On section 18 they had for their swimming place a bayou which the trappers call Hog Marsh.

On section 7, in this same township and range, is a small island where many nests are still made by a marsh water fowl which the hunters call "squaks."

The year 1882 was noted for a great number of wild geese visitors, no longer natives here.

A certain knoll southward from Plum Grove was very attractive that spring to the Kankakee visitors. "From four o'clock in the morning until about nine o'clock different flocks would arrive at this grassy knoll until some five acres would be literally covered with these beautiful water fowls, apparently as thickly crowded as they well could stand."

Of course, unlike some human creatures, they were too polite to crowd. One man has the credit of shooting fifty-nine here in one day.

On "Little Eagle," a small marsh island, now owned by Hon. Jerome Dinwiddie, there was, many years ago, an eagle's nest, built upon a large elm tree. This island is on section 6, township 32, range 7 west, of second principal meridian, in Lake County. The same pair of eagles, it is believed, made a nest or

repaired one for some twenty years. They left the island about 1880.

Colton in his great and instructive work, "Atlas of the World," 1856, in describing Indiana as then it was—or was supposed to be—says: "Near Lake Michigan the country has extensive sand hills which are covered only with stunted and shrivelled pines and burr oaks." Of cedar trees, of the very fruitful huckleberry bushes and sand-hill cherries that grew on those bluffs, his work makes no mention.

Whatever may have been the growth in 1856, the credit of this region requires the showing that shrivelled pines were not the original growth.

Solon Robinson says, in his Manuscript Lecture of 1847, now in the possession of Walter L. Allman of Crown Point, that the sand ridges along Lake Michigan were "originally covered with a valuable growth of pine and cedar, which has been all stript off to build up Chicago." And he adds, in regard to Lake County: "In the northeast the sand hills are very abrupt and have yet some good pine timber, although very difficult to obtain." And General Packard in his history of La Porte County says: "Formerly the region bordering the lake was well covered with beautiful white pine; but this valuable tree has almost wholly disappeared, being cut off for lumber."*

*I am glad that I was on those great piles of sand so often and saw with my own eyes the great pine trees, as early as 1837, before the white settlers had made much impression on the vegetation or the sand hills. Large and delicious were the high bush huckleberries that grew on these high sand hills, and very abundant were the fragrant wintergreen berries. Mr. L. W. Thompson, now living in Hammond, born July 14, 1814, remembers well the pines and the wintergreens, and he thinks the pines in 1837 were twenty inches in diameter as the logs were sawed at the City West sawmill. T. H. B.

The largest and probably the only native pine grove in Lake County is quite peculiarly situated. It is nine miles south of Lake Michigan and six miles south of the Little Calumet, almost exactly south of the mouth of Deep River, and two miles south of Turkey Creek. It is on the southeast quarter of the northwest quarter of section 14, township 35, range 8 west, on land now owned by George Hayward, who says that it covers an area of about ten acres. It is on low and, originally, quite wet ground, so wet that years ago it could well have been called a pine swamp. The trees are quite close together, there must be several hundred of them, and the larger ones seem to be of about the same size, as though they had all been growing not more than sixty or seventy years. Although, according to Gray's Manual of Botany, of the white pine species, there are no majestic trees among them, like those tall, wood monarchs that used to be along the southern sand hills of Lake Michigan in 1837, between Michigan City and the Illinois State line, with which some yet living were then so familiar; and another peculiarity of this pine grove is, that the soil is not sand, but peat bogs rather, where these trees grow. They are several miles away from any other native pines that have not been transplanted, and to account for their growth where they are and as they are, would surely puzzle an ordinary botanist.

As the large and valuable pine trees of Lake and Porter counties were soon cut down, perhaps on that account some writers have supposed that no such trees grew along our lake shore borders.

A number of small pine groves may now be found, of that Lake Michigan pine, in the rich prairie region north of the Kankakee River, the trees having been

taken when small, from their native sand hills many years ago. The largest and finest grove of pine native in Europe, to be found now in Lake County, is on what has been known as the Turner Schofield farm, about five miles south of Crown Point. It covers about four acres of ground. The trees are Austrian pine and Scotch pine with some larch. Here is a noted crow roost. A little west of Schererville is a large pine grove of native pine of about a thousand trees, trees that many years ago were taken from their original locality and set out on that grand sand ridge.

CHAPTER XXXI.

MISCELLANEOUS RECORDS.

Extracts and statements, quoted and abridged, from an address, by Solon Robinson, delivered before the Lake County Temperance Society in the log court house in 1847. Historical. Early settlers. 1. The Bennett family opened a tavern on the beach of Lake Michigan "near the mouth of the old Calumie," the date supposed to be 1832. 2. The Berry family opened a tavern on the beach in the spring of 1834. 3. Four or five families settled as squatters in the fall of 1834: "Thomas Childers and myself in October. He a day or two before me. His claim southeast quarter section 17, mine northwest quarter section 8." November 1, "Henry Wells and Luman A. Fowler came along on foot." Their horses had been left on Twenty Mile Prairie. "Cedar Lake was then the center of attraction for land lookers, and they passed on down to that lake without thinking to inquire who kept tavern there." They found lodging in a fallen tree top still covered with leaves, and had for supper "the leg of a roasted 'coon." They found there David Hornor, his son Thomas, and a relative named Brown, who were looking for claims and who settled in 1835. Wells and Fowler returned next day to the Robinson camp, slept that night on "the softest kind of a white-oak puncheon," bought claims and "two log cabin

bodies built by one Huntley," on the south half of section 8, paying for these claims \$50. Henry Wells went back to Michigan for his family. Luman A. Fowler staid through the winter. "During the first winter we had many claim makers but few settlers."

4. "The first family that came after Childers and myself was that of Robert Wilkinson" of Deep River. "He settled about the last of November, 1834."

5. The next family, that of Lyman Wells, with whom came John Driscoll, settled in January, 1835, on section 25, township 33, range 9. April 4, 1835, "there was a most terrible snowstorm, the weather previous having been mild as summer."

Until March, 1836, the nearest postoffice was Michigan City. Solon Robinson then appointed postmaster. His office was named Lake Court House, written usually Lake C. H. Receipts for quarter ending in June, 1837, \$26.92; September 30, \$43.50. For the next two quarters \$57.33, and \$57.39. This last the largest amount while he was postmaster. Next postoffice west was Joliet.

"In the spring of 1836 we were attached to Porter County the commissioners of which divided this county into three townships." The county was organized in 1837. Log court house built in 1837. "During the summer of 1837 we had preaching several times at our house and in the present court room."

"The Baptist people at Cedar Lake also had frequent meetings this year, and I think had preaching at Judge Ball's who settled there this year."

"The summer of 1838 was one of severe drought and great sickness."

Muskrats went to houses to seek water. "One of them came into my house and never so much as asked

for a drink of whisky," but went direct for the water bucket.

In 1839 the county seat was located at Liverpool. The seat of justice had been fixed by the legislature temporarily at Lake Court House.

In March, 1839, the land sales opened at La Porte.

In June, 1840, county seat re-located. Contest mainly between West Point at Cedar Lake, and Lake C. H.

"The county seat was then permanently located where it now is in June, 1840."

"There are four principal streets runing north and south." "There is a very large common or public square in the center that never can be built upon, and an acre of ground devoted exclusively for the court house and public offices."*

"November 19, 1840, the first lots were sold at auction * * * and from this time the town of Crown Point dates its existence."

"The town is laid out upon sixty acres, twenty acres of Judge Clark's and forty of mine."

A house was soon built in the new Crown Point. "I built it for Elder Norman Warriner in the spring of 1841, and he was the first minister of the gospel settled here, and I believe in the county."

"In June, 1841, three individuals made the first effort to form a temperance society here. Your records will show that it was carried into effect, and the celebration of the Fourth of July with cold water and a picnic dinner was the happiest one to some

*The large court house now in the center of that "public square" shows how little founders of towns can control the future of their towns. T.H.B., 1900.

three hundred men, women, and children, that I ever saw."

"In the spring of 1842 Mr. Mills built his large tavern house in Crown Point, and opened a store in one end of it and a very bad whisky shop in the other. I cannot say that this improvement has ever improved the morals of the place." In 1842 a frame school house, the first, at Crown Point, was built. In 1843 Elder Warriner went to Illinois. M. Allman came to Crown Point. This year two church buildings were erected, the M. E. church at West Creek, the German Catholic on Western Prairie, the latter having a bell.

These extracts give some of the valuable historic facts contained in that quite lengthy address. One, at least, of those who heard it delivered is living yet, and he has not forgotten the circumstances of its delivery, the interest with which many listened to it then, and the value which, we were then told, would, in after years, be attached to such records.

Fifty-three years since then have passed, and little could that then white-haired man have thought that one of his young auditors would, after many years, look over with interest that preserved manuscript, and make a faithful effort to transmit the facts recorded, as well as a just representation of the one who recorded them, into the coming years of the twentieth century. And not the records of the early years of Lake County alone, but that with them would be combined by his then youthful friend, now gray-haired and well advanced in life, what he could find of seven other counties also; to go down, perhaps, to another generation. What use may be made of what is left by any one in manuscript or on printed page no one can tell; and so one lesson plainly is that we should not write,

however carelessly or hastily, what might harm or do injustice to another.

See in regard to Solon Robinson a notice elsewhere in this chapter.

EARLY CELEBRATIONS.

A Fourth of July celebration was held in the bounds of Starke before the county was organized, in either 1848 or 1849, the locality being near the present Toto. The company could not have been very large. They had a warm dinner. The cabin where they met seems to have had two rooms, they had tables from which to eat, and after dinner they danced. She who, as a young girl remembers the circumstances, was born in 1840, was then living in Pulaski County came into the new county of which her father became a resident, in 1851, and is now a resident in the town of Knox.

A celebration in Jasper County, at Rensselaer, is thus narrated by Judge Thompson: "In 1843 we had a Fourth of July celebration, with a two-story quilting, the reading of the declaration, and a sermon under an old oak standing in what is now Washington street." The first real celebration at Crown Point, which was in 1841, was referred to in Solon Robinson's historical address. One at La Porte in 1837 has been also placed in these records.

In the Standard, the Baptist paper published at Chicago, date July 7, 1900, an account is given of a celebration in Lake County, under the heading, "The Fourth of July in the West in 1848," by "M. J. C." It occupies nearly an entire page of that large and widely circulated paper. It is too lengthy to be reproduced here, but some of those who have read it,

not knowing where that celebration was held, will be readers, it is hoped, of this book also, and will recognize the quotations inserted here.

This was a celebration by a New England family, a family usually numbering from ten to twelve inmates, and for this occasion the Standard story says, "some neighboring families several miles distant had been invited, making about thirty persons in all." Reluctantly omitting the many preceding sentences, the following is quoted: "The resources for preparing a feast in that western home were wonderful. Two large old-fashioned fireplaces could roast and boil, and a 'rotary' stove, brought from Buffalo when moving West, had a capacious tin oven of three pieces, which could be put on top, and seven or eight loaves of bread, or a cake two feet across, could be beautifully baked, the whole top of the stove turning with a crank to bring any part over the fire."

The various sets of dishes are then described, the light blue dinner plates, and the dark blue ones, and the "light brown of beautiful design," and "the big platters and lovely tureens, and the dessert plates of light blue with scalloped edges, and the white china with gold bands,"—some of these sets "seldom used, and all brought from the East a dozen years before." All mention of the rich dinner and the exercises of the day must be omitted, and one other statement only can be added, that a good display of fireworks from Chicago closed up this memorable day.

The mention of the fireworks suggests this record, that just ten years before this time, July 4, 1838, the oldest brother of "M. J. C." had celebrated his "fourth" with a display of fireworks not obtained in Chicago, but brought from the Eastern home, fur-

nished by a good uncle in New York city when Roman candles were a new invention; and that with his fireworks of various kinds he caused a suspension, for a time, of a Fourth of July dance near by his home; and that, probably, so he thinks, he presented the first display of fireworks ever exhibited in Lake County. Those fireworks his young sister did not see, for it was the year before her bright presence gladdened that Indiana home, that his private celebration was held.

These five early celebrations, each different from all the others, may serve as illustrations of many others in those earlier years.

AN INCIDENT.

The following account is taken, with very little change in the wording, from a memorandum found in an old record book, the handwriting of which gives assurance of its perfect accuracy, but whether the incident occurred at her own home near Wheeler, or whether, which is more probable, at the home of her friend who makes the record and who was much interested in bee management, is not certain. This is the record: In 1844 Almira Harris was stung on the temple in the morning by a bee returning to the hive. Her whole system was immediately affected and in a few minutes the flesh was swelled even to her toes, and the skin presented a shining, red appearance similar to the hives or mad-itch, and her face was so swelled that she could scarcely see. She was in great pain, particularly in the stomach, and in a few minutes was unable to sit up, and probably would in a short time have died without a remedy, an antidote to the poison. Several supposed remedies were used in the hurry and alarm of the family, but without any benefit

and having heard that the oil of cinnamon was good for snake bite, some one proposed to try that now. About fifteen minutes had already passed. From appearances she could not have lived but a short time, as spasms were coming on. Three drops of this oil on sugar were given, and the good effect was immediate. The relief from pain was so sudden that it was with difficulty she was kept from fainting. The swelling immediately began to subside but it was two or three days before she entirely recovered.

A RISKY SHOT.

That along the Kankakee River, near the wet lands, and on the timbered islands or sand ridges, sportsmen and trappers have for many years had temporary homes, has been more than once mentioned. Some records in regard to the wild fowls here and the fur bearing animals will be found in other connections.

A few miles south of Crown Point, when the prairie was open and wild, there were some small marshes where a few hundred wild geese would often stop for a few hours' rest or for forage. It was autumn. Two young men in a wagon drawn by two horses, one reputed lazy but quick enough in his actions when startled, were returning homeward across this then open prairie. A woman was also in the wagon. As they approached one of these small marshes they saw a few hundred geese sitting or probably standing on the newly formed ice. They had with them one double-barrel gun, loaded for geese. The ground near this marsh was rendered quite uneven by small bogs or bunches of earth and grass, formed, no one knows how, and now frozen quite hard. But the temptation was great. One of the young men

took up the gun. The other drove the team along the jolting edge of the marsh. At length, coming within about ninety feet of the wondering geese, the young man with the gun shouted, the geese arose in one black mass, both barrels of the gun were discharged, that lazy horse and the other started on a keen jump, the woman fell from her seat into the wagon, the young man with the gun instantly fell to the bottom of the wagon box, and the other wound the lines tightly around his hands, braced himself against the front of the box, and as the wagon bounded from bog to bog, gave his attention to the horses. He succeeded after a time in checking their fearful speed. The horses were brought to a halt. Then they turned back to look after the results. They found five large, fat wild geese fallen to the ice as the result of that risky shot, a shot which might have caused the loss of limb or life, had not the driver succeeded in arresting the progress of those frightened, plunging horses.

But a hunter or a sportsman will risk much rather than lose the chance of a good shot.

A RECORD.

A sheriff of Pulaski County some thirty-five years ago was Alonzo Starr, in 1843 having come from Genesee county, New York, and settling on a farm in Lake County, when in October, 1852, he was married to Miss Ruby Wallace of South East Grove, and after some time removed to Francesville and in 1865 to Winamac and was elected sheriff, which office he held for two terms. He was considered one of the best informed Free Masons, "when it came to the workings

of that order in Northern Indiana." He died in 1898 seventy-six years of age.

In 1872 ten families owned about one-sixth of the area of Lake County; and six families, so near as an estimate could be made, owned one-tenth, in value, of the real estate of the county. At that time A. N. Hart of Dyer held the largest number of acres, about 15,000, which lands were supposed then to be worth a half million of dollars. About 1892 a thousand acres of that land was sold for a full hundred dollars an acre. At that time Dorsey & Cline, non-residents, held as much as 10,000 acres, and G. W. Cass, also a non-resident, held of Kankakee marsh land nearly 10,000 acres. Since then, great changes have taken place through all the Kankakee region and the Calumet region. The Lake Agricultural Company, composed of heirs of General G. W. Cass, a leading member of the company, William R. Shelby of Michigan, still own a large portion of the Cass land.

Of individual owners now John Brown, President of the First National Bank of Crown Point, has 5,300 acres of this marsh land, and W. M. White, a non-resident, has the second largest amount, holding about 1,300 acres. In the Calumet region on Lake Michigan, the Chicago Stock Yard Company hold about 4,400 acres. A few quite large farms remain in the central parts of the county; but several large tracts of land, since 1872, have gone into the hands of many owners.

The settlements in La Porte County, amid the many beautiful lakes, along the small, rich prairies, and in the dense forest growth of its tracts of choice

timber, made rapid progress. Says General Packard, so generally accurate and reliable in his statements: "In the spring of 1834 the county exhibited marked progress and prosperity. Roads had been laid out in all parts of the county, schools were opened, many broad acres were under cultivation, courts of justice were established, numerous houses were erected in La Porte and Michigan City, modest farm houses dotted the prairies in every direction, and the tide of immigration was rolling in unchecked. The comforts of life were fast being added to the mere necessities; and contentment and happiness took up their abode in the dwelling of nearly every settler."

The record is that settlers came into La Porte County rapidly in 1834 and 1835; but it should be borne in mind, when reading General Packard's beautiful description of prospering settlers, that settlements in Porter and Jasper, in Lake and Pulaski and White, were only beginning or scarcely even beginning in 1834, and that those pioneers had to pass through many years of privations and hardships before it could be said of them that "contentment and happiness had taken up their abode in the dwelling of nearly every settler," that is, contentment in the sense of having their main wants supplied.

Settlements on the larger prairies, and certainly in Lake County, were not made to any extent by the pioneers.

And the same was the fact in Jasper County. Judge Thompson says, that the prairies in the early days were considered wholly unfit for human occupancy. "The pioneers uniformly settled in or near the groves and along the streams." In 1856, he says, "the driest season ever known," the people first learned the

value of the prairie lands, even the mucky prairies, and after that year the population and wealth of the county rapidly increased.

In that same year of 1856 a settlement was made near the center of Lake Prairie in Lake County by families from New Hampshire bearing the old and honored names of Little, Ames, Gerrish, Peach, Morey and Plumer, some of them descendants of the noted martyr, John Rogers of Smithfield. Their pastor, Rev. H. Wason, settled in 1857. A school house was built, school and church life commenced, and houses and fences and orchards soon changed the appearance of the late open prairie. In 1870 no range for stock was left. Robinson Prairie, northeast from Crown Point, was nearly all enclosed in 1871, and the broad sweep of that prairie, nine miles across, south and southeast from Crown Point, was for the most part enclosed by the end of the year 1872. As late as 1866 a party of young people endeavoring to reach Crown Point from Plum Grove, spent a good part of one night in vain attempts to find their way where there were no fences, no houses, no works of men to guide them.

The smaller prairies of Porter County, Horse Prairie and Morgan Prairie, and Door Prairie, Rolling, and Stillwell of La Porte, were enclosed earlier.

Settlement and rapid growth, as has been fully seen, commenced in the north part of La Porte County about 1830; but the extreme south part made very little advance until the railroad period opened. That which is now called Dewey township was for some time a part of Starke County, and afterward was a part of Cass township, and was set off as an independent township and named in June, 1860. Much of this

township and the south part of Hanna, the part in township 33, were in the Kankakee Marsh Region, and so gave little inducement for settlers until railroads and ditches opened up this now inviting region. Settlement commenced in Dewey in 1854 and the settlers were mostly Germans. Early family names are: Schimmel, Schauer, Besler, and Lougu. Names of later settlers are, Rudolph, Rosenbaum, Kruger, and Wagner. Much of the land is held by non-residents, as has been the case to quite an extent through all of this valuable region.

The railroads and the ditches, the advance forces in leading on to settlement and cultivation, have made a vast change in the Kankakee Valley since 1850.

AN OBJECT LESSON.

As late as 1845 members of the Ball family on the west side of their Red Cedar Lake set up a row of poles, with white flags on the top of each, through the center of Lake Prairie from north to south, so as to enable them to keep near the same line in crossing over that unbroken prairie amid its immense flower beds and its thousands of tall polar plants. It was nine miles across from north to south, and from east to west across the more central part the prairie ridge was high so that one could not see more than four miles off when standing on the general level of the prairie at the north. While this prairie was thus open and was burned over every fall by the fires that came up from the Kankakee Marsh, there was on one winter's morning, to the children and other people who observed it, a strange and an interesting sight. Along the marsh shore line, at the south, on sections 3 and 4 and 5 of township 32, range 9, were groves, or

stretches of woodland, one especially was at that time called the Belshaw Grove. Across the center of that prairie, as already implied, the horizon line seemed to touch the prairie. In the summer it was a line of green grass, miles away; in the winter it was a line of brown, burnt prairie surface, or a line of snow. On this special morning E. J. Farwell, riding over from his home near the Illinois line, announced to the members of the Ball family, living on the northwest quarter of section 27, that groves were in sight, woodlands, all across the middle of their prairie. They looked and to their great surprise, beheld the Belshaw Grove, which some of them had learned well to know, and woodland further west, standing in bold outline across that open prairie line, as though some wondrous power had, the night before, raised them up bodily and set them down in the middle of what was the day before open prairie. They looked and wondered. The scene was grand. The prairie was smoothly covered with a newly fallen snow; the sun came up bright and warm for the time of year; and then and there those favored children had their grandest object lesson on the refraction of light. Before noon of that day those groves disappeared and nothing could be there seen on which the sun was shining but the spotless snow. But, before the sunset of that day came, again those groves appeared in sight and remained until the prairie was covered with the dusk of the evening. Those children never saw those groves in the middle of that prairie again, and they knew, when then they saw them that they were in reality out of sight.

Note—Illustrating the statement that the larger prairies were not settled by the early pioneers, is the following personal reminiscence:

It was not until 1845, having had a home on the edge of Lake Prairie for more than seven years, and having become quite well acquainted with the central parts of Lake County, that I first crossed the nine miles of open prairie between my home and the southern Marsh border, or Shore Line, I crossed it then on horseback, in the summer time, on one delightful afternoon, with a fair-haired, lovely girl, two years younger than myself, who was entering even then, unknown to any, upon the last year of her short life. She knew the way and I did not. Our horses went over beautiful flower beds that day. We went up to the crests of the long slopes and down into the valleys of that gently rolling prairie—beautiful it has always been called—miles away from houses or fences or human beings, with the loveliness of nature around, and over us the protection of God.

SOLON ROBINSON.

Note.—Of the first settler, at what is now Crown Point, some special statements may justly be made. There are not many living now who know much about him, not any, except a few of his own family who knew him very well. He has a daughter now living in Crown Point, Mrs. Straight, and a daughter in Chicago, Dr. L. G. Bedell, one of the noted physicians of that great city, some grandchildren and great grandchildren living, but few of these were much acquainted with him. Having known him better than most of those now living, and having been intimate with some who did know him well, I have very certain knowledge as to the statements here made.

T. H. B.

Born October 21, 1803, in Connecticut, spending

some years in Jennings County, Indiana, he came with a young family into Lake County in October, 1834. His wife was a superior woman, born near Philadelphia. He was active in forming the Squatters' Union, was their first Recorder of Claims, was Clerk of the Circuit Court of Lake County, was general manager of the Board of Commissioners, (there was then no Auditor), and controlled so largely the affairs of the early settlers that he acquired the title of "Squatter King of Lake." He was the first postmaster and continued in office till 1843, and in company with his brother sold goods to the Indians and to the first settlers. "He was affable, familiar, plain, hospitable, kind, and accommodating," enjoying the wielding of influence, fond of gaining celebrity. He became quite a writer, an author, two stories, "The Will," and "The Last of the Buffalos," being among his earliest publications, before he left Lake County. After having a home in Crown Point for about thirteen years he went to New York and was for some time connected with the New York Tribune. He there wrote "Hot Corn," "Green Mountain Girls," and "Me-Won-I-Toc, A Tale of Frontier Life," the scene of which, like that of "The Will," was laid in Lake County and touched the Lake of the Red Cedars.

Besides these few facts of a long and varied life, the following statements are here added; added because by some who did not know him, who never shared the hospitality of his home, who never met with him in temperance work or in literary societies or in building up the life of a young community, his real character has been misapprehended and inaccurate statements concerning him have been publicly made.

He was not a professed Christian man, not a

church member, not what is called a religious man; but he had been too shrewd an observer of men and things, long before he settled in Lake County, not to know and to acknowledge how useful and needful in social and civil life, were the restraints and blessed influence of Christianity. And one of almost his first acts in securing inhabitants for the county seat was obtaining the residence in it of Rev. Norman Warriner from Red Cedar Lake, providing for him and his family a home very near to his own home and providing ways to help in his support. Thus, in the very beginning of the life of Crown Point as a county seat a resident minister was secured through the efforts of Solon Robinson. As early as 1837 his own house and the log building which he had erected for a court house were opened for preaching. Acting in concert with Judge Hervey Ball he was instrumental in the purchase of a library for the village from a colporteur of the American Tract Society. A Sunday school, which his children from its beginning attended, was started in the log court house about 1840 through the efforts of Rev. N. Warriner and the Baptists of Prairie West and of the Lake and of Rev. J. C. Brown and a few Presbyterian women, in which school, after the arrival of Rev. M. Allman in 1843 the Methodists also united. A temperance society was also organized in the court house by Rev. N. Warriner, Solon Robinson, and Judge Ball, in which those of all denominations and creeds represented in the community united. An Evangelical Library Association was formed by Rev. W. Townley, Rev. M. Allman, "S. Robinson, H. Ball, and a few others."

A strong temperance man, intelligent, talented, a fluent speaker and an easy writer, whatever eccentrici-

cities of character he may have possessed, and whatever skeptical doubts in regard to Christianity he may have entertained, the founder of Crown Point, Lake county's "Squatter King," did not undertake from even the very first to build up a town on infidel teachings. He was far from undertaking to do that. Whatever unbelief or skepticism there may be in Crown Point it is not to be traced back to any teachings given by Solon Robinson.

Like his hand-writing, which was clear and distinct, much of which written in 1836 with good black ink is now in my possession, so his name is indellibly written, plainly, distinctly, in the history of Crown Point and of Northwestern Indiana; and as the "original projector of a National Agricultural Society," so far as I may be able, having known him quite well from 1837 to 1847, I wish to see that there is done to his reputation no injustice. In closing up his last address to the members of the Lake County Temperance Society in 1847, he said: "And as for myself I will ask no prouder monument to my fame than to be assured that the members of this society will stand as mourners around my grave and, pointing to the lifeless form beneath the falling sods, shall truly say, 'There lies a brother who in this life had an ardent desire to promote the happiness of his fellow creatures.'" In one of his many published articles he had taught: "Happiness and not wealth should be the aim of all, though no man should allow himself to be happy without he is doing some good in the world—promoting the happiness of his fellow creatures as well as of himself."

Spending many years in New York city, acquiring there quite a reputation as a writer, he at last made a home near Jacksonville, Florida, where he died in 1880, at the advanced age of 77 years.

CHAPTER XXXII.

COURT HOUSES.

NEWTON COUNTY.

Newton County has no court house exhibited here because its modern building has not yet been constructed, the old frame building of 1860 being still in use; but it has certainly the largest and best shaded public square in Northwestern Indiana. Its dimensions are 300 feet by 400 feet, and the native, forest trees still shade it. If the county seat should be removed this grand square could not be moved with it. When the question of removal is settled no doubt a good building will be erected.

JASPER COUNTY.



Jasper County has had quite a number of county buildings. A small log building had been provided for the session of the Circuit Court in April, 1840. About 1845 a frame building was erected for the purpose of holding courts,

and in 1853 a brick court house was built at a cost of twelve thousand dollars. This was destroyed by fire in November, 1864, and another court house was erected. The first jail was built of logs in 1847 by George W. Spitler, costing forty-nine town lots. This was burned in 1856, and for the next twenty years and more Jasper had no jail.

The contract for the present court house was formed in July, 1896, and work soon commenced. The building was completed in 1898. It is constructed of Bedford stone, with what is called rough finish. Like all our modern stone structures it is a solid looking building and presents an imposing appearance. Cost \$165,000.00.

It stands within a public square, which seems to be the prevailing style.

Auditor of Jasper County, Henry B. Murray.

WHITE COUNTY.



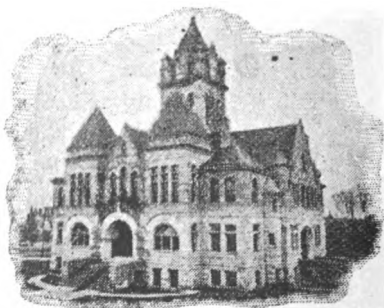
In Monticello selected for a county seat and named in September, 1834, town lots were laid off by John Barr, Senior, County Agent, and a sale was ordered for November 7, 1834. A small, two story, frame

court house was soon built, which was ready for use in 1836. Cost, about five hundred dollars. A log jail was built. In 1850 a second court house was built, costing nine thousand dollars, and a new jail.

In the history of Pulaski and White it is said that one jail was "built in 1854, and another in 1864, costing seven thousand and seven hundred dollars." Another authority says that in 1875 a third jail building was erected, built of stone, and that this with the sheriff's residence attached, built of brick, cost twelve thousand dollars. That nearly eight thousand dollars should be laid out for a jail in 1864 and twelve thousand in 1875 does not look quite probable. In 1894 was built the present massive and imposing court house, of gray stone, costing eighty-five thousand dollars.

M. J. Holtzman, Auditor.

PULASKI COUNTY.



The first court house was a frame building erected at Winamac about 1841. One of brick was afterwards built, and both court house and jail in 1876 were considered substantial structures. The present court house is a fine looking building of light-colored stone erected in 1895, costing about fifty thousand dollars. The square in which it stands is graded up very neatly.

Auditor, James N. Hayworth.

STARKE COUNTY.



The court house at Knox, while not so large nor so costly as some of the others, is quite as fine in appearance, and presents to a visitor an inviting and interesting arrangement

in all of its inside structure. The room for the farmers' families has a cosy and pleasant appearance; the court room is peculiarly arranged so that the lawyers and their clients may pass in to the inner portion of the room between the seat for the judge and the wall. This appears to be a great convenience, as the entrance is near the seat for the judge.

The inside of the dome has interesting designs painted or frescoed upon the wall. On the north, America is represented by an Indian; on the south is the figure of Justice; on the west a figure representing Glory; and on the east is presented Eternity. America should ever be the home for justice; and being just Americans will have their share of all true national glory; but well is it in temples of justice for litigants and lawyers and witnesses and judges to remember,

in the East there is that which overshadows all time.

The building is near the north part of the town on good ground for a public building, so that it is sightly, and is a good stone structure, completed in 1898, and costing \$125,000.

The material is called Blue Amherst stone, furnished by the Malone Stone Company of Cleveland, Ohio.

Present auditor of Starke County Aug. H. Knosman.

LAKE COUNTY.



Near the center of Lake County, by the enterprise of two brothers, Solomon Robinson and Milo Robinson, there was erected in 1837 a log building designed for a court house, although no county seat for Lake had then been located. Courts were held in this building,

and when, in 1840, this central locality was finally selected for the most northwestern county seat in Indiana, the log building was adopted as the court house, and has been known in all these years in the annals and traditions of Lake County as the "Old Log Court House." In May of 1838 it had been made the temporary court house of the county by the act of the

county commissioners in accordance with an act of the State Legislature.

In 1838 the lower room was fitted up "for a prison" at a cost of sixty-four dollars.

The cost of the entire building may have been five hundred dollars.

This log building, so near as any one now living can tell, was outside of what is now the southwest corner of the public square, in the present paved roadway.

In 1849 a frame court building was erected, occupied in 1850, and a brick office building was on the east side and one on the west, for treasurer and auditor, and for recorder and clerk, all fronting the south. Cost of all about ten thousand dollars.

For about thirty years these buildings and a frame jail building, supplied the needs of the county. But it was decided to erect a more costly and larger building in 1878, and on September 10th of that year the corner stone of the present brick and stone building was laid, with masonic ceremonies, in the presence of a large assemblage of citizens. The building was ready for use in 1880. Cost \$52,000. In round numbers, and also quite exact, the log building was in use ten years, the frame buildings thirty years, and the present one has been in use twenty years.

For sixty years Crown Point has been of Lake the county seat. For sixty-two years courts of justice have in Crown Point been held.

The third court house of Lake County was built near the center of what Solon Robinson marked out and donated for a public square, to be free from fence or obstruction for the common use of all the citizens.

But originators, donors, and founders cannot bind altogether those who come after them; and the present arrangements seem to suit the citizens of the present. What other generations may do remains for other generations to see.

In 1882 was built on Main street, on a lot adjoining the Methodist church, reserved for many years by Carter & Carter, of New York City, as a location for an Episcopal church, a brick jail edifice, at a cost of about \$24,000.

Around the court house yard, was laid in 1889, a walk ten feet in width, of sandstone, six inches in depth, and about sixty-four rods in length. The yard is about 315 feet from north to south and about 220 from east to west. Auditor, M. Grimmer.

PORTER COUNTY.



A frame court house was built in 1837. A log jail was put up in 1838. In 1853 was erected a brick court house, costing about \$13,000. In 1871 was built a jail costing \$26,000. Commenced in 1883, finished in 1885, the present court house was built of Bedford stone. Cost \$149,000.

Auditor of Porter County, M. J. Stinchfield.

LA PORTE COUNTY.



In La Porte County, the town of La Porte having been selected for the county seat, the Commissioners contracted for a brick court house in 1833, to be forty feet square, and to cost \$3,975. They also arranged for a jail building to cost \$460. These buildings were not completed, probably, until 1834.

The La Porte County court house of the present, the corner stone having been laid June 30, 1892, by the Grand Lodge of A. F. A. Masons of the State of Indiana, is the grandest temple of justice in northwestern Indiana. It was completed in 1894. The cost was \$305,000. It is of brown stone from Lake Superior. It has three stories. The workmanship is excellent. It contains rooms well arranged for the accommodation of farmers' families when they come to town on any business. It is only the second court house of the county; and judging from its looks, one would not suppose another would ever be needed.

The ample ground around the building is in fine condition, well kept with good stone walks. The iron railing for the fastening of horses is on only three

sides. On the main street in front of the public square no teams can be tied. It is a good arrangement to have the front always clear.

Auditor of La Porte County, F. H. Doran.

Note: I have found the auditors of the counties intelligent, accommodating men, well informed and ready to give information, and for their courtesies to me, I here return hearty thanks. T. H. B.

CHAPTER XXXIII.

“ARCHAEOLOGICAL SPECIMENS.”

In addition to the facts given in Chapter IV, the following from Lake County 1884, is added here.

“The finest collection of American antiquities in this county has been made by W. W. Cheshire, an enthusiastic archaeologist and member of the Indiana Archaeological Society. In the department of arrow and spear heads Dr. Herbert S. Ball has a fine collection, and in purely human remains he has probably the best in the county. Of fossil shells the finest are probably in the possession of T. H. Ball.

In the cabinet of W. W. Cheshire are some three hundred specimens of stone implements collected in this county, some having been obtained in every township. Among the stone axes are some very fine specimens, one weighing six and three-fourth pounds, and one being only two inches long and an inch and a half broad, a miniature or toy axe. Of the axes there are, collected in this county, about two dozen. Of arrow heads there are about one hundred. Some of these are remarkable for beauty and regularity. One is of chalcedony, of the variety called agate, one and five-eighths of an inch wide and two and six-eighths inches long. One of copper, apparently molded, four and three-eighths inches long and one inch and one-fourth wide, with three small notches on each side of

the shaft. This was found in St. Johns township.

There is in this cabinet a piece of copper ore found near Lowell. One stone arrow head is worked with a twist as though designed to give it a whirling motion in the air. There is here also the breast bone of a wild goose, shot in the Kankakee marsh some years ago through which is the arrow head which was then in the breast of the living goose. This is of bone, nicely made, is considered by some of us to be Esquimaux workmanship, and is nine inches long, a half inch wide, slightly curved, and has four sides or faces. The shaft that was evidently inserted in the arrow is about one inch long and is finely wrought to a point. * * * There are also here specimens from near Hebron * * * of mastodon or mammoth bones and teeth."

Some, believed to be genuine, Indian pipes have been found, one near Plum Grove; and in the possession of Mr. George Doak, of South-East Grove, is a peculiar stone, found near his home, about five and a half inches long, an inch wide, three-fourths of an inch thick, "the sides slightly oval, smooth, neatly wrought, with an orifice half an inch in diameter running through the entire length."

How an Indian could have drilled this orifice and for what is a matter of conjecture.

Of those antiquities and specimens of Indian art collected by W. W. Cheshire, who is now a resident in Washington City, some are now, (1900) in the cabinet of the Crown Point Public School, and some are in the hands of Julian H. Youche, an enthusiastic and intelligent youth, son of Hon. J. W. Youche, and grandson of Dr. J. Higgins, of Crown Point.

Two copper hatchets, two broken earthen vessels,

and a pipe, were taken out from those mounds south of La Porte, before Dr. Higday explored them; and in one explored by him, Professor Cox reports three human skeletons, two copper hatchets, two copper needles, some galena, several pieces of mica, and a carved pipe, taken out a depth of thirteen feet from the surface. In the largest mound of the group, Professor Cox says in his report (Survey of 1873), sixteen feet from the surface, two full size human skeletons were found and "a pipe, a copper needle, fragments of pottery, and part of a marine shell (*Cardium magnum*)."

In some of these mounds earthen vessels were found containing black mold, which, it has been conjectured, was once food buried with the dead, to sustain them until they became settled in the "happy hunting ground" on the other side. And this the learned geologist calls a reasonable inference, "around which," he says, "clusters a world of interest, coming from the dark, forgotten past, as a ray of light that has bridged centuries to tell its wondrous story." And so this black mold is regarded as indicating firm belief in a future existence, perhaps in immortality.

A beautiful specimen of wrought copper, taken from a wolf hole in Hanover Township, is in the possession of Mrs. M. J. Cutler, of Kankakee, Ill., who was a daughter of Judge Ball, of Lake County. This instrument, for such it seems to have been, is about three and a half inches long and one inch and a half broad at what may be called the cutting end, which has a rounded but not a sharp edge. It is about one fourth of an inch in thickness. It bears upon it what seem to be the marks of a hammer.

The owner of this piece of copper has also in her

possession an instrument which appears to be steel, nearly two inches long, the shaft round, the small end edged, not pointed, "the head on the top is flat and very smooth, and besides this surface it has twelve small plane sides, each smooth and well wrought," and this was found, not in the ground, but, about 1850, "was taken from near the heart of a majestic oak" that grew on that grand bluff on the northeast bank of the Lake of the Red Cedars. One hundred and seventy layers of wood in that oak tree were counted outside of this piece of well wrought steel, and taking that number in years from 1850, will bring one back to 1680, or to about the time when La Salle crossed these counties. Did he, or some other French explorer, drive that into a sapling?

Its antiquity is not very great compared, probably, with the instrument of copper; but it must have been made in some, probably, European workshop, more than two hundred and twenty years ago.

HUMAN REMAINS.

About ten years ago some of the inhabitants of Brunswick discovered a large bed of sand on section 19, the southwest quarter, township 34, range 9, on the bluff along the west side of West Creek, and from this sand were taken out several human skeletons, supposed to be Indian remains.

The largest "find" of human remains in Lake County was in October, 1880, of which a lengthy account may be found in "Lake County, 1884," pages 327 to 330. A good many copies of this book are probably yet in Lake County. A few statements from that full account are here given:

Two young men, Orlando Russell and Frank Rus-

sell, commenced, October 1, 1880, to prepare a foundation for a saw-mill at the exact "head," as the settlers in early times called it, of the Red Cedar Lake.

The spot selected was a little mound on the lake shore, sloping eastward, westward, and southward, and with a very gradual slope northward. "It was a beautiful and sunny knoll, raised but a few feet above the wave-washed beach of pure, white sand, and had been the camping ground the summer before, for many a day and night, of a large pleasure party."

A scrubby burr oak tree was standing a few feet from the water line. The plow share, "the white man's plowshare," passed over the green, beautiful surface, and five skeletons were struck, all in one mass, at a depth of about one foot. Six more were reached before the plow had gone two feet in depth. With these were some rodent bones and some large shells. A few days afterward, hearing of this discovery, for, for forty-five years no spot around that lake had been supposed to be more free from human remains, T. H. Ball and his son, Herbert S. Ball, made a visit to the spot. It was near what had been for many years the home of the one and the birth-place of the other.

The son had then but lately returned from the great plains of Northwestern Texas, where, on Blanco Canyon, he had examined human remains supposed to be three hundred years old. He soon commenced a search under the burr oak. He found a piece of lead ore, then an arrow head, and then an entire skeleton. One large root of the tree pressed hard upon the skull, which was towards the east. Soon the tree was removed and another skeleton was there with the head toward the west. In all, twenty skeletons were found

near the surface of that little mound, one of the most sunny spots anywhere around that lake.

About two hundred rings of what is called annual growth were counted on that oak tree. The tree had evidently grown since the burial. And these remains were all of men in the prime of life.

CHAPTER XXXIV.

BIRTH PLACES OF THE PIONEERS.

It is risky to make sweeping statements, especially where the statement implies more knowledge than most men have or can have. As an illustration, in the history of Indiana by Goodrich and Tuttle, one of the standard State histories, it is said, on page 447, referring to the trial and execution of a man for murdering some Indians, "Such was the result of the first case on record in America where a white man was hung for killing an Indian." Again, on page 449, mentioning two more men who were tried and executed for having part in the same murder it is added. "Thus ended the only trial where convictions of murder were ever had, followed by the execution of white men for killing Indians in the United States."

To make such statements is assuming a large amount of knowledge. Now, whoever will look into Martyn's excellent history of the Pilgrim Fathers, pages 371, 372, will there find that in 1636 a lone Indian, a trader, but an Indian, was murdered by some white men, and that "three of the murderers were caught, tried at Plymouth, found guilty and hung."

And so sure was such strict justice administered by those noble men, the Pilgrims, that Martyn says: "It was as certain death to kill an Indian in the forests of America, as to slay a noble in the crowded

streets of London." Such facts, in studying the history of their state, the children of Indiana ought to know.

But another illustration of the danger of missing accuracy in these sweeping statements, and one bearing on the subject of this chapter, is taken from "The Indianian," a high class, illustrated, monthly magazine, published at Indianapolis. This is from the April number of 1899, in an article on Henry County.

"The early settlers of Indiana, in every part, were mainly from the South, coming from Kentucky, Tennessee, Virginia, and the Carolinas. Here and there would be a family from Pennsylvania, and occasionally one from New England, but the great majority were from the South." The sweeping clause in this is, "in every part." The writer certainly had not penetrated into the Northwestern part. If he had said, "in most parts of the State," it would have done very well, "in many parts" would have been still better; but "in every part" was more than he knew.

As giving the birth place of "early settlers," some of the New England families will here be named who made their homes in Lake County. Commencing in the center of the county may be first named Solon Robinson, a native of Connecticut; then the Holton families from Massachusetts and Vermont, the Wells family and Mrs. Eddy, and Luman A. Fowler, from Massachusetts originally; W. R. Williams, the Sherman family, (Mrs. Calista Sherman, born in Vermont in 1789, having fifty-two descendants living in 1884), and another Holton family descendants of Dr. Ira Holton, and Mrs. Roselinda Holton, a sister of Mrs. Sherman, all New Englanders. Then the large Wheeler family; and indeed the early Crown Point

was mostly of New England blood. Going out from Crown Point, among others, the following pioneer New England families are found: The family of John Wood on Deep River; the Humphrey and Woodbridge families on Eagle Creek Prairie; the Ball and Warriner families at the Lake of the Red Cedars; and the large Taylor, Edgerton and Palmer families, whose descendants are now the large Creston community, all of New England origin. Again, there may be named the Kenney families of Orchard Grove from Maine; the Warner families from Connecticut; the Saxton family of Merrillville, having still a conch shell brought here by the pioneer, Ebenezer Saxton, which shell, according to their family tradition, came over in the May Flower. James Farwell and family from Vermont, also John Bothwell; George Willey and Charles Marvin from Connecticut originally; Elijah Morton from Vermont; the Spaulding family and yet others of New England descent. Not to mention the later "New Hampshire Settlement" in the center of Lake Prairie, not to mention the Towle families and others in the city of Hammond, in the early days New England families and "York-Yankees" were well scattered over Lake County.

Solon Robinson, the authority for Lake County in its earliest years, stating what it had become in 1847, says: That there were then in the county about fifty frame houses, five churches, two brick dwelling houses, two brick offices, and one small out building, these the only brick buildings then in the county and these at Crown Point, and four or five stores in the county; and then he adds: "Majority of the inhabitants Yorkers and Yankees. About one hundred

German families, fifteen or twenty Irish, about twelve English."

Going now to La Porte County, General Packard, an authority for that county, says: "The first settlers in Michigan City arrived in 1833, and it may readily be presumed that they found few attractions to welcome them. To their view there was presented only sand hills and swamps. Hoosier Slide towered up many feet higher than now, * * * and further back across the creek that passed through the woods, * * * a low, wet, swampy tract of country occupied all the locality." But in imagination, discouraging as the prospect was, they saw a harbor and a city destined to be there. A town was started. Its growth in 1834, 1835, and 1836, was astonishingly rapid. There were hotels and business houses, and W. D. Woodward, who came in 1836, says that there were then nearly three thousand inhabitants.

"At the end of 1836, besides the numerous warehouses and commission and forwarding houses, there were twelve dry goods stores." And the first log cabin, so far as is known, had been built in August, 1833. And now General Packard speaks of the early settlers, "They who first peopled Michigan City were pushing, active, intelligent, and enterprising men. Some of them became the heaviest business men at that time in the State. They were chiefly from the eastern States; and with them, to suggest a business enterprise was to see it accomplished."

Surely the writer in "The Indianian" had not examined the early settlement of the northwestern corner of Indiana. It cannot be said accurately that the early settlers here were "mainly" from "Kentucky, Tennessee, Virginia, and the Carolinas."

While just credit is given to what Southern families did come here, the enterprise and energy and industry that have made this region what now it is, came "mainly" from New England, New York, Pennsylvania, Ohio, Canada, England, Scotland, Ireland, Germany, Holland, Sweden, and Norway.

Note.—When in 1835 Abijah R. Bigelow settled in La Porte County, in Clinton township, "he brought a small colony with him who were mostly Canadians."

East of Hebron, in Porter County, was a neighborhood of early settlers called Yankee Town.

Furthermore, in regard to the settlers of La Porte County, Professor Cox, State Geologist, in his report for 1873, says: "Though a few French were numbered among the first settlers, the greater portion of the present population trace their ancestry to New York, Pennsylvania, and New England, and retain in a marked degree the characteristic habits, thrift and energy of their ancestors."

From the enrollment of the Old Settlers' Association of La Porte County it appears that of the constituent members, in number 108, there were born in Indiana 18, in Pennsylvania 12, in New England 12, in Ohio 18, in New York 19, in the South 19, in England 2, and in Scotland, Ireland, Spain, District of Columbia, New Jersey, Illinois, and Madeira Island, one each, and one with no birth place given, making 69 from the eastward as against 19 from the South, not counting those born in Indiana and Illinois, which would make 19 more, or as many as came from the South.

And yet further, from a careful examination of the full enrollment of more than seven hundred members, it has been found that at least 92 of the early

settlers were born in New England, 150 in New York, 53 in Pennsylvania, 109 in Ohio, 34 in various eastern places, 161 in Indiana, and 111 in the South, making 438 from the east as against 111 from the South, not counting those born in Indiana.

The early settlers of southern Indiana, probably of Central Indiana, were no doubt quite largely from the South, and some of them brought their slaves with them, and held on to them for years; but quite surely Northern Indiana, and especially the north tier of counties, was not settled up that way, and slaves, as such, could not have lived so near to what was in those days the line of freedom. In this latitude, of forty-one and a half degrees, were some of the most northern stations of that once noted Under Ground Railroad.

Evidence is not at hand for giving the birth places of pioneers south of the river; but some were from the east, some from the south, and some from Europe.

CHAPTER XXXV.

McCARTY.

From the report for 1898 of the Historical Secretary of the Lake County Old Settlers' Association the following is taken:

"Some weeks ago I found in the possession of Mr. W. McCarty of Creston, a grandson of Judge B. McCarty, the old Day Book of E. S. McCarty of West Point.

"Its opening date is July 1 or 2, 1839. I think it is the oldest day book existing in the county. The store was first opened by Dr. Lilley in May, 1837. Some of the entries are copied as items of interest for this generation. I omit names now, giving prices: 1 lb. saleratus, 19; 1 lb. tea, 50; 1 qt. molasses, 25; 6 yds. calico, 24; 1.44; 1 spool thread, 13; 1-2 yd. muslin, 13; 1 ball wicking, 13; 2 lbs. sugar, 34; 4 gals. gin (1.50) 6.00; 1 gal. whiskey, 56; 1-2 doz. brooms, 1.50; 1 lb. raisins, 25.

Again, a few names: Robert Wilkinson, 6 yds. calico, 38, 2.28; Foley, 3 pints gin, 75; J. C. Batten, 8 yds. sheeting, 1.34; 2 pair socks, 1.25; 1 pair stockings, 75; 2 yds. sheeting, 34; James Farwell, 2 lbs. tobacco, 50; Solomon Nordyke, 1 set buttons, 38; then there is a credit of 6 days work 4.50, 4 days work (75) 3.00.

Again, a few more items showing prices. 1 bunch

quills, 50; 1 oz. wafers, 13; 8 yds. gingham, 3.00; 1 paper needles, 13; 5 yds. satinet (1.25) 6.25; 15 yds. sheeting, 2.50; 2 doz. buttons, 25; 1 pair slippers, 1.50; 1 set chairs, 3.75; 1 lb. shot, 16; 1 paper pins, 13; 2 lbs. nails, 30; Wm. Rockwell, 1 pint molasses, 13; Sylvester Green, 1 quire paper, 25; H. Wells, 1 quire paper, 25; H. S. Pelton, 4 lbs. shot, 16, 64. Brick were made at West Point and sold. A memorandum says: "Commenced molding on the 27th day of May, 1840." As showing prices some entries are:

John Foley, Dr.

Hard brick.....	1000.	4.00
Soft "	1000.	2.00

Lewis Warriner, Dr.

1500 hard brick..	6.00
500 soft brick.....	1.00

Paid Peter Bowen for threshing wheat 13 $\frac{1}{4}$ cents a bushel.

Showing prices then paid for work:

E. F. Hackley, 75 cents day, 6 1-2 days, 4.88.

9 days work on mill, 6.75.

For more common labor:

Leonard Stilson, 2 days, 50, 1.00; 10 days work, 5.00; 1000 rails (making) 5.00; 3460 rails made, 17.30.

Showing prices of lumber:

Henry Dodge, 300 feet flooring, 80, 2.40.

Paid for making coat \$3.00.

Jabez Clark, Cr., 9 lbs. butter, 1.12 1-2. Some one Cr. chicken, 12.

This day book through these extracts shows what the pioneers paid for what they called "store goods," and what they received for their own work.

Other names, as of the Myricks, William and Elias, of S. D. Bryant, Horace Wood, and many others, on

that day book, were sixty years ago well-known names in Lake County, and their places of residence over quite a large area in the county show that the West Point store of 1837, 1838, 1839, and 1840, was very centrally located, and that West Point itself might well be as it was, a competing point in 1840 for the county seat of Lake.

JUDGE MCCARTY.

Where Benjamin McCarty was born or when has not been ascertained, but he first appears in this history as an early settler in La Porte County and as its first sheriff. The county was organized in 1832, one hundred families then being within its limits, and when the first Board of Commissioners met May 28, 1832, he was "the acting sheriff." He was afterwards elected Probate Judge and as such his name appears among those solemnizing marriage in La Porte County twice in 1833 and once in 1834.

He soon became a pioneer in Porter County, where he selected a central location and secured on his quarter section, "the geographical center of the county," the location of the county seat of Porter County. This was in 1836. For a few years the family resided in Porter County, and then passed further west and became pioneers in Lake County.

He obtained what was known to early settlers as the Lilley place on the east side of the Red Cedar Lake, where had been kept by Dr. Calvin Lilley a tavern and a store, and laid off town lots here, named the place West Point, and entered into competition with Solon Robinson and Judge Clark to secure the location in 1840 of the county seat of Lake County

But West Point was not in the center of the county and Judge McCarty's second town failed.

The McCarty family at this time consisted of himself and wife, six sons, E. Smiley, William Pleasant, Franklin, Fayette Asbury, Morgan, and Jonathon, and two daughters, Hannah and Candace. Four of the sons were young men, the two daughters were young ladies. The two sons known as Smiley and William had each a fine black saddle horse, probably as fine looking animals as were then in Lake County, and the other sons were well provided for also in the line of steeds.

They were the solid young men and boys of the community, more cultivated and better educated than many, quite polished and dignified. Some of the young men became teachers in the early public schools; the young ladies were soon married, the younger, Candace, marrying George Belshaw, who became afterward a large wheat raiser in Oregon; and finally the family, except one living son, and their dead, all left the county for Oregon and Iowa. Of one of these sons who went to Oregon, the rest of this notice will treat, the sketch having been written in 1872 and published in "Lake County, 1872," a work out of print.

FAYETTE ASBURY McCARTY.

He went into the Far West, beyond the Rocky Mountains, about twenty years ago [1852]. The maiden whom he had chosen to become his wife, fell with others a victim to Indian border strife just before the time set for their marriage. Lone in heart, he engaged for three years, in warfare against the Indians; was four times wounded by them; killed with

his own hand twenty-one of the Red Warriors who had burned the dwelling, and killed the whole family of her whom he loved. Like Logan, the Mingo, against the whites, he could say, "I have killed many;" and then he commenced his wanderings. He went among the mines; he went up into Alaska, then Russian America; he went down into South America; he crossed the ocean—the Pacific; spent some time in China; visited the Sandwich Islands on his return; made money among the mines; and after fourteen years' absence, visited, some six or seven years ago, the haunts of his youth in Lake County. He found here some old friends; narrated to us his adventures; went to New York to take passage again for the mines; was taken sick, and died soon after reaching the gold region at Idaho. Successful in obtaining gold, noble in disposition, lonely in heart in the sad romance of his life, he leaves his name and memory to be carefully treasured up by the friends of his boyhood at Cedar Lake.

CHAPTER XXXVI.

ATTEMPTS TO CHANGE.

Lake County came quite near losing about seventy square miles of area in the fall of 1860.

From the records of the Commissioners' Court of Lake County, it appears that on Friday, September 7, 1860, according to Order No. 19. George Earle presented a petition duly signed in which the petitioners asked that a part of the territory of Lake County be set off to Porter County. The boundaries were thus described: Commencing at the southeast corner of section 4, township 35, range 7 west, thence west to the southwest quarter of section 3, township 35, range 8, then north on the section line to the northwest corner of section 34, township 36, range 8, then west to the range line between ranges 8 and 9, then north to Lake Michigan, then along the lake easterly to the line between Lake and Porter Counties, then south to the place of beginning.

There were present at that session only two Commissioners, John Underwood and Adam Schmall. The petition was ordered to be filed and the case was continued.

December 7, 1860, only the same two Commissioners were present. Order No. 12 says, in regard to this petition, there being a difference of opinion be-

tween the two members of the Board who were present, the decision was deferred until the March term of 1861. And it is said in the records, "See Revised Statutes, Vol. 1, Chap. 20, section 8, page 225."

From information furnished by Mr. John Underwood, who is not now living, the decision of the case was postponed by his suggestion, as he was not in favor of granting the petition, and in the winter the situation of affairs was brought to the attention of the representative from Lake at Indianapolis, probably Hon. Bartlett Woods, a man ever true to what he regards as the interest of Lake County, or Hon. E. Griffin, and by act of the Legislature the law as it then stood, which authorized such a setting off from one county to another, was changed,—see act March 1, 1861,—and when the Commissioners met March 6, 1861, they passed the following: Order No. 18. "It is ordered that said petition be dismissed."

Thus ended the effort to form, it was supposed, a new county, presumably with Hobart for the county seat.

According to that History known as "Porter and Lake," (page 56), an effort had been made in 1859 to form a county to be called Linn, from territory then being a part of Porter and a part of La Porte counties, Michigan City to be the county seat. Petitions signed by more than two thousand citizens were presented to the Porter County Commissioners requesting this setting off of a part of Porter into a new county.

This the Commissioners declined to do. "The Commissioners of La Porte County disposed of the

question in a similar summary manner and the plan was abandoned." "Porter and Lake," page 57.*

As years have passed along there has been something printed, something said, in regard to the removal yet again of the county seat of Lake County.

The following paragraph is from the report made at the Old Settlers' anniversary in 1891 :

"In the winter of 1890 and 1891 a strenuous effort was made by some Hammond citizens to have a bill passed through the State Legislature leading to a removal of the county seat to Hammond. Crown Point citizens and some in other counties, especially in La Porte County, worked diligently against the bill, and it was at length defeated. No little excitement was awakened in the county by this attempt of the young manufacturing city to take, from the center of the county to the border of the city of Chicago, the county seat of Lake."

An effort to quite materially change Commissioners' districts in Lake County was made by some young men of Hammond.

This is the record, also from a report made at an Old Settlers' anniversary :

"In March of this year, 1898, a petition from Hammond with 734 signatures was presented to the County Commissioners asking for the re-districting of the county so that the three Commissioners' districts

* I have had no access to the records in Porter County to verify the above statement; but as the law was in 1859 the Commissioners had not much discretionary power. At least it was Mr. Underwood's opinion that, if the law had not been changed, the Lake County Commissioners would have been obliged, in March, 1861, to grant Mr. Earle's petition. Only two Commissioners being present in December, 1860, and the action of one of them in the matter, saved to Lake County what is now Hobart Township and a large part of Calumet. T. H. B.

should run north and south through the county in strips about five miles wide and thirty miles long, instead of continuing, as they have done, to run across the county from east to west. A day was set by the County Board for hearing the matter and W. B. Reading of Hammond advocated the measure. Remonstrances were presented signed by 1,311 citizens of the central and southern parts of the county; the Commissioners' Court room was well filled with interested citizens; Hon. B. Woods spoke against the petition in behalf of the remonstrants; and the Commissioners declined to grant the petition."

Hon. Bartlett Woods, a native of England, becoming a citizen here in 1837, now over eighty years of age, has been for many years the foremost man in Lake County to advocate, even if he stood alone, what he believed to be just and right. A number of good and true men whom Lake County has sadly missed in her civil and political affairs, have passed away, leaving him, among men in public life, almost alone of his generation; but in this particular of battling bravely for what he regards as right, he may quite well be called "the noblest Roman of them all."

Some disposition in past years was manifested in a part of La Porte County for the removal of the county seat from the center to a corner, from La Porte to Michigan City; but although Michigan City became a larger place than La Porte that has not seemed to be any good reason for removal. Good judgment, and that common sense that lets "well enough alone," seem likely, in La Porte County, to prevail.

The question of changing the location of the county seat has also had some disturbing influence in Newton County; but here the apparent propriety was quite

different from ~~what~~ it was in Lake and La Porte, as ~~here the~~ suggestion was to remove from near a corner to a locality nearer the center, that is, from Kentland to Morocco. Kentland has a much finer court yard than Morocco could furnish, but the buildings are not much, and the town is not specially growing. In general, public sentiment is not favorable to such changes which must injure the interests of some while promoting the interests of others.

If communities, as well as individuals, would carry out in all such matters the principle of the "Golden Rule," would actually do to others as, in a change of circumstances, they would like to have others do to them, there would be much less strife and discord in communities and neighborhoods.

Some one once wrote, "Oh! it is excellent to have a giant's strength, but it is villainous to use it like a giant." It is not necessary always for big fish to eat up little ones. But if they do, large towns should not wish to injure smaller ones.

CHAPTER XXXVII.

ALTITUDES.

The authorities for the altitudes given below are various. Some of the altitudes, those in La Porte County, are from Professor Cox, former State Geologist of Indiana. Those in Porter County are from Frank Leverett, from Gannett, from Campbell's Survey of the Kankakee Region, and from Henry Rankin, former county surveyor of Porter. Those in Lake County are from the same, substituting for Henry Rankin the name of George Fisher, county surveyor of Lake County. These altitudes for Porter and Lake are taken from "The Geology of Lake and Porter Counties" by W. S. Blatchley. In La Porte, elevation above the sea level, 810 feet; at Wanatah, 710; at La Crosse, 662;* and about two miles north of La **Porte**, said to be the highest point in the county, 870 feet, or 270 above Lake Michigan. This authority makes Lake Michigan 600 feet above the sea level, and a later authority, 1896, makes it only 582 feet.

In Porter County about a mile northwest from Valparaiso 840 feet; Flint Lake, 825; Valparaiso,

* I was at La Crosse on Wednesday, August 16, 1899, and found there a party of engineers taking altitudes along the Pan Handle line. They gave to me the altitude in front of their station 674 feet. I think these figures were not derived from a barometer.

T. H. B.

north part, 820, court house 803; Hebron, 713; Kouts, 687; Kankakee River, Baum's Bridge, 659; Dunn's Bridge, 663; (these both from surface of the water in the river); Chesterton, 659; and, highest point measured, some four miles north of Valparaiso and a mile east, 888 feet.

It looks a little unreasonable that Chesterton is no higher in its elevation above sea level than the Kankakee River at Baum's Bridge. And one authority gives Gossett's Mill Pond, which is, or was, about six miles north and west from Valparaiso, as only 620 feet. The writer, here, will not vouch for the accuracy of these figures, and Mr. Rankin gives Chesterton as 670 feet. The other figures, 659, are from Mr. Frank Leverett of Iowa, who it seems, made some examination of our Calumet Region.

In Lake County the following elevations have been given: In Crown Point, court house yard, by G. Fisher, county surveyor, 714 feet, at Creston, by Mr. F. Leverett, 740 feet, and Creston is on a prairie and the water on the road from Crown Point to Creston, for most of the way, runs southward. Also, from survey made, the county surveyor, G. Fisher, has found that the point where the road, half a mile east of Creston, crosses the township line three-quarters of a mile north, is fourteen feet lower than the south end of the pavement in Crown Point. Surely no one can stand in that road on that township line and look down upon Creston, over the low land between, and reasonably suppose that Creston is on ground some forty feet higher than the ground where he stands.

Mr. Leverett also gives Palmer 733 feet, and the watershed "near head waters of Eagle Creek and Deep River,"—and their head waters are several miles apart,

—747 feet. Of twenty-seven elevations given in Lake County, except at Crown Point, 714, Pan Handle station 695, Erie 702, and Fancher's Lake near Crown Point 713 feet, no other, except as given by Mr. Leverett, comes near to 700 feet. He gives St. Johns 697, Lowell 690, Leroy 683, Palmer 733, and the Kankakee River at the old mouth of Eagle Creek, which is many miles below Baum's Bridge, 660 feet.

But another authority gives the old Gibson Station 600, Tolleston 607, Lake Michigan 582, Whiting 606, and Lowell 636.

The authorities seem to differ quite a little in their observations or their estimates.

There is surely room for doubt as to the accuracy of Mr. Leverett's figures, the others being assumed as nearly correct. Some of these others are: Hammond 598; Hessville 623; Griffith 636; Highland 617; Dyer 638; Ross 638, and Miller's 625. These seven are all from Gannett's Dictionary of Altitudes. From Campbell's survey are these: Shelby 642; Kankakee River at Monon Railway Bridge, surface of water, 635.7, and at State Line 624.3 feet; thus giving a fall from Baum's Bridge, which is four ranges east, of 35 feet to the State line.

The highest point in Lake County, leaving Creston out till another authority asserts it to be 740 feet, is probably on the Watershed line between Crown Point and the Red Cedar Lake.

CHAPTER XXXVIII.

MISCELLANEOUS RECORDS.

WILD FRUIT.

Mention has elsewhere been made of the abundant yield of cranberries and huckleberries. The following statements are added. From a marsh, not very large, near his home in Hanover township, Mr. H. Van Hollen gathered one year a few hundred bushels, and the price that year was not less than three dollars per bushel.

Another of the early settlers saw a prospect for a good cranberry crop, he also had an opportunity to buy forty acres of marsh land for two hundred dollars. He made the purchase, the berry crop was large, and the price, it is said, was that season five dollars for a bushel. He paid for his land and had some hundreds of dollars left.

Professor Cox, the geologist, who explored the region around Michigan City in 1873, and mentioning the huckleberry bush on the sandy knolls, which, he says, "is native and very prolific," the fruit of which "is highly esteemed and much sought after," adds: "The shipments in the height of the season reach near three hundred bushels per day, being, to the berry gatherers, a dispensation of ten thousand dollars per

annum." He mentions our other abundant native fruit, cranberries, and says that "about two miles northwest of Michigan City is a marsh of sixty acres * * * which, it is asserted, yields, annually from one to two hundred bushels of berries per acre." These vines are cultivated, that is, they have been planted, but they are, in many marshes, the wild or native growth.

THE CALUMET REGION.

A strip of land, or of marshes and sand ridges, across the north part of Lake County, bears the name Calumet Region. It barely extends into Porter, but does pass out into Illinois. Through it the Calumet River flows west and south, and then returning crosses the strip almost a second time, passing now north of east. The whole area is about seventy square miles. The river, winding quite a little in its lower course, makes probably seventy-five miles or eighty miles in its entire circuit. It is a singular river, a peculiar region. Before the railroads came it was peculiarly a trapping ground and a grand resort for water-fowls, and then for sportsmen. From one of their noted resorts on this river have been sent away twelve hundred ducks as the result of two day's shooting. One trapper has taken in the trapping season about three thousand musk-rats and mink. As late as 1883 this same trapper and his son caught in the fall about fifteen hundred of these valuable fur bearing animals. But the region now is mostly given up to railroads and to cities.

DISAPPEARANCE OF WILD ANIMALS.

When the last deer was seen in Lake County can-

not certainly be known, but surely very few have been in any of the island groves since 1884.

Occasionally a wolf is yet found, or until very recently. In the spring of 1869 a wolf and eight young ones were killed on the Knoph farm only a mile or two east of Crown Point.

A few musk-rats of the noted Kankakee variety yet remain, and now and then there is found a mink. John Loague, who has a camp at Red Oak Island, in February of 1900 caught a mink which measured three feet from the tip of the nose to the end of the tail. It was considered a very large one.

Quails to some extent remain, a few "prairie chickens," some few, very few partridges, may possibly be found on well protected grounds, a few squirrels, many rabbits, some foxes, woodchucks and skunks, and a wolf, the last one yet heard of was killed near Lake Station in February, 1900, a straggler no doubt. Plover and other water fowls yet remain along the Kankakee.

THE WHITE OWL.

"During one of the very cold and snowy winters of our early times, a large white owl, not a native of this region, was shot on the west side of Cedar Lake. The bird seemed, from its appearance, so thoroughly protected was it from cold, and so white, to be a mountain or an Arctic denizen; and it was agreed to call it a Rocky Mountain Owl, brought out of its usual range and haunts by the great westerly storm.

THE BALD EAGLE.

"In 1857 a bald eagle was shot on the west side of Cedar Lake by David Martin, which measured from tip

to tip of the wings, some seven and a half feet. These American birds, formerly frequent visitors at that lake, have been rarely shot, and are now seldom seen. This is supposed to have been the last one killed around that lake.

THE SWAN.

"In 1869, Herbert S. Ball, coming up to his home at Crown Point, through the woods east of Cedar Lake, met a magnificent water-fowl which he captured and killed. The plumage was of snowy whiteness, very pure and beautiful. The wings extended from tip to tip nearly eight feet. The head was almost twice the length, and some three times the magnitude of the head of a wild goose. Its neck was very long. Its wings were broad and strong. The long bone of the wing was in length nearly eleven inches. When examined at Crown Point this majestic bird was unhesitatingly pronounced to be an American wild swan, of which a few individuals were shot in Cedar Lake by Alfred Edgerton a number of years ago."

DATES OF SOME EARLY MILLS.

Mills in La Porte County. In 1830 a saw-mill by Captain Andrew near the present La Porte. In 1832 a saw-mill by Chester Vail. In 1833 a saw-mill by Jacob Bryant at Holmesville. Also in 1833 the Ross mill in Springfield township by Erastus Quivey. Also in 1833 three mills in Cool Spring township: One by General Orr, one by Arba Heald, one by Walker & Johnson. Also in 1833 two grist-mills, in Union township, one by John Winchell, one by John and Henry Vail.

In 1834 a fine grist-mill on Trail Creek near Michi-

gan City. This mill became noted, customers coming to it from long distances. Also in 1834 two grist-mills in Springfield township, one by Joseph Pugin and one by David Pugin. Also in 1834 a saw-mill in Galena township, the first, and another in Cool Spring township.

In 1835 the first saw-mill in Pleasant township on the Little Kankakee. And in 1835 two more in Springfield township, one by Jacob Early, one by Charles Vail.

In 1836 a saw-mill in Scipio township on Mill Creek by Asaph Webster, and a grist-mill on Spring Creek by Aaron Stanton.

In 1837 the Bigelow mills completed, and in 1838 the grist-mill at Union Mills by Dr. Everts.

It thus appears that there was no lack of mills in La Porte County before the year came of 1840.*

Mills in White County.

In 1836 Joseph Bothrock built the first saw-mill.

In 1844 William Sill started the first grist-mill at a place called Norway on the Tippecanoe. An earlier mill for the settlers was in the edge of Carroll County. Robert Barr had a saw-mill on Moot's Creek in 1838.

Mills in Porter County.

In 1836 on Fort Creek at City West was a saw-mill erected, one of the early ones, but not one of long duration. After sawing up timber into the lumber for that young city it was abandoned.

In 1835 or 1836 Samuel Shigley built a saw-mill on Salt Creek south of Valparaiso one mile. Here

* Authority, History of La Porte County by C. C. Chapman & Co.

William Cheney in 1841 built a grist-mill. This is said to be one of the best water powers in the county. This became in after years William Sager's flouring mill.

The first saw-mill in what is now Liberty township was built by Samuel Olinger in 1836 on a little stream called Damon Run. About 1837 William Gossett erected a saw-mill on Salt Creek, and soon after started a grist-mill which became quite noted in early years.

Casteel's mill on Coffee Creek is mentioned as as 1836.

Eglon's was another early mill.

It is said that the first regularly laid out road in Porter County connected Casteel's and Gossett's

In later years many mills have been erected in the county. Mills for carding wool were put in operation not far south of Valparaiso, perhaps as early as 1836, one of these on Salt Creek built by Jacob Axe. Cromwell Axe built a saw-mill in 1842.

Mills in Lake County.

Four saw-mills were built in 1837, called Walton's Wood's, Dustin's, and Taylor's. The last one was on Cedar Creek and soon commenced grinding corn as well as sawing. It afterward became known as the McCarty mill, but was never very profitable. Wood's mill on Deep River soon became a grist-mill with a large amount of grinding to be done, persons coming with the grain from long distances, and at length it became the fine flouring-mill of Nathan Wood of Woodvale. Built by his father it passes to his son.

Other flouring-mills of the county at Hobart, Lowell, and Dyer are of later date.

Mills in Starke County.

These are not early mills, yet the earliest in the county. In 1849 Samuel Koontz built the first saw-mill, and in 1853 the first grist-mill commenced work, the lumber of which it was constructed having been sawed at the Koontz mill.

LAKE COUNTY GYMNASIUM AND NORMAL SCHOOL.

The first Normal school work in Lake County was in 1872. In August of that year T. H. Ball opened a school for the instruction of teachers which at length took the name given above. Gymnasium was used in the German and not the American sense. This school closed in 1879. In the first term thirty lectures were given on subjects beyond the elementary branches of study. Normal classes were afterwards taught by the county superintendents. Of these superintendents, the present one, Frank E. Cooper, who has been in office since April 17, 1882, at length gave up holding a "summer Normal," and the superintendents of some of the larger graded schools of the county have since conducted a normal school, in July and August of each year, at Crown Point. The normal work in Lake County is largely now reviewing elementary branches for a short term each summer, and is not like the work at Valparaiso.

A PROSPECTIVE INDUSTRY.

It has been mentioned as a result of drainage in Starke County that it was leading into beet culture for making sugar. The prospect is now good for this to become a large branch of industry. At Shelby, on lands of the Lake Agricultural Company, many acres in this year of 1900 have been devoted to beet culture.

Beets to be shipped to a sugar factory in Michigan are growing this year at LeRoy, and in Porter and La Porte counties. Near La Crosse a tract of seven thousand acres of land, called the Huncheon tract, was in the spring of this year of 1900 sold to Illinois men at the rate of twenty-five dollars per acre, and these men, it is reported, "intend putting up there soon a large sugar-beet factory." One at La Crosse, one at Shelby, and one at North Judson, will furnish employment for many men and boys, and may help to balance the influence of the northern line of manufacturing cities.

SPORTSMEN.

Several years ago, before the days of steam dredges on the Kankakee Marsh, as that marsh region had been a great trapping and hunting and camping ground for Indians, so it became an attractive region for white sportsmen. Not hunters were they nor yet trappers, but simply sportsmen, killing wild animals for the sake of killing. Sportsmen's homes were built at different places on the north side of the river, and persons came from various cities to enjoy wild life, to shoot wild game. On section sixteen, in township thirty-two, range nine, there was a beautiful grove. In those years quite far back, it was an island. Marsh with water was all round it. The surface among the trees was quite level and largely covered with beautiful moss. Being on section sixteen it was called School Grove Island. In these later years it is called Oak Grove. It is still a grove, but not an island now. Its first inhabitant, when it was an island, was John Hunter, a true frontier hunter and trapper, living for years, that secluded trapper life, along the

Kankakee, camping on different islands. He at length made this island his home.

Heath & Milligan of Chicago bought some land on the island, and they with eight other Chicago men built in the fall of 1869 a house for a sportsman's resort. It was called Camp Milligan. It was kept by G. M. Shaver and family. From Chicago and other cities men would come with their guns, spend a few days, register in a book kept for the purpose their success, pay their bills and depart. A regulation of this camp was that no game should be sold. It was not designed for hunters. Some records are these: Eight men in a few days shot sixty-five snipes and five hundred and thirteen ducks; four men, days not given, shot fifty snipes and five hundred and fifteen ducks; "September 11th, Sunday, no shooting"; shooting from September 1st to 17th "except Sunday." Certainly those sportsmen of thirty years ago left a good example for the sportsmen of to-day, an example which is not very closely followed. G. M. Shaver himself shot in one year eleven hundred ducks and other water-fowl. He no doubt could sell.

In 1871 some Englishmen visited Camp Milligan. One was William Parker, understood to be a member of the nobility of England, accompanied by an older man, Captain Blake.

In 1872 they returned with a still younger Parker, (a very agreeable, pleasant, well educated young man, a "younger son" of some noble house), bought land, laid out quite an amount of money, established "Cumberland Lodge," besides a dwelling house and barns, built kennels and brought from England some sixteen very choice hunting dogs of different varieties and other choice blooded English dogs, also some Alder-

ney cows and some horses, obtaining also a black bear and some foxes, and seemed to be laying a foundation for an English country seat.

The Parker brothers, especially the younger one, the elder one was not at Crown Point much, made a very favorable impression upon Crown Point society; but for reasons certainly not made public, they soon disposed of their costly establishment, and, probably, returned to England. Their place, the name, Cumberland Lodge, being retained, went into the hands of some business men of Chicago, some of them very gentlemanly men, who kept it up for many years as a sportsmen's club house.

At English Lake, in La Porte County, a quite similar club house was built. This has been kept open for many years.

On the south side of the Kankakee, in Newton County near Thayer, is quite a large club house, built several years ago, and on the river and the Monon road, just across from Shelby are several small houses for individuals or small parties that come from the cities on the Wabash and south of it. On the other roads where they cross the Kankakee, are special resorts for fowling and fishing. The river is very well shaded, the water quite pure, the seclusion all one need to desire. All these resorts are devoted, partly to rest and recuperation in the summer, but largely to pleasure.

At Baum's Bridge on the Kankakee some wealthy men from Pennsylvania, from Pittsburg, built a summer resort several years ago. Some of them come each season to rest and shoot and fish.

Some families living on the marsh line also take sportsmen as boarders in the shooting season, and

from many cities wealthy business men or men of leisure have for many years spent a few days or a few weeks in a year far from the business world in the shaded and wild retreats of the noted Kankakee Region. But as the drainage becomes more perfect, and when the sugar beet enterprise brings thousands of acres of that land into cultivation, there will be less to attract sportsmen.

When the time for the land sale for Pulaski County was near, it was found that speculators were likely to buy up lands which had been improved by squatters. While accounted dishonorable and worse than dishonorable this was sometimes done. The Golden Rule did not bind men even in those good pioneer days. Fearing that their lands might be thus bought some early entries were made by a few pioneers who had money in their hands. In 1838 S. McNutt entered 640 acres; N. Benjamin and J. H. Thompson 320 acres each; and Josiah C. White 800 acres.

Some speculators or large land buyers were quite honorable. Of this rather small class, it is to be feared, was William Wilson, who in 1834, located Indian floats upon two sections of land, 1280 acres, in Clinton township, La Porte County.

The record is: "Mr. Wilson honorably paid the settlers on the two sections for all the improvements they had made."

There was one feature of pioneer life that does not seem to have been brought out in any descriptions of it referred to in Chapter V., nor yet even in that

chapter. This special feature may be called "Donation Parties." These were gatherings of a congregation, bringing good things and also money, to aid the pastor and his family. Sometimes the people met at some home, or at the pastor's residence, sometimes at a school house. They were made very pleasant occasions.

TELEPHONE COMPANIES.

The Jasper County Telephone Company, stockholders Delos Thompson, C. C. Sigler, and others, was organized in 1895, and work commenced July 5th of that year. Before the year closed poles were erected and wires extended to "Remington, Wolcott, Reynolds, Brookston, Chalmers," and to Lafayette. The towns, and the large farms, and the cattle ranches along the Kankakee, indeed all of Jasper, may be considered as connected by these wonderful telephone wires. The center, of course, is the enterprising city of Rensselaer.

The Crown Point Telephone Company was organized April 6, 1896. About two hundred and forty telephones are now in Crown Point, and lines lead out to Lowell, where is also a company, to LeRoy, to Eagle Creek, to Cedar Lake, and to Hammond. From Lowell there is connection with Hebron and Valparaiso, and with La Porte, and Rensselaer, and over all of Northwestern Indiana. In the directory a list of 126 toll line stations is given extending to Logansport and Kentland and Michigan City and Lake Village. There is a network of telephone wires all over these counties now, the prediction of which sixty years ago would have astonished the pioneers. It is a wonderful means of communication. In some of

the neighborhoods in Lake County, connected with Crown Point, as at Plum Grove, the families of farmers in their homes can talk with their neighbors, or with persons in their homes at Lowell, at Crown Point, at LeRoy, at Hebron, and enjoy the benefit of a personal visit. The same in the other counties is also now the result of this network of wires.

IMPROVED ROADS.

For a number of years Michigan City was the great grain market for the majority of the grain raisers in this part of the State. From Lake County many did their marketing in Chicago. On some of the roads was deep sand, and on others, at times, was deep mud. Better roads were needed. The first experiment in roadmaking was done with planks.

About 1850 the construction commenced of a plank road between Valparaiso and Michigan City, and one was built on part of the road between Valparaiso and La Porte. Some of this latter road was in good condition in 1856. These roads were built by companies or corporations and had toll gates. When new they were very good; but they wore away rapidly; then the roads were very bad. They were expensive and not durable and in a few years were given up.

Years passed. Earth only was used in "working" the roads. Small ditches in low places and raising a central road bed made some improvement. But during portions of the year many of the roads were still in bad condition. Over the country largely the best way to secure good roads was studied and discussed. It was a question for years to quite an extent before the American public. At the Columbus Exposition in 1893 it received no little attention. But as early as

1885 in White County a beginning was made in constructing "gravel roads." The making of such roads has been there continued, and now in this county they build "macadam roads." The Auditor of White County reported for 1898, bonds for the Ormsby Gravel Road, the Chilton Gravel Road, the Thompson Gravel Road, the Fox Gravel Road, the Powell Gravel Road and for two macadam roads, the Vogel and the Winkley. Work on some of these roads was going on in 1899. Number of miles of gravel and macadem roads in White County, when the present roads are completed, 100.

In Lake County the gravel and macadam roads are built by the townships, Calumet commencing such work in 1890. Roads of one variety or of the other, the macadam roads, so-called, being the latest, are now in Hobart, Calumet, North, Ross, St. Johns, Center, and Cedar Creek townships. Number of miles in Lake County of these improved roads 75. When all are completed in this year of 1900 there will be 130 miles.

In Marion township, in Jasper County, are some good gravel roads running through Rensselaer made in 1893, and all paid for in 1899.

In Newton County are also some gravel roads leading out from Rose Lawn towards Lake Village and one line of road going to Thayer.

These improved roads in all these counties will form not a little part of the large heritage that will be left for the coming generation.

By an act of the Legislature of Indiana in the winter of 1834 and 1835, provision was made for the organization of fifteen counties, among which was Jas-

per, but the organization of this county did not take place till 1838. Says the Historical Atlas of Indiana, certainly a good authority, "This large and sparsely inhabited area of thirteen hundred square miles, including, in the southern portion, some of the finest lands in the State, was then a far-stretching wild, dotted here and there by a solitary cabin, and the Indians roamed almost undisturbed in all directions. The northern part of this territory was then called Newton and the southern part Jasper; the dividing line between the two parts was not far from Rensselaer. This division was only nominal, however." And this appears from the fact that when the County Commissioners met in March, 1839, one of their first acts was to divide Newton County, "or what was more properly Newton township, into two townships." One of these was named Newton and the other Pinkamink.

In Newton the house of Joseph D. Yeoman was selected as the place for holding the coming May election, and the residence of William Donahoe for Pinkamink township, who, although living in a locality said to be near Francesville, was in Jasper and not Pulaski County.

A great advance in population and in wealth took place in Jasper County after 1856, the year in which the inhabitants learned the value of the mucky prairie lands, for Jasper is an agricultural county; but the great development of the county has taken place since 1880, or in the last twenty years, and this by means of ditching and tiling, the steam dredge having come into use for cutting ditches. Many thousands of acres have thus been rendered very productive.

ABOUT CHURCHES.

"The Protestant Methodists have half a dozen classes and one or two churches. The Presbyterians organized in 1847, and soon erected a church, which now gives place to the grandest and best edifice in the county. A church was built in Remington in 1866, The Missionary Baptists organized in 1857. The Free Wills in 1853. The Church of God in 1860. The Disciples at Remington in 1867, while the Catholics built at Rensselaer in 1866, and at Remington in 1865. Within a few years the Lutheran and other denominations have erected places of worship at Wheatfield, De Motte, Kniman, and various places in the county."

The above extract is from an editorial in a "Holiday Souvenir Edition" of the People's Pilot, published at Rensselaer in January, 1896. The same publication containing long and interesting articles concerning different denominations, states that "Methodism invaded Jasper County in 1836," and that an organization was effected in 1838, and the first church building at Rensselaer dedicated in 1850.

DEATH BY FREEZING.

In La Porte County a sad death took place in the cold of a winter evening. The month was February. The year was 1831. Settlers were not very many then. The township was, in 1834, organized and called Wills. In May, 1836, the northeast corner of it became Hudson township. Into Wills township, as afterwards marked out, came in 1830, John Wills and three sons, Charles, Daniel, and John E., and other settlers followed, among whom were Andrew Shaw, John Sissany, and John S. Garroute. Mrs. Mary

Garroute, wife of the last named settler, went on horseback in February, 1831, over the line into St. Joseph County, to visit a sick friend, Mrs. Garwood. "The day was clear and cold, and, on her return, she stopped at the house of John Wills. After resting a short time she continued her journey homeward. The wind in the meantime had risen, and the snow drifted in sheets." She ought to have staid in the shelter of that home; but her sense of duty no doubt urged her forward. Her struggle for life in the few hours that followed had no human witness. It was supposed that she dismounted at length from her horse, and sought by the exercise of walking to keep herself from freezing. What was known was the sad fact that the mail carrier, travelling on snow shoes the next morning, found her frozen form lying on the snow, and a fierce wolf, which he had succeeded in scaring away, making directly for it. Evidently she was a kindly disposed and a heroic woman, and so sad a death could not soon in that pioneer neighborhood have been forgotten. That more persons did not perish from exposure and from getting lost on the prairies or in the woodlands may in part be accounted for from the caution exercised not to have women and children exposed in the night time. That men should be thus exposed was sometimes almost unavoidable, and there were some remarkable escapes.

Only two deaths from freezing are on record in Lake County. The death of David Agnew is elsewhere recorded. In 1842, November 17, William Wells, "a very steady, sober, stout, healthy man, perished with cold in a severe snowstorm while returning home from mill," at Wilmington in Illinois. When his body was found

the evidence appeared that, feeling no doubt that he was lost, and becoming, probably, benumbed with cold, he unhitched his horses and set them free, and instead of endeavoring to protect himself as best he could with the means at his disposal in his wagon, started out to get warm by walking. But the intense cold of that November storm was too much for any ordinary endurance. As he was traced out from the wagon his footsteps at first were the usual distance apart as though he had set out with some vigor and hope. But soon the space between the tracks grew shorter and shorter, until at last one foot scarcely advanced at all beyond the other, and the form above them evidently barely moved, and fell at length, without a struggle, asleep in the snow. Very sad, but probably not painful, is such a lone death in a cold winter night.

DEATH BY ACCIDENT.

In Galena township, covered originally with heavy timber, genuine "thick woods," an incident took place which deserves to be placed on record as illustrating the unselfish love of a true father for his child. William Mathews, with a wife and one child, a boy about six years of age, came from Missouri and settled in this township. He is represented as having been a large, powerful man, quiet, unobtrusive, industrious, and devotedly attached to his only child. He was cutting down a large tree one day when a strong wind was blowing. Having cut as much as he thought prudent, he stepped back a few yards to look at the tree, his son by his side. As he looked he saw to his surprise the tree falling rapidly toward them, aided, no doubt, by that strong wind. It is supposed that he

saw no hope of the escape of both, and in an instant with his strong arms he threw the child out of danger and the next instant he lay dead, crushed to the earth beneath that fallen tree. As there is only conjecture to guide here, it is reasonable to suppose that the father determined to make sure of the safety of his son first, and so tossed him out of danger, and then designed to follow him if he could, but the tree caught him before he escaped.

In Wills township in 1835 were the following settlers: John Wills, Asa Warner, John Sissany, Andrew Shaw, David Stoner, Jesse N. West, Howell Huntsman, Mr. Kitchen, Dr. Chapman, Matthias Dawson, George Hunt, John Bowell, Asher White, Edmund Jackson, Joseph Lykins, John Sutherland, Joseph Starrett, William Ingraham, Scott West, John Hefner, Jesse Sissany, William Nixon, William West, Gabriel Drollinger, Andrew Faller, John Vickory, Nimrod West, Jacob Glygean, Jonathan Stoner, John Clark, George Belshaw, Samuel Van Dalsen, Martin Baker, Jesse Collum, John Golbreath, Benjamin Golbreath, and Mr. Gallion."

ORIGIN OF SOME NAMES.

La Porte. General Packard says: "It is related that when the act for the incorporation of the county was before the legislature a representative from one of the older counties arose to inquire what outlandish name it was they were about to give the new county, and he desired to know what it meant. He was told that the word was French for 'door' or 'gate,' and took its origin from a natural opening through the timber of a grove leading from one part of the prairie to the other. 'Well, then,' said he, 'why not call it Door

County at once and let these high-flown, aristocratic French names alone?" But his advice was not followed, and the county, as subsequently the city, received the beautiful name 'La Porte,' instead of being forever heralded to the world as Door County and Doorburg." This explanation is certainly good, so far as it goes, but if one should ask the further question, Why was a French word taken instead of a word meaning door from some other language? and the true answer would probably be, Because French explorers and traders who were on this region in early times called this natural door-way "La Porte." The English name, however, was given of Door Prairie, and also the name Door Village, both having an agreeable sound.

Hog Prairie in La Porte County derives its name from the fact that some native hogs were found there supposed to have "been scattered by the Indians," whatever that may mean. Hog Creek, of course, took its name from the Prairie.

BROOKSTON. POPULATION 1,600.

The figures given above are the present estimated population of this town; but as the number of school children is only "about 380," it is not likely the census returns will give more than 1,400, as the real population. Brookston is in the south part of White County, about four miles south of Chalmers and thirteen miles north of Lafayette. The churches are five: Methodist Episcopal, Presbyterian, Baptist, "Christian," and Universalist.

The town is noted for enterprise and has the largest freight business of any town on the Monon line between Hammond and Lafayette. "The streets are

well built and in good condition. The side walks are principally of cement, of which there are about four and a half miles."

Note. As Brookston is south of township 26, and so does not appear on the map, it was not named among the other towns of White County.

SOME PECULIAR RECORDS.

1. Immunity from what is called the common lot. Mr. and Mrs. H. Boyd of South East Grove were married in 1843, and had three children and thirteen grandchildren, and their first death was that of the mother and grandmother, Mrs. Boyd, who died in May, 1899, nearly eighty-two years of age. For more than fifty-five years death made no call at any of their homes.

2. An instance of longevity. Mrs. Betsey R. Wason, born in Wilton, New Hampshire, in August, 1818, a member of the noted Abbot family, was married to the Rev. Hiram Wason in October, 1844, was with him in pastoral life at Vevay, Ind., and came with him to Lake Prairie, where he became pastor of the Presbyterian church, in 1857. She was for many years an active and devoted woman in church and Sunday school work, a leader in society, having been a teacher for many years in her earlier life. Having lived and labored together for more than fifty years, Mr. Wason died in June, 1898, in his eighty-third year of life, and Mrs. Wason died December 15, 1898, eighty years of age.

3. Longevity yet more rare. Peter Surprise, the father of Henry Surprise, who is well known in the central and southern parts of Lake County, has been for several years reported as over one hundred years

old. His exact age is not known, but it is considered sure that he is as much as one hundred and five years of age.

4. A large household. Julius Demmon was born in the East July 24, 1821. He came into Lake County about 1838, and in June, 1850, was married to Miss Nancy Wilcox, and commenced farming. He began life with but little property, but, as a careful and successful farmer, he accumulated, until he became owner of about two thousand acres of valuable land not far from Merrillville. He had six sons and six daughters, all of whom married and settled within some three miles of his home. He died in October, 1898, and at the burial services there were gathered eighty members of two generations, six sons with their wives all present, and six daughters with their husbands, all present, and sixty-one grandchildren, these nearly all present, making some eighty-two or three, beside the minister and Mrs. Demmon's sister, Mrs. Inez Gibson, who stood for a few moments in the crowded room for a short service before the body was removed for burial. That minister, who had stood amid many groups gathered around their dead in Indiana and Illinois and Alabama, and amid large households, never expects amid such a peculiar group to stand again.

The city of La Porte, in regard to its burial ground, called Pine Lake Cemetery, shows that its inhabitants have reached a high grade of civilization. It is situated about two miles north of the city, "was laid out under the State laws in 1835, and contains forty-seven acres." The first president of the association was Gilbert Hathaway. President for many

years, General Joseph Orr, under whose directions the grounds were improved, and these improvements with its natural advantages render it "one of the most beautiful places in La Porte County." And for those who know La Porte County that is saying much.

PAPERS AND PERIODICALS.

The names of the papers published in these counties will here be given, followed by the names of the editors of each, the editors being generally also the publishers.

1. Newton County. At Kentland, The Kentland Democrat, Edward Steinback, and Newton County Enterprise, H. A. Strohm. At Brook, The Brook Reporter, O. B. Stonehill. At Morocco, The Morocco Courier, W. W. Miller. At Goodland, Herald and Journal, A. J. Kitt. At Rose Lawn, Review, J. W. Crooks. In all six.

2. Jasper County. At Rensselaer, Democratic Sentinel, James W. McEwen, Jasper County Democrat, F. E. Babcock, Journal. Leslie Clark, Republican, George E. Marshall. At Remington, The Remington Press, Griffin and McNickol. At Wheatfield, Kankakee Valley Telephone, F. H. Robertson. In all six.

3. White County. At Monticello, Evening Journal, C. M. Reynolds; Monticello Herald, J. B. Vanbuskirk; White County Democrat, Clarke & Simons; White County National, J. C. Smith. At Wolcott, Wolcott Enterprise, E. A. Walker. At Chalmers, The Chalmers Ledger, W. A. Watts. At Brookston, The Brookston Gazette, George H. Heeley. At Monon, Monon News, W. D. Harlow. At Idaville, Idaville Observer, B. E. McCall. In all nine.

4. Pulaski County. At Winamac, Democrat-Journal, "Established in 1857," bought by the present editor, M. H. Ingram, in 1865, then Democrat, consolidated with the Journal in 1884; the Winamac Republican, "Newton Brothers, Publishers," C. W. Riddick; Pulaski Democrat, J. J. Gorrell. At Star City, Star City News, C. W. Riddick. At Monterey, Monterey Sun, Young Bros. At Francesville, Francesville Tribune, E. D. Knotts. At Medaryville, Advertiser, H. C. Schott. In all seven.

5. Starke County. At Knox, Starke County Democrat, S. M. Gorrell; Starke County Republican, John L. Mooman; The Knox Crescent. At North Judson, North Judson News, J. Don Gorrell. In all four.

6. La Porte County. At La Porte, La Porte Argus, H. E. Wadsworth; La Porte Herald, E. Molloy; La Porte Republican, C. G. Powell; La Porte Bulletin, Catholic American, Harry B. Darling. Monthly. At Michigan City, Michigan City Dispatch, J. B. Faulkner; Michigan City News, Robb & Carpenter; Frei Lanze, Karl Freitag, Kirchenbote, Antone Hudster, Ph. D. Congregational Conference. At Wanatah, Wanatah Mirror, L. J. Gross. At Westville, Westville Indicator, Charles E. Martin. In all eleven.

7. Porter County. At Valparaiso, Messenger and Evening Messenger, E. Zimmerman; Porter County Vidette and Star-Vidette, Welty & Cook; Porter County Journal, G. W. Doty; Evening Hoosier, E. E. Small; Independent Forester of America (monthly), Frank H. Klier. At Chesterton, Chesterton Tribune, A. J. Bowser. At Hebron, Hebron News, A. W. Barnes. At Kouts, Record, R. E. Helms. In all ten.

8. Lake County. At Crown Point, Crown Point Register, A. A. Bibler (Bibler & McMahan, publishers), now in Vol. 43; The Lake County Star, J. J. Wheeler, in "twenty-ninth year;" Crown Point Freie Presse, Henry Barck. At Lowell, Lowell Tribune, Ragon & Ragon. At Hobart, Hobart Gazette, Smith & White; Hobart Cyclone, Z. E. Irvin. At East Chicago, East Chicago Globe, Allison P. Brown. At Whiting, Whiting News, J. H. Barnett; Whiting Sun, Cecil Ingham. At Hammond, The Hammond Tribune, Percy A. Parry; Lake County News, S. E. Swaim; Hammond Daily Republican, Porter B. Towle; Deutsche Volks-Zeitung, Wilhelm Schnett. In all thirteen. Total number sixty-six.

A VETERAN JOURNALIST.

Among the four quite aged men now residing in Crown Point is Mr. John Millikan, an aged and now retired journalist. He was born in Delaware County, Ohio, July 16, 1814, while war with England was still going on, and his birthplace was called Fort Morrow, a fort built on his grandfather's land. When twelve years of age he commenced in the town of Delaware to learn the art of printing. In February, 1837, then twenty-two years of age, he came to South Bend, and as a practical printer he commenced his editorial life on a paper called the Free Press. This paper was at length bought by Colfax and West, who changed its name to the St. Joseph Valley Register, and Editor Millikan, in 1845, removed to La Porte, where he purchased of Thomas A. Steward the La Porte Whig. This name, in 1852, was changed to La Porte Union. In 1867 he left the newspaper line and went to Chicago, but in 1871 returned to Indiana and resumed

at Plymouth editorial work, purchasing there and publishing the Plymouth Republican. After six years in Plymouth he made one more change and came to Crown Point in 1877. He soon commenced the publication of a new and interesting paper called the Cosmos, but before long he purchased one-half of the Crown Point Register, a paper established in 1857, and not very long after he obtained the entire interest and control of this paper and published it successfully until 1891, when already seventy-seven years of age, and for a time in rather feeble health, he sold all his interest in the Register and retired to a more quiet life. He is a good printer, has been a judicious editor, and has spent fifty years of a long life in printing offices at South Bend and La Porte, at Plymouth and in Crown Point. Although now eighty-six years of age his step is quick like that of a vigorous man of sixty, his hearing is remarkably good, and all his faculties seem to be unimpaired.

CHAPTER XXXIX.

SOME STATISTICS.

The following table will show the increase of our counties in population according to the Census Reports. For 1900, estimated:

	1860.	1870.	1880.
Lake	9,145	12,339	15,091
Porter	10,313	13,942	17,227
La Porte	22,919	27,162	30,985
Starke	2,195	3,888	5,105
Pulaski	5,711	7,801	9,851
White	8,258	10,554	13,795
Jasper	4,291	6,354	9,464
Newton	2,360	5,829	8,167
Total	65,192	87,869	109,685
	1890.	1900.	1900.
Lake	23,886	38,902	39,
Porter	18,052	19,540	19,
La Porte	34,445	39,837	39,
Starke	7,339	12,000	11,
Pulaski	11,233	14,640	14,
White	15,671	17,787	18,
Jasper	11,185	13,974	14,
Newton	8,803	9,669	10,
Total	130,614	165,349	

Note. In the first column of figures for 1900 the population as given, or estimated, is three and one-half times the number of the school children, as enum-

erated in May, 1900, for Lake, Porter and La Porte Counties. For the other five counties it is only three times the number of the school children. In the second column for 1900 the figures are given for the number of thousands which it is estimated the census of 1900 will give, and a blank space is left for filling in the other three figures when the census enumeration is published. The accuracy or want of accuracy of the estimate will then plainly appear. Those who study statistics as to population will take an interest in the investigation. It appears from the table as given that in 1880 the population of La Porte County was more than double the population of Lake County. And as now estimated the population of Lake is nearly equal to that of La Porte, as the school children are in number nearly equal. No one need be surprised if the census of 1900 gives a larger population to Lake County than to La Porte. It is quite possible that Lake will come up to 40,000. In a few months we will know.

It is interesting to compare with the population the number of children of school age, as they are enumerated in May of each year by the township trustees. The following figures are from official sources:

	1880.	1890.	1900.
Lake	5,360	6,753	11,115
Porter	5,126	5,907	5,583
La Porte	11,108	11,551	11,382
Starke	1,871	2,721	4,000
Pulaski	3,636	4,201	4,880
White	4,114	5,182	5,929
Jasper	3,396	3,965	4,658
Newton	2,743	2,789	3,223

In La Porte County were, in 1880, 63 colored children. In Michigan City in 1880, of children, 2,080, in La Porte 3,439, in Westville 283.

It appears from the above figures that the school children in Lake County have more than doubled in number in the last twenty years. The population also of Lake County has much more than doubled. This increase has been largely in North township where the population in 1880 was 2,540. Hammond had then a population of 699, Whiting of 115, and East Chicago was not. Now the school children of Hammond are 3,621, of East Chicago 876, and of Whiting 640. Of Crown Point they number 700. Children in Rensselaer 697, of Valparaiso 1,348. The proportion which the children of school age bear to the entire population is quite different in the different counties. Let us take the year 1880. Three times the number of school children in Lake, 16,080, give nearly a thousand more than the population. In Porter that same will give nearly two thousand less. The same in La Porte County, 33,324, exceeds the population by two and a third thousand. In Starke the same ratio exceeds the population by five hundred. In Pulaski the excess is a thousand. In White, which is like Porter County in regard to children, three times the school children, 12,342, will give fourteen hundred less than the population. In Jasper an excess appears of seven hundred more than the real population. In Newton County alone the proportion of one to three nearly holds good. Three times 2,743, 8,229, slightly exceeds the population, which is 8,167. But taking the year 1890 as a criterion of the real proportion which the school children bear to the entire population and the following results appear: Excess of population in

Lake County, above three times the enumeration, 3,627. In Porter excess only 331. And in 1880 the excess was 1,849. In La Porte three times the enumeration in 1890 exceeds the population by 208, instead of, as in 1880, by 2,339. In Starke three times the enumeration exceeds the population by 824. In Pulaski the same exceeds the population by 1,370. In White the same is less than the population by 125. In Jasper the excess above the population is 710, and in Newton the same is 436 less than the population. It appears then that the population is sometimes much more and sometimes much less than three times the number of the school children.

In an ordinary, agricultural community three and a half times the number of children will usually exceed the population.

The following view of town population, taken from the census reports, is also of interest:

	1880.	1890.
Goodland	628	889
Kentland	982	918
Rensselaer	968	1,455
Monticello	1,193	1,518
Winamac	835	1,215
North Judson	165	572
Knox	316	790
La Porte	6,195	7,126
Michigan City	7,366	10,776
Westville	627	522
Hebron	715	689
Valparaiso ..	4,461	5,090
Lowell	458	761
Hobart	600	1,010
Crown Point	1,708	1,907
Whiting		1,408
East Chicago		1,255
Hammond	699	5,428

From all the foregoing it is quite evident that, in several particulars, Lake County, in the coming century, will take the lead of all these northwestern counties; and it becomes its inhabitants, as well as those of the other counties, to see that between the manufacturing interests of the lake shore towns and the agricultural interests of the central and southern parts of these shall come no clashing and arise no strife. From the fertile lands of the Kankakee Valley, and from the rich farms north of the "shore line" and south of the large valley, much of the true wealth of this region is to be produced; and well will it be if all the thousands in the towns and on the farms will work together for the common good.

CHAPTER XL.

A WEATHER RECORD.

Along with its general, its church, and its Sunday school history, Lake County has a weather record kept with more or less fullness of detail from 1835 up to 1900. It may be that other counties in the State have such records; perhaps they have not. This in Lake County was commenced by Solon Robinson; it has been kept up by members of the Ball family, and by Rev. H. Wason of Lake Prairie, until now. Whether it will be continued after 1900 ends is uncertain. Some extracts from it are here given. The full record would fill quite a volume. To some this will be of interest. For such it is here:

"1835. Winter mild until February; then exceedingly severe weather. 1836. A very wet summer. 1837. An excessively wet one. 1838. A summer of severe drouth and great sickness. The La Porte County record is: 'The year 1838 is somewhat memorable as the "sickly season."' Bilious complaints were prevalent, and very few escaped. There were not enough remaining well properly to care for the sick."

1839. February and March warm and wet. April 3 gardening commenced. 1840. Winter mild. In February rains and fog, and, 29, very warm. March 25 and 26, plowing. 1841. Winter quite mild. 1842.

This winter of 1842 and 1843 called the "hard winter." Many cattle starved to death. Winter commenced November 17. William Wells of West Creek, perished with cold returning home from mill at Wilmington in Illinois. February 18, sleighing good, forage for cattle scarce and cattle in many places dying. April 1, snow deeper than at any time before this winter, from fifteen to eighteen inches in the woods. 16 (1843), Alfred Edgerton crossed Cedar Lake on the ice. No grass for cattle. May 8. Vegetation but slightly advanced. Cattle barely find sufficient food. So ended, at last, 'the hard winter.'

Winter of 1843 and 1844, mild. 1884. summer very wet. Winter of 1844 and 1845 unusually mild. Winter of 1845 and 1846 less mild but not severe. 1846. Summer very dry. Long continued hot weather. Very sickly. The summers of 1838 and 1846 are the two most noted for sickness in the annals of Lake. Among those who died in 1846 were, June 21, Ann Belshaw, at the Belshaw Grove, and, October 25, Mrs. Elisabeth Horton, mother of Mrs. J. A. H. Ball, at Cedar Lake. Winter of 1846 and 1847 mild. 1848. no special note. 1849, summer wet. High waters in July. Cholera prevailing. 1850, 1851, ordinary years. 1852. April 11, no grass, no plowing. May 1, cattle can live. 1853. Another backward spring. April 26, cattle can barely live on the grass. May 11. This is the fourteenth day in succession it has rained. The sun has not shone twelve hours during the time. Winter of 1855 and 1856 snowy and cold. Winter of 1856 and 1857 severe, with deep, drifting snows. 1857. Crops in the summer unusually late. No winter grain, rye or wheat, cut till in August, but the yield good. The crop of spring wheat was considered the best ever

raised in the county. Some raised forty bushels on an acre. S. Ames of Lake Prairie sowed three acres May 1, and gathered ninety-six bushels. Corn was sold for fifteen cents a bushel. 1858. A wet spring and summer. July 8 and 9, mercury 100 degrees. September 10, a splendid comet appeared; very brilliant for several weeks. 1859. A cold and backward spring. June 5, very white frost; 11, frost; July 4, light frost; afterwards hot; 12th, mercury 104 degrees from 10 a. m. till 4 p. m.; 13th, 104 degrees; 15th, 105 degrees at noon; 16th, 102 degrees from 12 m. to 5 p. m.; 17th, 100 degrees at 1 p. m.; 18th, 104 degrees at 1 p. m. 1860. Cold January. April 27, hard frost; June 1, light frost; August 10, 12, 14, light frosts. 1861. Cool summer. May 2, hard frost; 4, hard frost; 5, tornado, hail and rain; 30, white frost; July 2, light frost. 1862. March 20 and 21, snow fell for twenty-four hours. April 4, severe hail, stones larger than hickory nuts; 21, hard snowstorm; May 20, hard frost; June 9, white frost; July 19, severe storm. December mild. No sleighing. 1863. An open winter. Cranes and wild geese occasionally all winter. A cool summer followed. Frost every month. August 30, a hard frost that killed vines and corn; October 30, a snowstorm; 31, snow in depth three or four inches. 1864. January 1, known as the 'cold New Years.' Wind and snow. Mercury below zero 20 degrees. Intensely severe out in the wind. Mercury below zero 2, 18 degrees; 3 and 4, at zero; below, 5, 6 degrees; 7, 20 degrees; 8, 16 degrees; 9, 7 degrees; 11, 5 degrees. Cold till January 23, then springlike till February 16. March 1 to 10, robins, blue-birds, larks and frogs appeared. In September frosts. In November Indian summer. In December mercury below

zero six times, from four to sixteen degrees. 1865. June 20, severe storm, hail, wind, and rain. July a wet, and mostly cold month. Indian summer again in November. 1866. A cold February. Mercury below zero on several days. 1867. Generally dry through the year, and quite warm. 1868. A steady, cold January. March warm and pleasant. July hot with frequent showers. Mercury at 94 degrees, 96, 105, 105 degrees. 1869. Trees loaded with ice. Wild geese appeared in January; February from 11 to 14, frogs, snakes, and larks as in April. The summer that followed was called the wet summer. The following is a more full record for January, 1869:

"The month just closing has been remarkable, in the county of Lake, for its even temperature, its amount of sunshine, its mild winds, its general, uniform pleasantness. No snow of any amount since the sheet of ice of the first week, and very little mud. Excellent wheeling, no rain, no storm, day after day, week after week. South wind, southeast wind, west wind, north wind, east wind—still pleasant weather. It is said that such a January has not been experienced for some thirty years. For a winter month it has been truly delightful."

"Cedar Lake, having been covered with one strong sheet of ice, then again all open, can now, in the latter part of March, be crossed with loaded teams. Quite an unusual occurrence."

The following is another record: "During the year 1867 there was in our county one cloudless day, September 28th. On the 27th a speck of cloud was visible before sunrise, on the 29th one was visible after sunset. During 1868 no cloudless day was observed by a close observer. At Rochester, New York,

some years ago, eighteen such days were observed in one year, and thirteen in another. There are few such days at the south end of Lake Michigan; yet there are many delightful ones, the sky as deeply blue as that over Mount Auburn, and fleecy clouds as beautiful and lovely as float anywhere."

1870. January 12, wild geese appeared; mercury 45 degrees. May, July, and August, warm and dry months. October a fine month. Says a farmer, "Our best corn year." 1871. In January of this year were those remarkable days, commencing with rain and frost, and continuing so changeless, that gave us the most magnificent ice views, so far as records show, ever witnessed in this latitude. Commencing January 14, the sheet of ice continued over everything for two weeks. Immense damage was done to forest trees. Fruit trees were broken very much, but the injury to them did not prove to be serious. The winter scenery during those two weeks was indescribably grand. All the boughs of all vegetation were covered with ice that weighed the evergreens and smaller trees almost to the earth, and when the sun shone the brilliant crystals everywhere almost dazzled the eyes of the beholder. One evening, during those two weeks, the rays of the setting sun, with the redness of a glowing summer brightness, shone upon the tree-tops, and they flashed in that red light as though hung all over with myriads of rubies. Such a scene of resplendent beauty none here ever saw before. The temperature day after day was mild; very little wind; considerable sunshine; but the whole world around seemed bound in unyielding fetters of ice. It was like living in a fairy land, or in arctic regions without the cold and the darkness. Existence itself, amid such beauty, was a

great delight. But rare elements of the magnificent in nature seemed to be combined, when at length motion again commenced in the outer world. Then at midday, in the usually silent winter groves, the continuous roar of the ponderous, falling crystal masses, the breaking of loaded boughs as the wind began to rise and try their strength, the danger to which one was constantly exposed, were sufficient to rouse into excitement the dullest nature.

Between Crown Point and Cedar Lake the road was rendered impassable for days by an icy blockade; all our woods still show the marks of the giant power that was laid upon them; the like in our history was never known before. The ice sheet extended from Southern Michigan in a southwesterly direction into Illinois; its width being some twenty or thirty miles. and Crown Point lay near the center of its course. At Chicago snow fell to quite a depth instead of the rain which here froze at the surface of the earth.

In June the locusts came in immense swarms, keeping themselves mostly upon the forest trees. They were especially numerous in the woods north of Lowell; south and southwest of Crown Point; and in the eastern portion of the county. These locusts stung the timber, but no serious results followed.

In October strong winds prevailed. The summer was very dry, and unusual fires raged along the marsh and in the islands of timber. It seemed as though what the ice and the locusts had left unharmed, the fires were commissioned to destroy. The October fires of 1871, in and out of Lake, will long be remembered.

Although a very dry season, and many wells failed, and cattle suffered severely from thirst, yet the corn

crop was good, the oat crop was good, and grass was abundant.

1872. The winter commenced with no heavy fall rains and no mud. In January there came quite a fall of snow and a few cold days, but on the whole the winter was mild. Spring came, yet very little rain, no mud, no bad roads. Showers in the summer; very little rain. Vegetation grows, but cattle suffer, wells dry up, and it seems as though the fountains in the earth would fail. Since 1869 we have almost forgotten what a rain storm is or a muddy road. The summer of 1872 has proved an unusually abundant fruit season. The corn crop has been abundant, the oat crop fair, and the grass crop good. A late and pleasant autumn with but little rain and no mud. No bad roads since the spring of 1870.

December of 1872 cold; December 23, the mercury went to 30 degrees below zero at Crown Point. On Lake Prairie, it was recorded by Rev. H. Wason, Dec. 24, in the morning, 26 degrees below zero. 1873. January 29, below zero 24 degrees; March 9, wild geese; 10, blue-birds; 17, plowing began, July 4. The greatest fall of water for one hour and a quarter ever known in Crown Point; good boating on some of the streets. 1874. A quite mild winter, followed in Lake County by a dry summer; crops suffered from drought and bugs. There is a record of a severe storm of hail and wind that swept over Galena township in La Porte County August 15, 1874. What the weather had previously been is not mentioned, but probably hot and dry. Of the storm and its effects it is said: "Thousands of fruit and forest trees were uprooted or broken, fences were blown down, barns were demolished, and dwellings unroofed. The thunder kept up

one continuous roar, heard above the rushing of the mighty winds and the crash of falling timber. The lightning was one ceaseless blaze. Hail as large as pigeon's eggs came down in sheets and cut the standing corn in pieces. It commenced at about five o'clock in the morning, and never, since the first settlement of Galena, had such a storm, effecting such immense loss, visited the township."

1875. In January and February mercury part of the time below zero. July a cold wet month. Hay and grain damaged by rain and wind. December muddy. 1876. January and February mild and open weather; wild geese in January; March wet; very muddy; almost impossible to travel. December, good sleighing most of the month. 1877. Sleighing continued, making six weeks of unusually good going. February was pleasant; no rain or snow; roads dry and dusty; spring birds singing. In December plowing. 1878. First four months warm; April 20, peach, cherry, plum, crab and some apple trees in blossom; July, very warm; last half of December good sleighing; snow about a foot deep. 1879. Snow nearly gone last of January; again six weeks of good sleighing; March 1, robins; the year peculiar for its extremes of cold and heat, of wet and dry. 1880. January and February again warm; birds abundant in February; March muddy; May wet; June very wet; crops fair, prices good. 1881. January mild, dry for the last ten weeks; in February freshets; creeks high; October, November, and December very wet, also warm. This year noted for extremes. Very dry and very wet, very cold and very warm. 1882. January, February, and March and part of April, mild and even warm; May cold and wet; June warm and wet; July

cool; December mild; roads generally good. 1883. January very cold; February, a wintry month; March 1, spring birds; 16, about noon, a terrible wind from the north; a pleasant dry month; roads dry as summer; May rather cold; June, cool; August, cool; October, cold and wet; November mild and wet; December 5th was a remarkably pleasant day, like a May day. "Pleasant, mild weather continued with those glorious displays of red light on the western sky after sunset and on the eastern sky before sunrise, which baffled the knowledge of the men of science. For fourteen days in December farmers were busy plowing, and then winter commenced. The sleighing was quite good. On Saturday morning, January 5, 1884, the mercury was below zero 28, 30, and some reported 32 degrees, being the coldest on record at Crown Point. The Crown Point record continues: January 30. Up to this date sleighing; now a January thaw; cold weather soon returned; on Tuesday, February 19, a blizzard came down from Dakota; the mercury went some degrees below zero in March; from December 15, till March 11, almost continuous sleighing; March 11, yesterday sleighing; this afternoon streets all mud; March 21, the air is soft and mild, almost like the atmosphere in a green house; some robins have come. "Another record: 1884. January again a very cold month; 5, mercury 27 degrees below zero at night; February not very cold, but water high. Thus far it seems, according to two records, that the coldest mornings have been December 24, 1872, mercury 26 degrees to 30 degrees below zero, and January 5, 1884, from 27 degrees to 32 degrees below zero. May June, and July good months for the growth of crops; November quite a mild month. Indian summer

from November 19 to 23. 1885. January and February cold, the "winter unusually cold and abounding with snow; never since we have had railroads were such snow blockades known. One train of passenger cars remained at Crown Point from Sunday evening till Thursday afternoon, and on the Air Line Louisville road [passing through Lowell] the snow blockade was still more irresistible. The long and deep snow cuts on most of our roads looked like visions of the frigid zone. The constant succession of snow hillocks, or the pitching down and going up, on the sleigh road leading eastward from Crown Point on the only open road, was something never experienced here before. It was like driving over high and narrow frozen waves. To enjoy sleigh-riding over such a road was quite impossible. At times the mercury went thirty and thirty-two [degrees] below zero, on a Fahrenheit thermometer, the cold being again equal to that severe cold of December, 1872, and of January, 1884."

In the summer that followed lightning struck more frequently than usual near dwelling houses, and on one Sunday afternoon instantly killed Alexander Burhans, who was standing in his dooryard watching the storm cloud. One narrow sweep of wind passed across Eagle Creek making a total wreck of the large barn of E. W. Dinwiddie. It stood on open prairie in a very exposed situation.

1886. The winter of this year ended on Tuesday, April 6, with a severe wind and snow storm, and on Tuesday, April 13, summer heat, 76 degrees, began. 1887. From March to May unusually dry; wild strawberries ripe May 21, garden berries May 28. "Sunday, July 17, was noted for heat. For several days the

mercury had indicated more than blood heat. Sunday it was said to be in the shade from 101 degrees to 104 degrees F. The heat in the air seemed like heat from a furnace. It was natural to think we had not felt such heat before. But July, 1859, was very hot." One extract more for this year. "Monday afternoon, November 21, 1887, was remarkable. The Saturday before a fierce storm had raged, a storm of wind and snow. The snow still lay on the ground Monday, but the atmosphere was that of Indian summer, the sky smoky, the sun at three o'clock as red almost as blood. Very little wind; mercury 38 degrees F.; at four o'clock the sun was hidden by the smoke; winter on the ground, Indian summer in the atmosphere."

1888. One extract: September 8. From report at Old Settlers' Association. "A few minutes before 6 o'clock last evening, with the sun of course near the horizon, a very glorious view was seen for a moment in the western sky as that sun, ever a glorious object on which to look, shone through and upon a mass of mountain-like clouds, gilding the glowing edges for a few seconds of two lofty summits that looked like mountain peaks, and then shining full through the huge mass of vapor, as though determined still to promise a sunny and pleasant morrow. After the disappearance of the sunshine a light shower came, and none need wish for a pleasanter September morning than was this morning of our thirteenth annual gathering, the close of fifty-four years of our occupancy of this soil of Lake." Twelve days of delightful weather in December. Much like December in 1883. Roads perfect, without dust or mud; no frost in the ground to prevent plowing for these twelve days.

1889. January 25. "So far the winter has been remarkable; so little rain and mud, so much warm sunshine through November, December, and January." February 6, "Wednesday morning, zero weather; ice gathering this week." "March 5, geese and ducks along the Kankakee Marsh; the winter, mild and dry as it has been, seems to be over; robins and blue-birds are reported; everything indicates an early spring." And spring did come early. Flowers in abundance in the woods by the middle of April; strawberries in blossom and some corn planted in April. Summer heat came in May; June quite a wet month; one strong wind east of Plum Grove blew down a barn belonging to J. Pearce; July wet month; August dry; the fall pleasant; December warm. It was said that winter wheat grew more in December than it had done in October. Christmas dry, warm; snakes were seen. 1890. The first part of January mild; children caught tad-poles and minnows; Tuesday, 21, came an intensely cold, west wind; 22, mercury 26 degrees below zero; icemen hoping for their harvest; 24, ice seven and a half inches thick; 25, icemen expected to begin work but warmth and mud returned; February 10, mud in abundance; March 1, mercury about zero; some ice from four to six inches thick put up the first week in March; April 23, strawberry blossoms opening; 24, dandelions in blossom. The last two weeks of June unusually hot; June 13, a severe thunder storm in the evening; some houses struck by the lightning; the hay barn at Shelby struck by the lightning and burned. October 10, some katydids still alive and "chirping;" November an unusually delightful month; December was remarkable; the roads during the most of the month smooth, hard, dry,

like summer roads without much dust; December 31, an April-like rain came, gentle, warm, delightful. 1891. Thursday, January 1, still warm, showers, sunshine, and a rainbow. The month continued unusually mild; good roads most of the month. February 1, cloudy, damp, mild. March, a cold, wet month; roads very muddy. For the first third of April roads almost impassable; very little sunshine for three weeks in March and April. After such a mild and open winter the usual spring time seemed very wintry. July was said to be the coolest that had been experienced for twenty years. September very warm. The season all through has been fruitful. Fertility, rather unusual fertility, has been the characteristic this year in the vegetable world. All crops good. Apples abundant. Potatoes abundant. From December 2 till Christmas farmers were plowing. 1892. Three weeks of quite good ice weather in January. On January 10, and 15, 10 degrees below zero. In February a thaw; roads muddy; February 5, Friday evening, Venus and Jupiter appeared in a clear sky at Crown Point almost in a right line with the earth. It was a beautiful sight. They seemed almost to touch each other. They were last in conjunction in July, 1859. A few evenings before there had also been a beautiful sight of which one in a Boston paper wrote: "The close approach of the new moon and the two bright planets, Venus and Jupiter on Jan. 31st and Feb. 1st was one of the most brilliant astronomical sights in the life of the present generation." February 13, Saturday evening, there was seen a magnificent display of the northern light or Aurora Borealis. It was remarkable for its general rich, red color, and for its evenness of display. Some of the

streamers were very bright. Monday 13, zero; from the 16, onward, mild, roads muddy; wild geese and ducks came 22 and 23; March spring weather with blue-birds and robins and larks. April cool, but flowers in the woods by the 15. The months of May and June very wet. The Little Calumet was a mile wide or more between Highland and Hessville. No record of such high water in June before. July a dry month. For productiveness the season in marked contrast with the last. The fruit crop almost a failure. Apples seldom so scarce. Potatoes and the corn crop poor. Hay a good crop. Planting time in the spring was very late. The autumn of this year very pleasant. December 26, mercury 8 degrees to 12 degrees below zero. 1893. January cold, snow, much zero weather. A good ice harvest; snow in the woods, Jan. 24, a foot deep; 15, 4 degrees below zero at noon. February, still cold; 7, 10 degrees below zero; 8, roads very icy; sleighing quite good till Feb. 25; a good winter for sleighing, an icy crust for weeks under the snow and few drifts. March variable, cold, snow, rain, mud. April 5, roads dusty; 7, mercury above summer heat; vegetation growing rapidly; 17, woods abound in wild flowers wet weather. May 1, quite pleasant; World's Fair opened; 5, ground very wet; 10, summer heat again; 11, a heavy rain fall; 15, dandelions in blossom; cherry and pear blossoms opening. June 10, a heavy rain fall; the last general rain for nine weeks; mercury some of these days above 100 degrees, but the nights generally cool, northerly winds prevailing. September 12, at noon, showers came again. (The summer of 1893, as was that of 1892, characterized by freedom from severe storms; excellent seasons for building.) December 1, 5 degrees below zero; 4, at

5 a. m. on West Creek 18 degrees below zero; at 7, 10 degrees below at Lowell; at Crown Point 5 degrees below after sunrise. December 3, snow a foot in depth; the weather quite variable; 23-27 pleasant, mild; 28, farmers plowing; 29, a sail boat out on the lake after the ice had been seven inches. 1894. January 1, a spring-like morning; plowing continued till Jan. 7; 17, again plowing; roads good; 25, mercury 10 degrees below zero; another short ice harvest. February 8, heavy fog, rain, mud; 12, a snowstorm, wind northeast; quite a blizzard; at noon 24 degrees; snow very penetrating; sifting in everywhere; drifting badly; so severe the storm that of 73 pupils in the high school room at Crown Point only about 20 met the teacher in the afternoon; the wind very strong; at sunset the mercury still about 24 degrees; had the temperature been zero the storm would have been fearful; 13, at noon 32 degrees; the wind has ceased, the storm is over, drifts very deep, railroads blockaded; 17, a strong south wind; the snow all turning into water; 27, at noon 47 degrees; a caterpillar out on the sidewalk. March and April, mild; generally pleasant; April 16, spring flowers in abundance vegetation forward; May vegetation growing rapidly; 18, at noon a cold wind storm came from the north; the Chicago papers said, a hurricane swept down upon that city from Manitoba; here the storm lasted four days; no such storm for several years; it swept over a large area of country in the far north giving sleighing. June warm and showery. July hot, rather dry. August dry; 11, rain; again dry, with a remarkably smoky atmosphere for nine days, the sun being visible but not shining, till September 3, when in five minutes the deep dust turned to mud as the wel-

come rain came; September warm; with some smoky days. October 14, a heavy frost; 18, Mars is now the attractive planet in the sky; it is in opposition to the sun, nearly, is high up at midnight, distant only 40,000,000 miles; not such another favorable view to be had till 1906; the frost did not kill flowers; 20, bees working as though the month was May. November 5, robins remaining and flowers still bright; 7, some snow. December 12, men plowing and ditching; pleasant till 27, then snow; 28, 5 degrees below zero. 1895. January at first mild, but ended with cold days, deep snow drifts, mercury several times below zero. February generally cold, snow and drifts; March ordinarily pleasant; 25, robins and larks reported; 29, a hot day, mercury up to 82 degrees. April 14, flowers; quite a little grass in the marshes. May 1, at noon 84 degrees; a glorious May-day; a remarkable season for the growth of vegetation; 21, a quite heavy frost; potatoe vines in some gardens killed into the very ground; they had grown rapidly and were tender. June hot, some showers. July 1, 2, 3, 4, 5, smoky air; 22, 23, 24, smoky; some showers few sultry nights all summer; a quite dry spring; no severe storms in the summer; this makes three successive, quite dry, and, for out-of-door work and enjoyment, very pleasant summers.

Thus far, our printed record has been followed; and for the last ten years the reports made to the Old Settlers' Association as published in pamphlet form have been followed, extracts having been freely made. The reports for the next five years are not yet published.

The report for the next year gives for this August of 1895 showers across the north and central parts of the county, but all the south part dry and dusty till

the 24th. August 26, a quite general rain; showers continued. September 7, the air cool in the groves, changing temperature, cool and then hot. September 18, last night one of the hottest of the summer; on the whole September a hot or warm month; Saturday, September 21st, said to have been in New York their hottest day, the hottest for the time of year recorded by the Weather Bureau; at 2 p. m. in New York 96 degrees; at Rochester 92 degrees; at Springfield in Massachusetts 103 degrees; at Brattleboro, Vt., 105 degrees; the hottest September in Iowa for twenty years; there have now been, in 1895, five hot months, unusually hot for Indiana. No killing frost on Prospect Ridge in Crown Point till October 9th. Flowers bright, late beans in blossom until then. October 22, wild geese passed over Crown Point going south; robins not all gone; 31, about five a. m. an earthquake shock felt at Crown Point; at 9, 40 degrees; at 3 p. m. 44 degrees. A strange sensation produced by the cloudy air this afternoon, as though some convulsion in nature had happened or would happen. The result, perhaps, of the earthquake. In November changes. Indian summer and Squaw Winter, snow, ice, sleighing, and thaws; winter fully commenced November 19th. In 1842 it commenced November 17th. December not very cold, but part of the month very wet; 18, rain the night before; 19, a rainy night; 20, not such a fall of water for years; wet weather continued; 24, 44 degrees; pansies in blossom; 25, another very green Christmas; the grass is like spring.

1896. January 4, 10 degrees below. Ice formed. 10. For a few days ice, seven inches in thickness, going into the ice houses. Latter part of the month quite mild.

February mild till 17. Then zero. 18. Black snow fell at Crown Point; 19, 24 degrees below zero; 20, 10 degrees below; 21, 4 degrees below. Rest of the month mild. March, rather cold; 13, zero. April, quite mild, latter part hot. May, warm; 11, about summer heat; heat continued; 16, a thunder storm in the afternoon; between 8 and 9 o'clock a strong wind struck Crown Point, breaking down many trees, shade trees, fruit trees, and evergreens; 21, some strawberries ripe; 22, roses quite abundant; at 5 a. m. 62 degrees; 26, strawberries abundant and cheap; a wet May; quite a wet June; vegetation very forward. July 1, Currants nearly gone; considerable corn five feet high; new potatoes quite plenty; about two weeks earlier than in ordinary seasons; July 5, some peaches about ripe; blackberries in the gardens ripening; July 14, at 8:30, 84 degrees; 9:30, 88 degrees; 3 p. m. 98 degrees; 3:30, 94 degrees; July 15, at 5, 80 degrees; at 7, 86 degrees; at noon 76 degrees; 1:30, 72 degrees; at 7, 66 degrees: July 16, at 5, 60 degrees; at noon, 70 degrees; it seems from the papers that a fearful storm passed over Lake Michigan night before last; at Grand Haven, Michigan, the worst storm they ever experienced; no wonder the temperature here fell so much July 15th; July 19, a gentle, steady rain all day; much water fell; July 24, wet weather; a very wet week for July. The music or noise of the katydids began very early, about the middle of July. August quite hot and wet; August 6, probably hottest day of the summer; mercury up to blood heat; carpenters quit work; one man sun-struck and died; August 11, a heavy cloud, visible at Crown Point, swept across Lake Michigan about 7 p. m.; the rain reached Crown Point about nine o'clock; al-

most incessant lightning for two hours, extending, apparently, from the lake southward; heavy showers in the night; constant lightning; August 22, at 3 this morning quite a heavy thunder storm from the south struck Crown Point; lasted only about twenty minutes; the wind broke down some trees; this was in Chicago the most severe storm of the season. September was quite a pleasant, rather wet month; 6, some cherry trees in quite full blossom; 26, Bean vines not yet hurt by frost on Prospect Ridge. October mild and pleasant; 18, at 7 o'clock 30 degrees Feriessie; 29, robins seen near Lowell. In November some snow, some rain, some mud, some very pleasant days; 8, a robin seen. December a mild month. 1897. January opened with mild weather, and clouds and rain; mild till the 24th; 24, below zero 10 degrees; 25, 20 degrees; 26, 20 degrees; 27, 3 degrees; 28, 4 degrees; 29, 1 degree, and 30, 2 degrees above zero; a cold week. February and March mild with many pleasant, sunny days. April mild with some rain and some quite windy days. May rather cool, with some warm, delightful days; 4, dandelion in blossom; 5, strawberry blossoms opening; 7-8, warm, sunny; mercury 80 degrees and 86 degrees. May was quite varied, cool, warm, showers; 31, a frost; fruit blossoms and some young fruit killed. June 5, summer heat; some strawberries ripe; 12, at 1 p. m., 88 degrees; at sunset, 76 degrees; 13, at 1:15, 96 degrees; sunset, 76 degrees; 14, at 10, 86 degrees; at 3, 95 degrees; at sunset, 80 degrees; 15, at noon, 94 degrees; at 3, 94 degrees; 16, thunder showers, much lightning, heavy thunder, and a rainy night followed; hot weather and showers continued, with some very hot nights. July a hot month; mercury many times

96 degrees; 98 degrees; 99 degrees, and reached 100 degrees and 102 degrees; showers light.

A HOT DAY.

Thursday, July 8, 1897, if not the hottest of our days, has certainly been very hot. The thermometer has been noticed at various hours and this is the record: At 5:30, 74 degrees; at 6:30, 79 degrees; at 7, 82 degrees; at 9:15, 92 degrees; at 10:30, 94 degrees; at 11, 96 degrees; at 11:20, 97 degrees; at 11:30, 98 degrees, blood heat; at 12, 99 degrees; at 12:30, 100 degrees; at 1, 102 degrees; at 3, 97 degrees; at 5:30, 94 degrees; at 6, 94 degrees; at 7, 88 degrees; at 8, 86 degrees. And now, at 9 o'clock, it is still 84 degrees. Our record is that July 16, 1859, the mercury from noon till 5 p. m. was 102 degrees, and July 12th, 104 degrees from 10 a. m. to 4 p. m. July 4th of that year there was a light frost, but from the 12th to the 18th very hot.

First half of August hot; 18, a light frost in low places; Wednesday, August 25, Anniversary or Old Settlers' Day; a delightful day, cool, yet comfortable; sun bright and warm, but not very hot. September hot, 94 degrees, 96 degrees; 98 degrees; 13 at 6 o'clock, 71 degrees; everything very dry; 14, at noon, 98 degrees; hot nights; 16, some rain; 18, frost in low places. October warm and rather dry; 31, no frost on higher parts of Crown Point; flowers bright. November 3, some frost; 6, 32 degrees; rains followed; 11, some snow; 12, ground frozen; 24 degrees; 23, some snow. December quite mild and pleasant. 1898. January quite a mild and pleasant month; 22, snow; 23, heavy drifts; 25, rain and sleet. February 1, 5 degrees below zero; 3, 2 degrees below; rest of

the month quite mild. March mild; the winter quite mild or open; two short seasons of ice gathering, ten and fourteen inches thick, clear good ice. April pleasant; rather cool; fruit blossoms opening the last of the month, cherry and peach and others. May sunshine and showers. June also a growing month, showers and some rain; 24, at noon, 94 degrees; 30, at noon 96 degrees. July 1, 2, early in the morning, 74 degrees; 76 degrees; noon, 95 degrees; dry; 24, noon, 101 degrees; some rain. August 15, 16, rains, strong wind, generally pleasant month, warm, quite even temperature. September warm, rather wet. October warm with some wet days and nights; 27, 28 degrees; some ice. November mild, coldest mornings, 11, 26 degrees; 12, 28 degrees; 16, 28 degrees; 22, 20 degrees; 23, 10 degrees; 24, 10 degrees; 26, zero. December 8, 9, 10, nearly zero; 13, 14, zero; 22, 24, snow; 29, 44 degrees, noon, 50 degrees; snow nearly gone; 31, 10 degrees; light snow fell. 1899. January quite mild till latter part of the month; 4, 50 degrees, rain; 13, 42 degrees, some rain; 23, 38 degrees; 27, zero; Sunday, January 29, one of our cold days; at 7 o'clock 10 degrees below zero; at 10 o'clock, zero; at noon, 4 degrees; at 3 o'clock, 6 degrees, and then it went down; it was a bright, sunny day and not much wind; Monday, 30, very cold; at 7, 4 degrees below; at 7:30, 2 degrees below; at 8:30, zero; at 10:30, 1 degree; at noon 2 degrees; at 3 o'clock, 3 degrees; the highest in the day; about zero all day; January 30, zero; 31, 8 degrees below zero. February cold; 7, 4 degrees below; 8, 12 degrees below; at noon, 10 degrees below; 9, 22 degrees below; noon, 10 degrees below; 10, 20 degrees below; noon, 6 below; 11, 4 degrees below, and at noon 4 degrees below; a cold day; 12, 15 de-

greens below; 13, 8 degrees below; 14, 10 degrees; 18, 35 degrees, shower; noon, 40 degrees; 20, 21, showers; 22, 23, snow, 38 degrees; 25, rain. March, more mild, some snow, some clouds some sunshine; 7, 4 degrees; 11, 50 degrees; 25, 40 degrees; 30, 31, snow, 28 degrees. April, 13, 48 degrees; 12:30, 77 degrees; 17, strong wind; 23, 56 degrees; 1 p. m., 79 degrees; 30 flowers in the woods, fruit trees full of blossoms. May, 2, 3, 4, showers; 7, rain; 8, wet; 22, in the night a heavy storm. Latter part of May wet. June pleasant; a good amount of sunshine. July and August pleasant months. September 5 very hot, 98 degrees; 7, at 11 o'clock, 98 degrees; at noon, 100 degrees; at night rain; 17, 70 degrees; rain followed; 26, light frost. October quite warm, several Indian summer days; 29, 36; heavy frost. November, mild; some Indian summer days; 22, 54 degrees; 30, 40 degrees. December mostly mild; 12, 32 degrees, light snow; 29, 30, zero early; 31, 4 degrees; noon, 16 degrees; some good ice harvesting. 1900. January and February were pleasant winter months. January 29, zero; 31, 4 degrees below zero; in some localities 6 degrees below. February 1, 6 degrees and 8 degrees below, light snow falls and some rain; 24, zero at 9 a. m., 4 degrees below at night; 25, about zero; 27, snow commenced falling at night. Snowfall continued all day; quite mild; a pleasant snow, but a heavy snowfall; about sixteen inches in depth, but drifted. March 1, 28 degrees; 5, 18 degrees, sleet falling all day, but not very rapidly; only a few inches; 6, 34 degrees; afternoon snowing again; the short thaw of March 4, 36 degrees, now over. The ice harvests for this past winter were three. The first commenced about the last

of December, the second the middle of January, the third the middle of February. Each lasted from one to two weeks. The ice was clear and nice, from eight to twelve inches in thickness. April 6, noon, summer heat; at 3 o'clock, 80 degrees; 9, 10, 11, cool; 12, snow two or three inches; 26, wild flowers; 28, again 80 degrees. May 2, children barefooted; in general a warm and growing month; 27, at noon, 90 degrees. June, showers or rain quite frequent. Strawberries ripe June 2; raspberries June 27, 28, 29, hot; 30, cool wind all day; strawberries gone. July 2, rain at night; 3, a very hot night; 4, 5, 6, 80 degrees in the morning; 7, 76 degrees, and a shower at night; 11, very cool wind in afternoon; 15, rain in the night; 16, showers; 17, showers; 19, 20, 70 degrees in the morning; 21, 56 degrees; a growing, pleasant summer. Monday, July 16, the hay barn of John Pearce struck by lightning and burned; also H. Boyd's hay stack.

CONCLUSION.

When this year which we call 1900 closes, then will end the Nineteenth century of the Christian Era. That it has been over all the world the civilized and the savage world, a remarkable century for changes, for inventions, for discoveries, for rapid movement among the world's forces, all are well aware.

When it commenced Northwestern Indiana, having passed in name and form from the French to the British, and from the British to the Americans, had no proper owners but Indians, no inhabitants but Indians and the wild denizens of forest and prairie, with possibly an Indian trader, and so for some thirty years continued; and now, as the century is hastening rapidly to its close, about seventy years having passed since the smoke first began to mount upwards from the stick chimneys of a few log cabins, we have farms and orchards and immense numbers of domestic animals; workshops and factories; villages and towns and cities; gravel and macadam roads; railroads and telephones and electric lights and electric railways; schools and churches and some majestic stone court houses; intelligent, prosperous farmers, and many cultivated and wealthy citizens. We have increased from the first log cabins scattered here and there in the woodlands to about one hundred villages and towns and cities, with nearly eight hundred and forty school

houses and about two hundred and twenty-five churches.

It is true that there is another side, and some dark, very dark spots in the full picture. There are jails and a penitentiary, and many haunts of evil, and some homes of poverty and want. But while we have some beer-factories and hundreds, possibly thousands of saloons, and, it may be, some dens of infamy, yet it is sadly, fearfully true that these are the blots as yet remaining over all Christendom, thickest and blackest in the largest cities, attesting well the claim that humanity is "tainted with leprosy within," and showing full well that earth's millennium age has not yet come. But the fiercer the conflict grows, "irrepressible" indeed, between good and evil, the further, it is evident, we have advanced in achieving a Christian civilization. Thousands of prosperous, peaceful, Christian homes, in towns and on fertile farms, show that the seventy years of effort here have not been in vain. If there are some things much worse than anything known in the wild life of Indian savages, there is an immense amount of good which goes far to prove our right to occupy their ancient home. And this immense amount of good, in its varied forms, is to be left as a rich heritage to many promising boys and many fair and lovely girls, who are now preparing in country and city homes for the conflict of the coming century.

The work of the Pioneers is done. Most of those who here, in their young manhood and in the hopefulness and brightness of their earlier womanhood, laid the foundations for the successes and enjoyments of the present, have already gone beyond the reach of human words of praise or blame or cheer. Here and there is a grayhaired woman, and now and then there

can be found an aged man, who knew the life and shared the toils of seventy, sixty, and up to fifty years ago. But they stand as do the few old oaks that can be found in our once open woodlands, few and lone, amid the thick "second growth" that covers so many broad acres now, reminding us of what once was in the home of the Indians and haunts of the deer. So these few aged ones, over whose heads the changes of four-score years have passed, remind the thoughtful and true ones among us of a sturdy generation of noble men and women who have passed on. As the voices are heard here no more of the Indians who once held over this region an undisputed sway, so are the voices silent now of the scores and the hundreds of the Saxon race who succeeded those red children of the wilds and whose footsteps often followed the red man's well beaten trail. Those joyous children in the pioneer households, who on prairies and in woodland enjoyed a freedom equal almost to that of the beautiful wild animals around them, have been succeeded in their turn by a generation that know nothing of their rich free life. Men and women and children too, of a quite different class, have entered upon the heritage won by the true-hearted pioneers, some of them worthy to enjoy the results of others' toil; some of them sadly wanting in the traits that characterize a noble manhood, ready and eager to grasp results and striving only to bend these to their own selfish ends.

But doubtless many of the thousands that are now and that are yet to be, as they enjoy comforts and ease and luxuries and life and love, made sure to them by self-denials and hardships and toil, will in their hearts honor the hardy and enterprising generation of builders that went before them, and will read with interest

and gratitude the names of some of Indiana's pioneers. These from their labors rest. If they did not plan all that those of this generation here possess, if they did not foresee the wonderful inventions and improvements of this stirring age, their lives here made possible for others all these conveniences that we now enjoy.

Note. July 30, 1900. I have enjoyed the work of collecting the material which the readers have here found, of putting it into what I have hoped might be an acceptable form, and also the late constant effort to see that the proofreading was fairly well done—attaining perfection I do not expect—and now, as this care and effort are coming so near to an end, I take the opportunity to express the hope and the prayer, that we who are now enjoying the rich inheritance of pioneer toils, privations, and bright hopes, may finally meet with our pioneer forefathers and those who with them gathered into the pioneer households, who encouraged every effort and so patiently and lovingly helped in all that was good—even as we hope to meet the noble men and women of sacred history, with Abraham, Isaac, and Jacob, and the Sarahs and Naomis and Ruths, and the Marys and Marthas and Salomes—in the glad future of the Endless Kingdom.

To the compositors and proofreaders, who have managed with so much skill and patience the manuscript copy put into their hands, a patience and a skill which I have highly appreciated, I here return hearty thanks. And to all who have had part in the printing of this book, for courtesy and kindness, I express appreciation and thanks.

T. H. B.

INDEX.

	PAGE.
An Indian School.....	363
A Risky Shot.....	466
A Bee Sting.....	464
An Aged Journalist.....	534
A Drive Hunt.....	95
Alexander Robinson.....	31
Activity, Enjoyment.....	131
Agricultural Societies.....	426
Agricultural Products.....	403
Bald Eagle.....	512
Battle of S. M.....	173
Brookston.....	529
Carey Mission.....	25
Col. Hathaway.....	171
County Organizations.....	98
Crusade, Woman's.....	144
Crown Point.....	297
City West.....	309
Chandonia.....	32
Congressmen.....	156
Creameries.....	408
Calumet Region.....	511
Deer.....	96
Door Village Fort.....	80
Districts.....	156
Death by Freezing.....	525
Death by Accident.....	527
Dinwiddie Clan.....	434
Draining Marshes.....	439
Early Celebrations.....	462
Extracts, Solon Robinson...	468

	PAGE.
Early Settlers.	
Of White Co.....	39
Of Pulaski.....	40
Of Jasper.....	41
Of Newton.....	42
Of La Porte.....	43
Of Porter.....	46
Of Lake.....	50
Of Starke.....	42
Early Social Gatherings.	
Spelling Schools.....	28
Literary Societies.....	88
Religious Meetings.....	89
Singing Schools.....	90
Dancing Parties.....	89
East Chicago.....	305
Early Travels.	
Of Jersey Church.....	352
Of J. H. Luther.....	352
Fort Dearborn.....	23
First School Visitations.....	375
Fur Animals.....	20
Granges.....	426
Game Birds.....	19
General Outlines.....	11
General Packard.....	177
Guarding Railroad.....	131
Herds of Cattle.....	409
Human Remains.....	488
Hammond:.....	302
Hobart.....	296

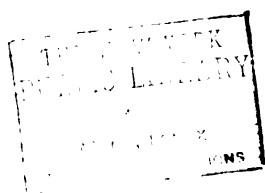
	PAGE.
Institutes.	
Teachers'.....	139
Farmers'.....	140
Sunday School.....	141
Temperance.....	142
Indiana Boundary.....	35
Indian and White Life.....	66
Improved Roads.....	522
Indiana Territory.....	13
Indiana City.....	275
 Judicial Circuits and Judges	160
 Kentland.....	251
Knox.....	270
 Land States.....	59
Lakes and Streams.....	112
Liverpool.....	275
Lowell.....	292
La Porte.....	341
Longbridge.....	358
Lecturers at La Porte.....	399
La Porte Library.....	398
Library at Michigan City.....	400
Libraries.....	392
 Milk Shipping.....	408
McClure.....	393
Mexican War.....	162
Massacre, F. D.....	24
Missionaries.....	242
Monticello.....	263
 Native Plants.....	450
Native Animals.....	448
N. W. Territory.....	14
Native Fruits.....	16
 Ordinance of 1787.....	14
Oxen Disappearing.....	127
 Object Lesson.....	470
Pottawatomie Indians.....	22
Papers and Editors.....	532
Public School Statistics.....	377
Private Schools.	
In La Porte.....	386
In Lake.....	387
In Porter.....	389

	PAGE.
Parochial Schools.....	390
Political History.	
Campaign of 1840.....	119
Campaign of 1848.....	152
Pioneer Schools.....	362
Pioneer Schools.....	368
Pioneer Schools.....	370
Pioneer Schools.....	87
 Quick Trip, by James Adams	359
 Religious History.....	178
Methodist Episcopal.....	180
German Methodists.....	187
Swedish M. E.....	188
Congregationalists.....	188
Presbyterians.....	190
United Presbyterian.....	199
Baptists.....	201
Lutherans.....	214
"Reformed".....	216
"Christians".....	217
Protestant Episcopal.....	221
Roman Catholics.....	222
Unitarians.....	225
Second Adventists.....	226
Quakers.....	227
"New Church".....	227
Free Methodists.....	227
United Brethren.....	230
Believers.....	231
German Evangelists.....	232
Dyer Union Church.....	233
Rensselaer.....	255
Reuben Tazler.....	175
 Sunday Schools.....	234
Sportsmen.....	517
School Children after a	
Deer.....	375
Senator Miller on Public	
Schools.....	385
School Taught by U. McCoy.	373
S. S. Statistics.....	242
Solon Robinson.....	472
Saggonce.....	17
Saggonce.....	23
Shaubensee.....	30
Social Life.....	138
Statistics of 1850.....	122
Some Statistics.....	536

	PAGE.		PAGE.
Towns and Villages.		Trustees and Surveys.....	58
Of Newton.....	247	Townships.....	121
Of Jasper.....	253	Teachers' Associations.....	429
Of White.....	260		
Of Pulaski.....	265	Valparaiso....	327
Of Starke.....	270	Voters in 1895.....	156
Of Lake.....	275		
Of Porter.....	308	Wild Honey.....	18
Of La Porte.....	330	Wild Pigeons....	19
The Swan.....	513	Winamac.....	205
Teachers.		Waverly.....	319
In Lake Co., 1899.....	375	War Record.....	164
In Newton Co., 1899.....	380	Whiting.....	296
Tassinong.....	322	Wild Fruit.....	510
Telephone Companies.....	521	White Owl.....	512

Aug. 29th 1821.

SEPT 20



OCT 14 1939

